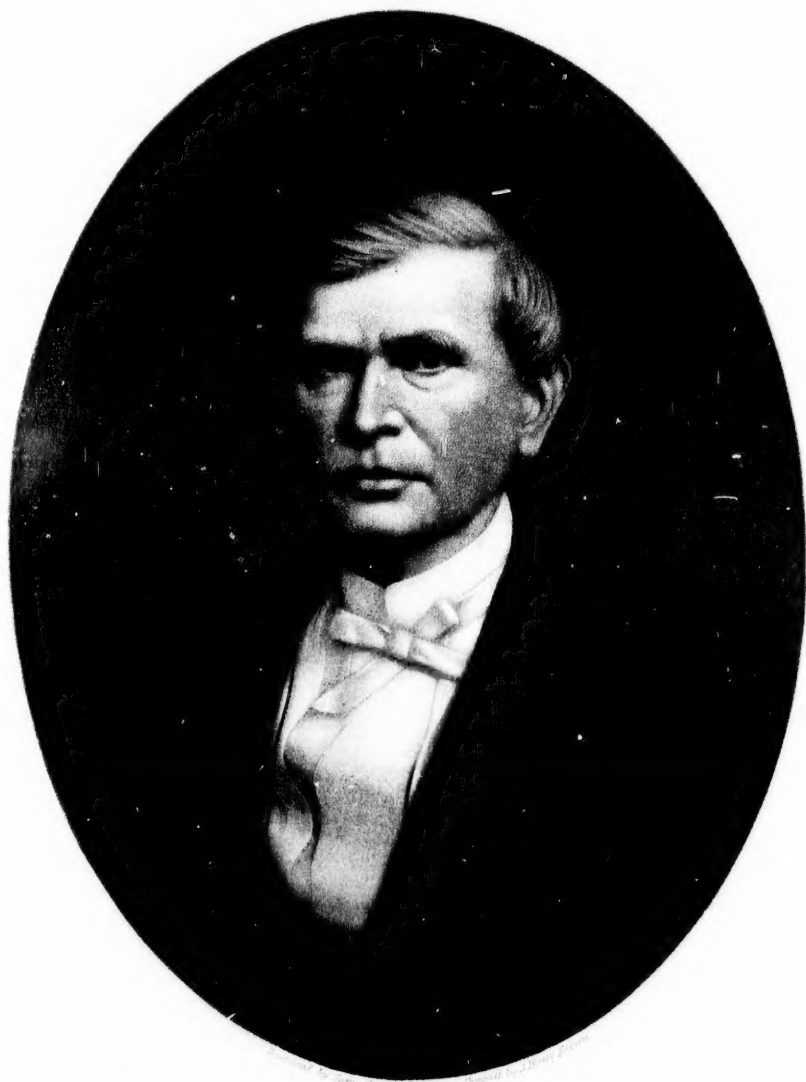




REV. WILLIAM MORLEY PUNCHON, D. D.

[illegible]



M. Simpson

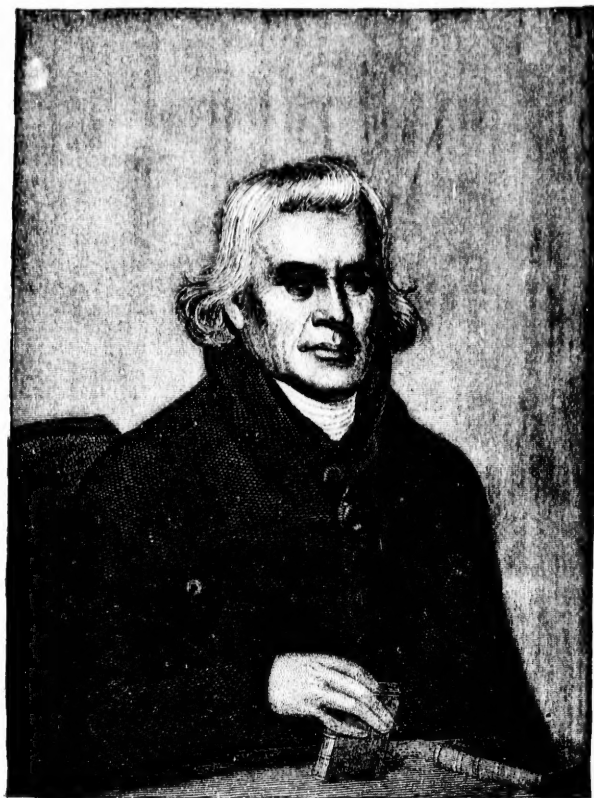
The Story in America



A. Simpson

Th

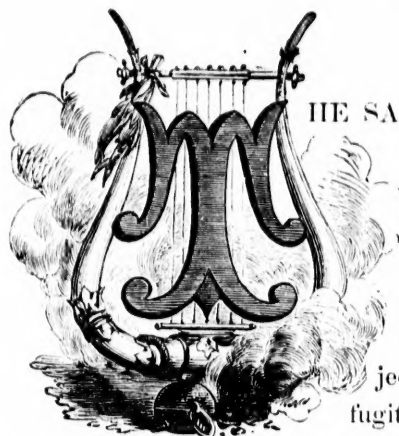
The Story in America.



Francis Asbury

CHAPTER I.

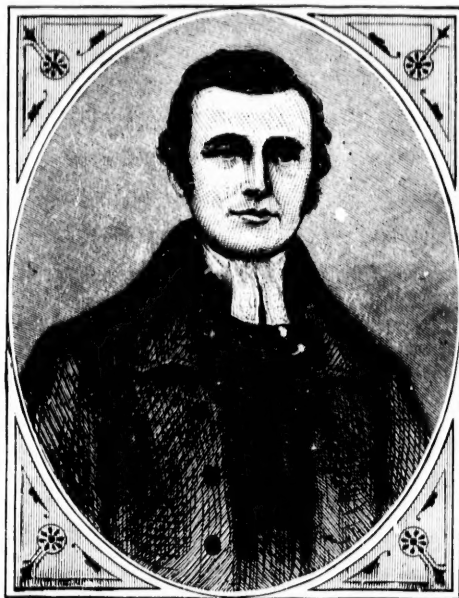
First Things.



THE SAME wretched king of France, who, by his revocation of the Edict of Nantes (granting to the Protestants fair freedom) drove from his land half a million of its best people, scattered in like folly his German subjects on the Rhine. Of these fugitives from their burning homes, about one hundred and ten families reached Ireland and settled on the estates of Lord Southwell, near Limerick. Of one of these families, in 1728, Philip Embury was born. Though on Irish soil, his early instruction was in German by Gier, the school-master of Ballingarane. On Christmas day of his twenty-fifth year he writes : "The Lord shone into my soul by a glimpse of His redeeming love." This year, he for the first time saw Wesley. Embury became class-leader and local preacher, and supplied on his circuit the lack of itinerant service. He was quiet, diffident and melancholy.

In the spring of 1760, Embury, at the head of a small party of emigrants, left Limerick for New York. His parting words were in sermon and prayer for those who had come from Ballingarane, sixteen miles away, to see the company start. The ship reached New York, Aug. 10, 1760. It had brought Philip Embury and Barbara Heck, his cousin. Embury was an active man and a

skillful carpenter. He does not appear as preacher until 1766. Some of their company were Wesleyans, but became cold and worldly by migration. Others came over, and on these, one of whom was her brother, Mrs. Heck was often calling. One day she found them playing cards. With majestic energy, she threw their cards into the fire, and earnestly set before them their duty and their error. She then hurried to Embury's house in Park place, and, reporting the case, urged him at once to utter the Word earnestly to save their own kindred. She would have him preach in his own house and without delay. She gathered four persons who, with herself, were the first Methodist congregation in America. These five were framed into a class and met at his house weekly. Thus Barbara Heck was distinctively the first American Methodist, and Heck Hall, of the Garrett Biblical Institute, after more than a hundred years, was made her monument.



PHILIP EMBURY.

Soon there were two classes of seven each. Three regimental musicians became exhorters and Methodist singing drew many to the meetings.

Embury was invited to preach at the almshouse, where the superintendent and several inmates were converted; and thus, in

the infancy of our American Methodism, "the common people heard gladly" and "the poor had the Gospel preached unto them."

Soon a rigging-loft in Williams street—a room sixty feet by eighteen—was rented for the preaching.

Now Capt. Webb suddenly appeared. He was in uniform, with sword and belt; and who could say that he had not come to order halt and dispersion? He devoutly shared their exercises. He



BARBARA HECK.

was a soldier of Christ, a preacher licensed by Wesley. He had come with his company to America, losing on his route his right eye at the siege of Louisburg, and having also his right arm wounded with Wolfe at Quebec. He had become a Methodist at Bristol in 1765. At Bath, he had preached extempore to a congregation disappointed of its preacher. Thereafter he was an effective helper by his money, his preaching, and whatever

his hands found to do. In Bath and Winchester, later in the Channel Islands, and now in America, he was effective in discourse and full of wisdom and energy in management. John Adams calls him "the old soldier—one of the most eloquent men I ever heard." "They saw the warrior in his face and heard the missionary in his voice."

He was now barrack-master at Albany, where he had held

services in his own house. Hearing of Embury's work, he came to help it on.

The loft became too small for the growing congregation. Mrs. Heck rose up like a prophetess, and as she had called out the first Methodist sermon in America, so she planned the first chapel. It was built on John street. Its third generation, after a hundred

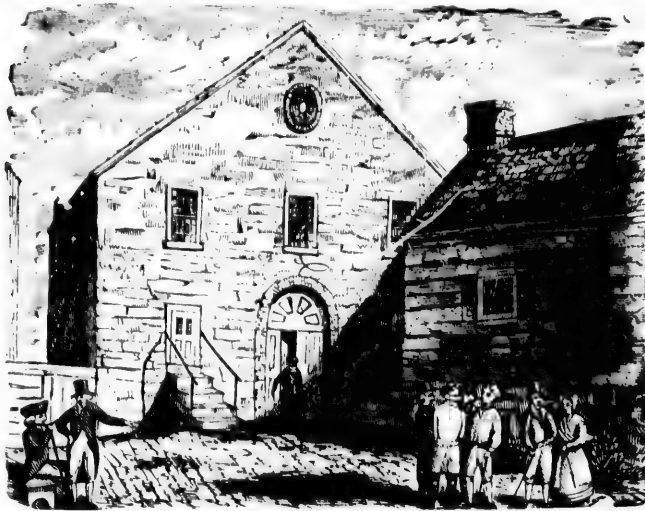


OLD RIGGING-LOFT, 129 WILLIAM STREET, NEW YORK CITY.

and eighteen years, is now there. Capt. Webb, who was now retired from the army with full rank and pay, gave thirty pounds, lent three hundred pounds without interest, and went out to beg for the enterprise. Two hundred and fifty names of subscribers are still preserved, among which African maids—Dinahs and

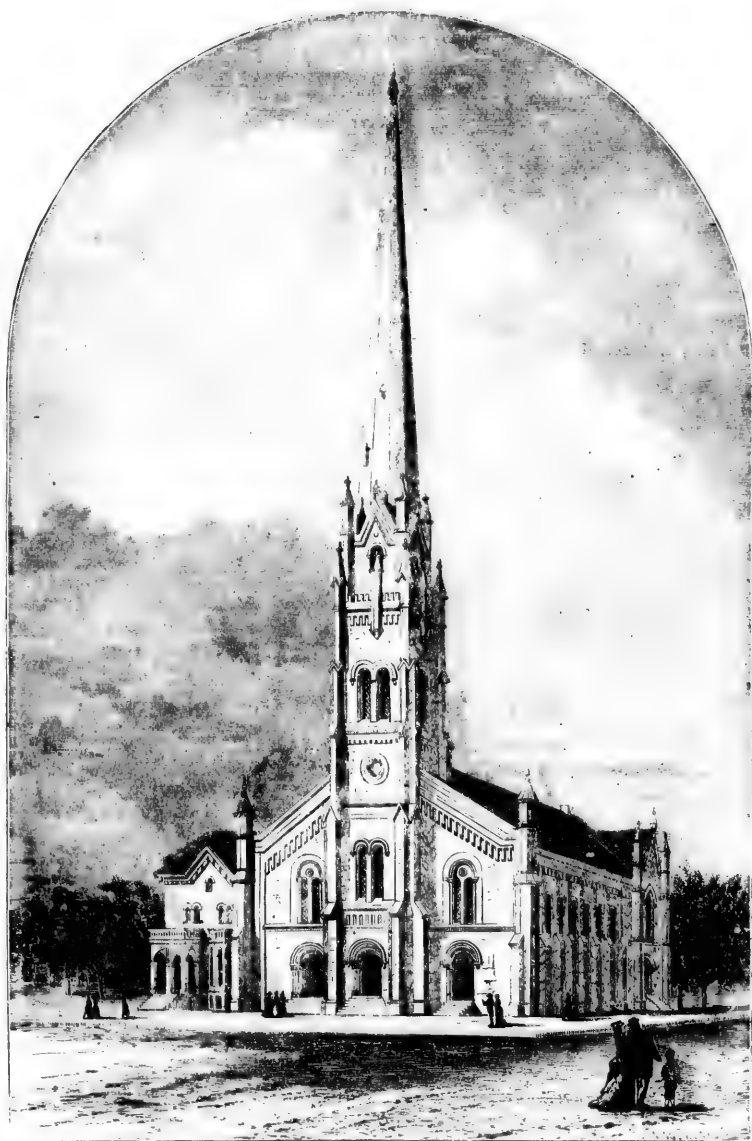
Chloes—are in honor with Livingstones and Delanceys, the "blue blood" of the time.

The building had a fire-place and chimney (churches were not then warmed) to avoid the law that forbade Dissenting "churches" to be built in the city. It was of stone, forty-two feet by sixty. Embury made its pulpit and, Oct. 30, 1768, stood in it to preach the dedicatory sermon. It was the first "Wesley Chapel" named in the world. Embury was its first trustee, treasurer, class



OLD "WESLEY CHAPEL," JOHN STREET, NEW YORK.

leader and preacher. New York had then twenty thousand people. Of these at least a thousand crowded the house and the space in front of it. The church is kept in the wilderness of trade that has come up around it, and is the true monument of Embury, and, one may say, of Barbara Heck and of Thomas Webb. The brave captain carried Methodism to Philadelphia. He formed a class of seven in a sail-loft, where he preached from 1768 to 1769. In 1770, he urged and aided the building of St. George's,



ST. PAUL'S METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, NEW YORK CITY.

the first Methodist church in Philadelphia. Thence he went to Wilmington, Newcastle and Baltimore. He went to England and brought out preachers. When the Revolution broke out, he finally returned to England. Clearly, while Embury was a few months ahead of Webb as a Methodist in America, Webb was more emphatically its founder. He had position, means and energies, which served the young cause in the very nick of time.



CAPTAIN THOMAS WEBB.

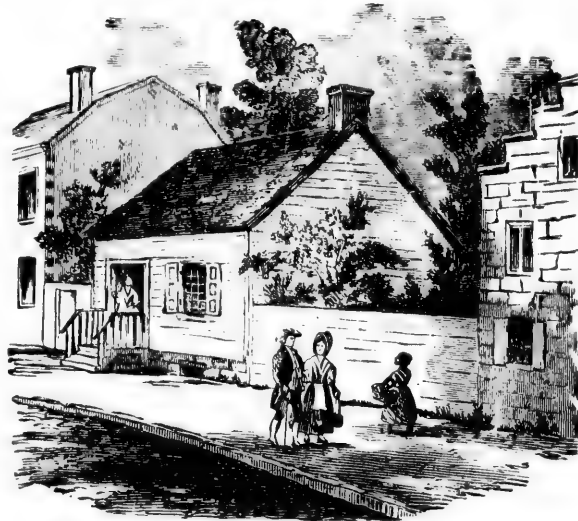
What were those first meetings in "Wesley Chapel," John street? Embury preached three times a week. The seats had no backs, the galleries had no breastwork and were reached by a ladder. Some one set the tune and the rest joined in. There was neither vestry nor class room. From that ancestor were "developed" the M. E. churches of Fourth avenue and Madison square. A small parsonage was built in

1770, and furnished with things given or lent by the people. Embury's labors were gratis, save now and then a small "donation."

On the coming of Pilmoor and Boardman, Wesley's first preachers, Embury removed to Camden in the northeast of the state. He there formed the first class within the bounds of the present Troy Conference. Dying suddenly from an injury, in 1775, his grave

is at Ashgrove, and its wordy epitaph suggests his virtues. Mrs. Heck soon removed with her family to Bay Quinte, Canada, where her descendants are still found.

Robert Strawbridge was every inch an Irishman, and not like Embury, a German, who took Ireland by the way, generous, fiery, rebellious and improvident. He came from Armagh to Frederick county, Maryland, had preaching at his house, formed a society and built the "Log Meeting-house" on Sam's creek,



OLD JOHN STREET PARSONAGE, NEW YORK.

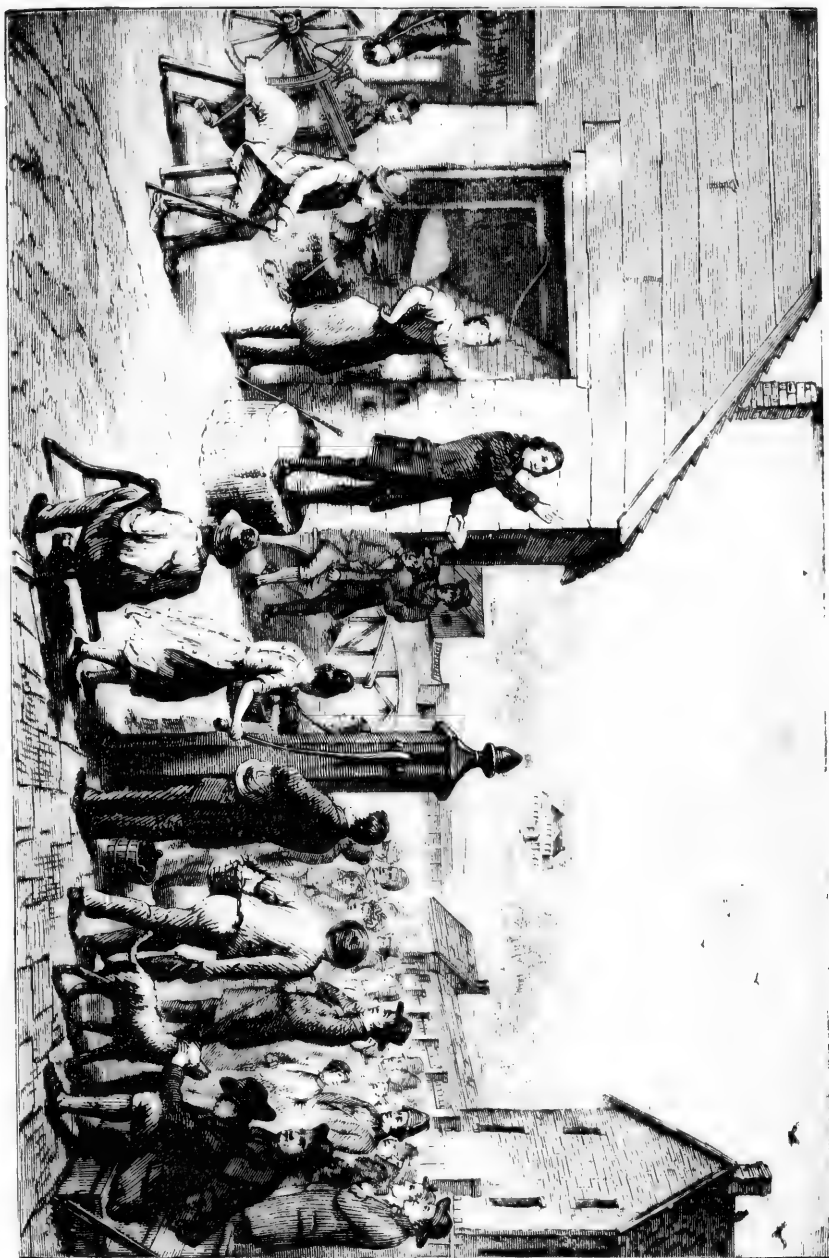
Residence of Philip Embury.

near by. The edifice had holes sawed out for door and windows, but the holes remained such. He began in zeal and self-sacrifice to go out preaching and was reaching large throngs in the backwoods. In his absence his neighbors cared for his little farm. His little society at home produced five early itinerants.

The first native American preacher, the first-born of so many faithful men, Richard Owen, was converted near Baltimore, and he proved a kindred spirit with Strawbridge, whom he aided and

ues.
nda,
like
rous,
h to
rmed
reek,

JOHN KING, THE VENDOR, THE FIRST MEADOWS SEASON IN BALTIMORE.



indows,
rifice to
e back-
e farm.

so many
ore, and
ded and

imitated and whom, in 1781, he followed with sorrow to his grave and preached his funeral sermon within sight of Baltimore, the city to which he had been an apostle of Methodism. When the war broke up the services of the regular clergy, Strawbridge administered the sacraments independently, and would not heed Asbury's counsel. For this his name seems to have been dropped from the list of preachers. Asbury could not endure insubordi-



ROBERT STRAWBRIDGE.

nation. The little society in New York glowed with zeal. In 1768, they wrote to Wesley for "an able, experienced preacher." For his passage money, "we will sell our coats and shirts to procure it." From their center, which they already felt to be metropolitan and even continental, "such a flame should soon be kindled as would never stop until it reached the great South Sea." Methodists in England were in equal ardor

of hope. "I make no doubt," wrote Peronet to Wesley, "that Methodism is designed to introduce the millennium." Two men, Williams and Ashton, could not wait for the regular routine. Wesley gave Williams authority to help the missionaries soon to be sent; Ashton paid Williams' expenses, for he was poor, and they reached New York, in 1769, in advance of the missionaries.

Ashton, an Irishman, (how these fiery Celts broke the way in

so many places!) gave Embury valuable aid and spent his later years in Camden, where Embury had died. He left a fund for an annuity "to the end of time" to the oldest unmarried member of the New York Conference, which still provokes an annual smile.

Williams was the apostle of Methodism in Virginia. He preached, in 1772, from the court-house steps, in Norfolk, so plainly that none invited him home—and that in Virginia!—for they thought him insane. On

his second preaching, they changed their mind and he formed the first Virginian society. Encouraged by Jarrett, an Episcopalian, he formed the first circuit in the state, and saw, as he traveled it, the conversion of Jesse Lee, the founder of Methodism in New England. William Watters, the first native itinerant, came to help Williams, who pressed on and became the apostle of Methodism in North Carolina as well as Virginia. He afterwards

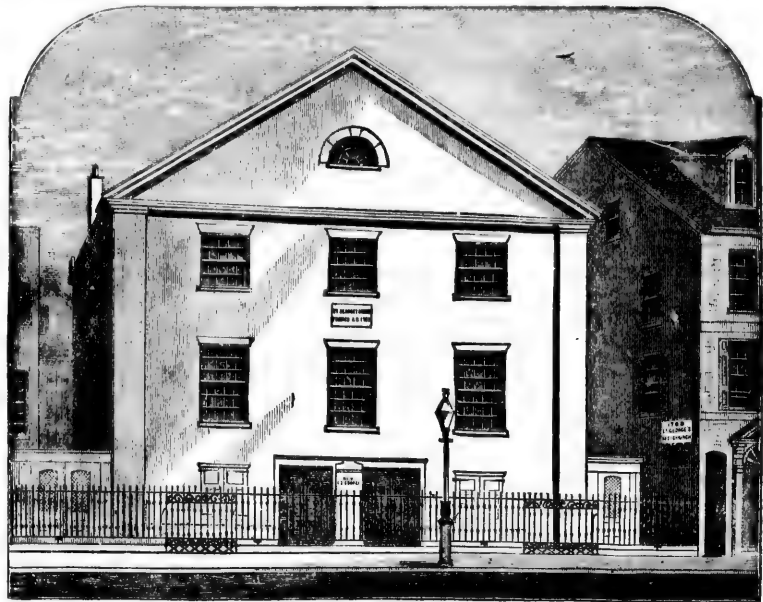


ARRESTING THE METHODISTS IN BALTIMORE.

located near Norfolk and there died in 1775. Francis Asbury preached his funeral sermon and bore him full witness as "a pious servant of the Lord." "No man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day."

About this time, John King came from London and appeared, abrupt as an Elijah, preaching in Potter's Field, now Washington square, above the bones of paupers. His piety was so stamped

upon his bearing that Henry Bowman was convicted before the preacher had spoken a word. He preached in Baltimore, at the corner of Baltimore and Calvert streets, on a "training-day." The crowd upset his table and threw him to the ground. King knew well his calling as follower of Wesley and Paul and did not shrink from their experiences. The commander of the troops took his part and he went on with his sermon, and King was, as other



ST. GEORGE'S METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, PHILADELPHIA, PA.

preachers had been, master of the field. He is regarded as the hero of Methodism in Baltimore, seeing that he thus took the brunt of the introduction. So did it thrive in Baltimore that, in five years from King's field-day, the Conference was entertained there. He was once invited to preach in St. Paul's, an English (Episcopal) church, but his mighty voice and vigorous action "made the dust fly from the old velvet cushion," and he was not

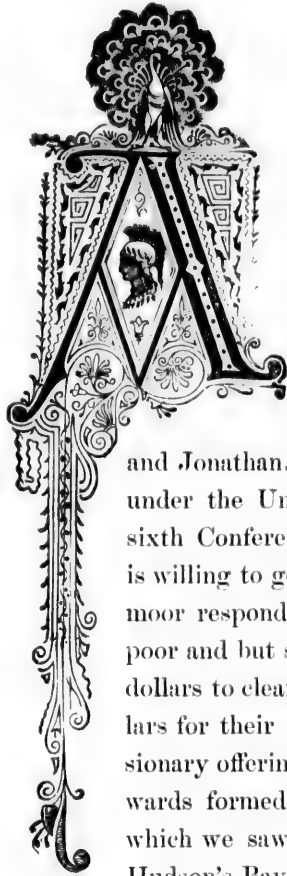
asked a second time. Wesley had tried in vain to mend King's elocution. "Scream no more at the peril of your soul. I often speak loud, but I do not scream." But he says: "You are stubborn and headstrong. You surely might take advice from your affectionate brother." John King went on "screaming." He died near Raleigh, N. C., very old, the last of all the ante-Revolutionary preachers, apparently not having "shortened his own life" by his screaming, as Wesley had feared. Thus six lay evangelists planted Methodism in America. They were Embury, Webb, Strawbridge, Owen, Williams and King. And, first of them all, like Mary at the Saviour's tomb, was Barbara Heck.



HECK HALL, GARRETT BIBLICAL INSTITUTE.

CHAPTER II.

Regular Work Begun.



SWEDISH clergyman, Wrangle, who had visited the Lutherans in Philadelphia, on his return home, met Wesley in London, and urged the sending of itinerants to America. He even urged two of his own converts to become Methodists, two young men who founded the New Church, behaved in life like David and Jonathan, and in death were not divided in burial under the Union Methodist Church. At his Twenty-sixth Conference, Wesley asked of his heroes, "Who is willing to go?" Richard Boardman and Joseph Pilmoor responded. Their brethren, themselves mostly poor and but scantily kept, gave two hundred and fifty dollars to clear the two from debt and one hundred dollars for their passage. In Leeds, where the first missionary offering of men and money was made, was afterwards formed that Wesleyan Missionary Society, of which we saw the abundant labor and success from Hudson's Bay to the Cape of Good Hope. These good men did not answer Wesley at once. The enterprise was too serious. When, the next day, they consented, it was with minds prepared.

Boardman had seen six years of Spartan discipline under Wesley, and had faced accidents by flood and field. On the coast of Flint, he found the rocks impassable, a snow-storm hindered him

on the sands and a heavy tide caught him from the sea. Only the way to heaven seemed open. At the last moment a boat rescued him. It was at almost his last sermon in England that Mary Redfern was converted, who, as we saw, became the mother of Jabez Bunting, the name of her eminent son being taken from the sermon's well-remembered text. Boardman was thirty-one. His noble wife had just died. Pilmoor was younger. Their voyage was rough and they were nine weeks in reaching Philadelphia. The good Wrangle had written his two converts to welcome them. Pilmoor found Captain Webb and a hundred Methodists in the city, and at his first sermon five thousand hearers on the race-course were "still as night." Whitefield, now on his way to die, at Newburyport, gave these men his blessing, and they entered upon a work which his wonderful labors had done much to prepare. Boardman hastened to New York, preaching at Trenton on the way. He wrote to Wesley: "Our house contains about seven hundred. A third of those attending get in; the rest are glad to hear without. Such a willingness to hear the Word I never saw before." Giving four sermons a week and ample other labor, he received his board, and fifteen dollars a quarter for clothing. John Mann, one of his first converts, afterwards preached at John Street during the war and then had a long ministry in Nova Scotia. Boardman was four years in New York, exchanging often with Pilmoor and making excursions for preaching. In one of these he reached Boston, where he formed a society in 1772, seventeen years before Lee's sermon on the Common.

Pilmoor found in Philadelphia an effectual door, and amid tender and tearful thoughts of England he declares, "Our coming has not been in vain. The Lord is pleased to advance His Kingdom. If two of our brethren would come over it would be a great blessing, and we shall gladly provide for them." He was in his excursions preaching to the French refugees at New Rochelle.

A Mrs. Deveau had, in an illness, dreamed of being lost in a tangled wilderness. Faint and despairing, she saw a stranger coming with a light, and he led her out safely. At the Deveau house, Pilmoor found a little company, but a clergyman present forbade his preaching. From her sick-bed, Mrs. Deveau caught a glimpse of Pilmoor's face. It was that of the stranger in her dream! She begged him to preach and found peace under the sermon. The village was moved, and here was formed the third society in the state, following John Street and Ashgrove. It was one of Asbury's pleasant wayside homes (he had no other) and from it came the Disosways and other worthy Methodists. Pilmoor went south as far as Georgia, tasting perils of travel and violence of mobs, but always cheered with success.

In 1771, Wesley again asked for volunteers in the American work. Five offered; two were chosen, Francis Asbury and Richard Wright.

Of Asbury, our Story will long be telling. He was the only child, after the death of a sister, in the house of a comfortable farmer in Staffordshire.

The lad at seven was piously inclined, and read with pleasure "the historical parts" of the Bible. Affected by the conversation and prayers of a pious man, the boy at fourteen was prayerful and grace was stirring within him. He heard preaching at the residence of Lord Dartmouth, whose seat was in that neighborhood. Not far away was that Wednesbury, where we saw the Wesleys and the Methodists for a week at the mercy of a mob. Their houses were wrecked and pillaged; themselves, men and women, knocked down and maltreated, and Wesley's life put in peril. Asbury asked his mother, "Who and what are these Methodists?" She sent him to Wednesbury to see for himself. He found them such as his soul longed for—the ideal of Christian people. Their devout kneeling, their saying Amen, their preach-

ing and praying "without a book," their hearty singing, seemed to him so beautiful, and his heart said: "This people shall be my people!" He grieved that his convictions were not deep and violent, but he found peace while praying in his father's barn. He quietly began public labors and was soon a local preacher, and at eighteen was preaching as many as five times a week, besides work at his calling. At twenty-one he began to itinerate, and after five years of hard service was named for America. A classical student might safely call Asbury a modern, a Methodist Hannibal. He was severe and self-denying, never surprised, afraid or discouraged. Physical toil and hardship had no terror for him. He was always on the move; he read men quickly, and easily won and controlled tempers as diverse as those of Hannibal's Iberians and Numidians.



From the portrait recovered by Dr. Roberts.

FRANCIS ASBURY AT THE AGE OF TWENTY-SIX.

That poor, blind phrase, "personal magnetism," if it means anything, could be applied to him. He had the strength, activity and grace of the Carthaginian, and his high, manly beauty, until time and toil had dealt upon him. This was the tireless man who was to be the Wesley of America.

Wright made little mark in this country and his name soon vanishes from all records.

"The brave man is frightened only after the danger," but Asbury felt the weight of his task as few men can feel. His strength lay in the nature of his errand. "I am going to live to God and to bring others to do so." In that temper he landed at Philadelphia and immediately his word was with power.

At his coming there were in the colonies six hundred Methodists and ten preachers. St. George's, where he, on the evening of his landing, heard Pilmoor preach, had been built by a German society, but at Captain Webb's instance had been bought, in 1770, for the Methodists. This "old cathedral," for fifty years the Methodist church in America, stands, venerable with sacred associations, among more than three-score and ten that have risen up around it. No branch of the Church in the Quaker City has grown like the Methodists, to whom now belong more than a sixth of its houses of worship.

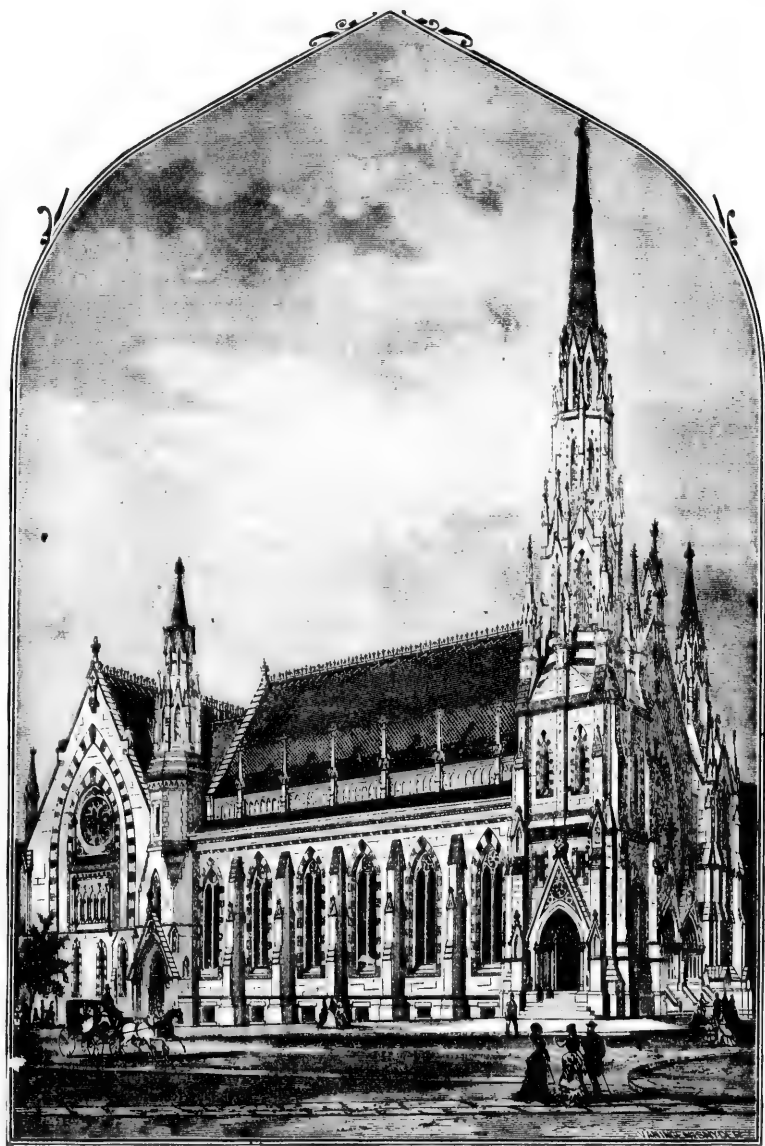
Wright went to Maryland, and among his warm helpers were those Bayards, one of whom, in this generation, after succeeding his father in the United States Senate, is now Secretary of State.

Asbury went north, preaching at Burlington and resting a few days with Peter Van Pelt on Staten Island. His heart grew larger. "I believe God hath sent us to this country." It was no small thing to plant Methodism on the pleasant island, where now, on its little area of some forty square miles, are at least four thriving Churches. Van Pelt, Wright and Disosway, at whose houses Asbury preached, became firm Methodists. Israel Disosway was the first class leader, his barn sheltered the first quarterly meeting, and from his woods came the timbers of the first church.

Entering New York, "Now I must watch and fight and pray. Lord, help!" as Tancred had said, on entering as crusader the Holy Land. He found the cities comfortable and "the backwoods" rough. The preachers were inclined to settle in the cities, and averse "to circulate." He was at once "dissatisfied"

at having the brethren "shut up in cities for the winter." "I think I shall show them the way out." Like Hannibal, he would have no winter quarters. Soon he had a circuit around the city, about the "Metropolitan Police District" of to-day. In the spring, he went back to push things at Philadelphia. "I hope that seven preachers of us will spread over seven or eight hundred miles." He soon had the Philadelphia circuit, reaching north to Trenton, and soon, between the James and the Hudson, was a net-work of appointments in which he was preaching three times a day, and the large desires of his heart were satisfied. Pilmoor went as far as Savannah.

Now, at twenty-seven, Asbury was made by Wesley his American superintendent, in charge of all Churches and appointments, subject to Wesley alone. His peculiar career now began. He took for himself a circuit of six counties (to-day) south of Philadelphia, visiting men and places already named, and at "Presburg's," in Christmas week, of 1772, held his first Quarterly—practically Annual—Conference. Its proceedings were brief. The preachers agreed to abide by Wesley's rules. Asbury was averse to giving the people the sacraments, but, of his five ministers, three were influenced by the pleadings of the people. "I was obliged to connive at some things for the sake of peace," writes Asbury, quietly. With the new year he made Baltimore his head-quarters—i. e., the place of his departures. Here again a sail-loft served for the third time as the dwelling-place of Methodism. Asbury's next task was discipline. He saw Baltimore was to be a great center and he wished there an exemplary people, fit to be the head of the Methodist column. He relied on conformity to rule as the source of lasting strength and peace. He found his people meeting as they chose, regardless of time, numbers, or leadership. He soon made of an earnest crowd an effective army.



MOUNT VERNON PLACE M. E. CHURCH, BALTIMORE.

Two Churches compete for priority in Baltimore. One is on Strawberry Alley, Fells' Point, where a warm Irishman, Captain Patten (Irishman ever at the front!), opened his house for Asbury's first sermon. It afterwards fell to a colored congregation. The other, in Lovely Lane, was later begun, but, apparently, earlier finished. Asbury laid the first stone in Strawberry Alley in Nov., 1773, and that of its fair-named consort six months later. Captain Webb preached the first sermon. Thus a dwelling-place was found for Methodism in the Monumental City three years later than in Philadelphia and five years later than in New York. Its relative growth was much greater, and Baltimore might almost be called the Methodist City. More churches in proportion to its population are there found than in any other American city, and of these about a third are Methodist, being more than twice as many as those of any other order.

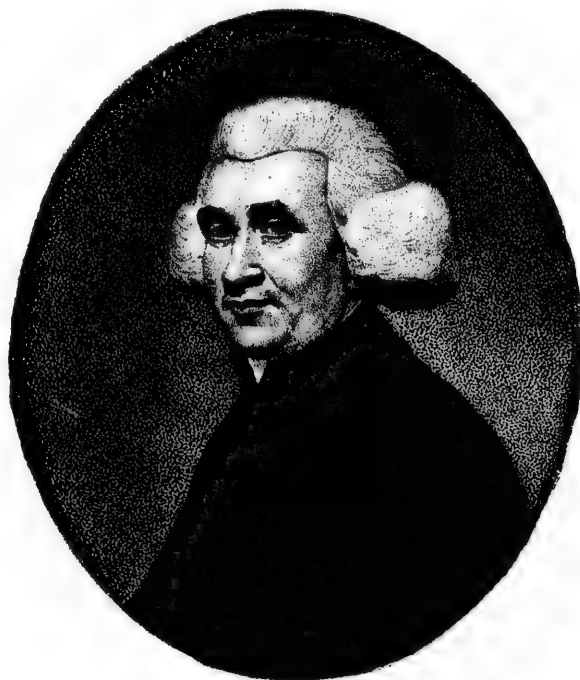
To-day the first church, with the finest edifice in America, is the lineal descendant of that chapel in Lovely Lane. First it may well be called! It gave Baltimore its first Sunday school, its first free school; its first colored church, and its first home for the aged, and it sits in motherly love, with the woman's college by its side, among churches of its own planting.

After a Conference, March, 1773, he went northward. His preachers were good men, but were not on his scale. None of them had his order of conquest, or appreciated his stern but salutary discipline, so needful in an enemy's country. He loved them, but he was anxious.

Only stout Captain Webb seemed to have a heart for the hour. It looked as if political causes might make the work still more trying.

Captain Webb went, in 1772, to England and Wesley heard him. "He was all life and fire." He told his tale of victory in America and called for recruits to stretch a longer line of battle. He asked for Benson and Hopper, the top of the Conference; he got Rankin and Shadford.

Rankin was a Scotchman, and had seen at Dunbar the Methodists of Haime's old regiment in Flanders. He heard Whitefield in Edinburgh, and was soon passing through those deep spiritual experiences of which our Story has so often told. A lady saw his tears at his conversion and tenderly asked the cause. He told her they were tears of joy! She herself burst into weeping, and his



THOMAS RANKIN.


words guided her to his joy. Aided by Haime's dragoons, who came to be stationed near Edinburgh, he was soon thinking: "I could lay down my life, if I might be instrumental in saving one soul from everlasting ruin." He had now ten years of itinerancy, had faced mobs and stones, had been trained by Nelson, had become true and tried.

Shadford was a man of another style, born flush of spirits and mischief, and weak of conscience. He was held to Church usages, to prayers, catechism and confirmation. At sixteen, on taking his first sacrament, he began to have deep, spiritual exercises, but he had no guide and made no progress. He became the athlete of his town, full of life and fire. Then he went soldiering for a year, and heard and deeply felt his first Methodist sermon. On his return he, in much and various struggling, came to Christian peace, and began an active Christian life. His father was converted, but feared lest his son's words to his customers might ruin the trade of their shop. "Father, let us trust God and do our duty!" In twelve months they had more business than ever, and his father came into perfect light.

Becoming a preacher, he dreamed that he was to preach in a foreign land. Six years later his dream came true, and the words remembered from it, "Fear not, for I am with thee," rang fresh and timely in his ear. It was a goodly company that sailed from Peel, on Good Friday, and came to Philadelphia, June 1, 1773. Besides the two itinerants, of whom Wesley said, "I turn you loose on the great continent of America," there were Captain and Mrs. Webb, a local preacher and other passengers, and the vessel, like so many thus furnished, was a floating Bethel of prayer and praise and blessing. Arriving, Shadford went to New Jersey, Rankin to New York, Webb to Albany. They were warmly greeted and instantly began to gather sheaves from fields white with harvest.

CHAPTER III.

First Things and Rising Heroes.

HILADELPHIA was the place where the First Conference was held, in the middle of July, 1773. Its ten members were Europeans, William Watters, the first American itinerant, and Philip Gatch, the second, not yet appearing. The members of classes were one thousand and one hundred and sixty; about half of these being in Maryland and Philadelphia and New York, having one hundred and eighty each. Many more had joined the societies, but not the classes, for the Wesleyan pattern was not readily adopted in this country. It even looked as if the itinerancy would have to give way to a settled pastorate, so did the larger societies wish the preachers to be permanent with them. Then there would have been no American Methodism.

Of this lack of Wesleyan discipline, Rankin, at the Conference, sorely complained. Some things went badly. Certain preachers wished to "abide in the cities and live like gentlemen." "Money had been wasted and many of our rules broken."

In truth, Wesley was too far away to understand precisely American needs and tempers. After our Revolution, he saw more clearly that submissiveness like that in England could not be had in this country. Thus the preachers were not allowed to administer the sacraments. This drove the people to the English clergy,

who were few, often bad livers, rarely devout. Strawbridge, seeing this, *would* give his people the sacraments in Maryland and Virginia. He was impatient, but he was moving in the right direction, and was not forbidden.

Robert Williams was now the personal "Book Concern," as Coke was the personal Missionary Society. He was reprinting Wesley's works and doing real good. His work was approved and its profits were to be divided among the preachers or used in charity. In this humble way began those now immense Book Concerns of the various Methodist bodies of our land.

Our first native itinerant, Watters, was sent to New Jersey circuit. The cloud of war was now rising, and all the preachers but one were born in England. They were presumed to be "royalists." Boardman and Pilmoor quietly retired to England. Twenty years later, Boardman quietly finished his course at Cork. Pilmoor gave up the itinerancy after ten years more service in England. He then became an Episcopal rector in Philadelphia, where he died in 1825. He never lost his Methodist heart or speech. Asbury and others were welcomed to his pulpit, and he lived and labored in perfect charity and reasonable fellowship for the people whom he had helped to plant.

We saw how the strongest, though strictly the foremost, man among our American founders was the noble Captain Webb. British soldier though he was, he staid here until the storm of war was in full rage. He then returned to England and fixed his home at Portland. His old age was such as was comely, after a career so good as his. He labored for twenty years among soldiers and sailors and French prisoners, preaching also to large audiences of citizens, still in uniform and scarred with honorable wounds. He believed that an angel had covered his head in battle and snatched him from all perils in peace, so that it was his special duty to give to Him, who had so sent the angel, the life so rescued and sus-

tained. He gave nearly all his income to benevolence. His last sermon was in Portland Chapel, at Bristol, a beautiful one, which he largely aided to build. At seventy-two, he was as active as most men at fifty, and full of cheer and joyous hope. Dec. 21, 1790, he suddenly changed worlds, with no dwindling or decay. He took supper, spent a cheerful evening, lay down at ten, and before eleven was here no more. "The wheels of life stood still." His epitaph is in marble within the Portland Chapel. "Brave, active, courageous—faithful, zealous, successful," all these his record in America proves true.

William Watters, the first native itinerant in our country, had come to his place through a series of experiences like those already so often rehearsed. The self-same spiritual exercises produced the self-same preachers. He was born in Maryland, the sunny land of early Methodism, where he was reared in the usages of the English Church. He was always faithful in using his prayer-book, but he had no living guide. The clergy about him were immoral men, too blind to lead the blind. Watters was reckoned "a good Christian," for he was regular at church, with his prayer-book under his arm. He himself did not quite think so. Soon "the preachers" came around. Some of Watters' friends (among them his own brother) whom he thought "as good Christians as any in the world," were converted and declared that they had never until now known what "heart religion" was! This surprised and confounded him. Then he went to a prayer-meeting and saw a man whom he knew to be a bad man all in agony and tears. The sight deeply wounded his own spirit; he was soon feeling the most intense conviction, and then coming into light and gladness. His religion, like a rising star, shone out at once and, after local labors for a year, he went to Norfolk and began the itinerancy. As Methodists and patriots, we may give thanks that this man, who seems to rise from the ground to head the long and goodly proces-

sion of our home-born preachers, bore himself so worthily. His mother offered him her entire estate, if he would stay with her; his brothers almost broke his heart with grief at his departing, but he went. In those days men were leaving the plow in the furrow to save the country; the soldiers of Christ were as prompt and fearless as the Putnams and Marions.

He went south with Williams. At Bath, Va., he was welcomed by Jarratt, the rector. This good man, Virginia born, and trained at Princeton, was as broad and noble as Washington. He found the religious condition of the colony "truly deplorable." He writes to Wesley that, of ninety-four parish clergymen there settled, only one "appears to have the power and spirit of vital religion." One parish in the colony was vacant. Grateful for the coming of the "preachers," he begs Wesley to send a "clergyman" for that parish. Jarratt himself had preached and formed societies in a region of forty miles around Bath. When Williams formed the Brunswick circuit, Jarratt had his own parish included in it, that his people might hear the preachers and join the classes and societies.

A great revival came to Lower Virginia, and, in 1775, there were in the societies of the circuit two thousand six hundred and sixty-four, eighteen hundred being added in one year.

Watters then, after a severe illness, labored in Kent, on the eastern shore of Maryland, where soon "Kent Meeting-house," now "Hinson's Chapel," was built, and Methodism came, where it has always grown and thriven.

In 1773, the whole state of New Jersey was the field of a young man, the second native itinerant, Philip Gatch. His conversion dated with that of Watters, and he, like his leader on the roll, had proved the fitness of his heart and mind in labors beyond his native Maryland, having three appointments in Pennsylvania. He entered "the Jerseys" deeply convinced of three things: "my

own weakness, the help that God alone could afford, and the saving of the souls of the people," as his errand.

He had not been long in the state before Benjamin Abbott, the Bunyan of American Methodism, appeared. Of all that rose in those years, he was the most wonderful. Abbott had been an apprentice in Philadelphia and was now farming in New Jersey. He had no fear of God; he was the roughest of men in all the harsh, muscular vices of his time. His wife, a Presbyterian, was a praying woman, and he had deep and stirring emotions, and made promises of reform. These went away like the early dew. Until he was forty years old he had never heard of conversion, or of pardon actually felt and known. Yet his soul was restless; he had longings by day and was scared in dreams by night. He went to hear a preacher, and under the sermon he saw all his sins at once, and wondered that he was out of hell. He went again, and the Word "shook every joint in my body," and he cried out for mercy.

"Abbott is mad!" said the people. In a lonely wood at night he was thinking of suicide, and looking for a place convenient, when, in his torment, it came to him: "This is nothing compared to hell!" He went home feeling that Satan was in hot chase behind, and that night was to his reeling mind a night of horrors. The next day, in the field, he laid down his scythe and stood weeping for his sins. His strong body was not equal to the rack. "I must have died before the going down of the sun." Then first he prayed aloud. Reaching, that day, a Methodist meeting, he "shook like Belshazzar," and, losing all strength, he cried aloud: "Save, Lord, or I perish!" He could not reach the preacher for the crowd, but that night he had family prayer, to his wife's joy and comfort.

The next day, going ten miles to a meeting, he spoke to the preacher and asked baptism for his soul's relief. "Are you a

Quaker?" "Nothing but a poor, wretched, condemned sinner!" "You are the very man Christ died for, or he would not have awakened you." That night, awaking from bad dreams, he saw by faith the Saviour with outreaching arms, saying: "I died for you!" He rose, weeping for joy, and, "light as a bird," he called up his family to prayer and then went to tell "what a dear Saviour I have found." His word had various effects, and he was reported "raving mad." A clergyman tried to free him from "these delusions of the devil." "He may be right," thought Abbott, and took it to the Lord in prayer. "The Lord said to me, 'Why doubt of Christ? Have you not felt His blood applied?'" Abbott sprang up, crying: "Not all the devils in hell shall make me doubt!" Clouds and darkness now vanished, and he entered upon his Christian career rejoicing like a strong man to run a race.

A strange trial soon met him. He dreamed that the preacher who had brought him to Christ had turned to sin, a fallen, ruined man; and so it proved. Abraham Whitworth has the sad place of the first apostate of the American Methodist ministry. He had come from England by the same ship with Rankin and Shadford, had labored well and brought Abbott into the Kingdom, and then himself became a castaway. He entered the British army and nothing more is said of him. His fall was a distress to Abbott. "What, then, will become of me?" This word came: "Cursed is he that putteth his trust in the arm of flesh." He saw that his own salvation did not depend on another man's standing or falling. Whitworth was expelled, but Abbott, the fruit of his labor, took his place. Under Gatch's preaching, Mrs. Abbott and six children were converted within three months.

Abbott's first sermon was at a neighbor's funeral, and it at once appeared what manner of man he was. He was half lamb and half lion. He knew the ways of the worst men. Out of his own consciousness he knew that something tender, longing and

spiritual may lie dormant under the rudest surface, and he was skillful in touching that one lead of possibility.

And now Methodism in New Jersey had in Abbott its first native itinerant. No man did more for it in the state, and it is comely that his grave at Salem be visited by its thousands, who think of his character and his labors. "Sleep on, thou Prince of Dreamers!" said one at Bunyan's tomb, and the words may be repeated at the grave, in Salem, near a church edifice of the people of his love.

Another preacher from Maryland now appears. "Honest, simple Daniel Ruff," converted at Havre de Grace in 1771, took for his first circuit the state of Delaware and Chester county. He was the first "native pastor" at John Street. His higher fortune was that his ministry brought conversion and the itinerancy to Freeborn Garrettson.

After the Conference of 1773, Rankin went out to his work like a giant refreshed with new wine. In Maryland, at the Watter's homestead, he says: "I had not seen such a season as this since I left my native land." Boardman and Pilmoor, now about to sail for England, aided him, and he spent four months alternately in New York and Philadelphia, and in wide circuits around the cities. Shadford, as was said, alternated in manner corresponding. He was the most self-distrustful of men, "unworthy to preach the Gospel to a polite and sensible people." Christ alone was magnified in the preaching, and in his first year in this country about two hundred were added to the societies.

Asbury went to Baltimore. He found the little society; he was sick with fever and ague, so that his twenty-four appointments on the Baltimore circuit, where he sometimes preached four times in a day, were heavy for him. The forming of new societies was often perplexing work, but his spirit was usually free and joyous. Besides his own, there were in the city a Romish, an Epis-

copal, a Lutheran and a Quaker Church. Of these, the Episcopal, dating from 1744, was the oldest. A new Lutheran Church was now formed, and a devout friend of Asbury, Otterbein, became its pastor. He was a good helper to Asbury, and twenty years later he founded the United Brethren, who are far more Methodistic than Lutheran. A son of one of Otterbein's preachers was Henry Boehm, long in our day a survivor of those men who toiled in the forest primeval.

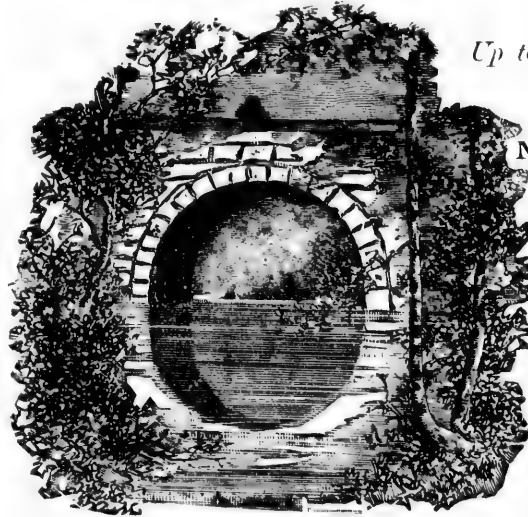
Soon we find Asbury's circuit divided into four, such had been the growth of the work under him, his local preachers and exhorters. Five chapels were building, and he left at the end of his year, 1774, thirty societies in Maryland, with ten hundred and sixty-three members, of whom more than half were this year's gainings. Maryland was now the center and seed-bed of Methodism.

Wright had built the first Methodist chapel in Virginia—Yeargon's Chapel—the farthest advance of Methodism southward, and he was planning another—Lane's Chapel—in Sussex county. Williams, laboring with Jarratt's help and sympathy, gathered this year in the region from Petersburg into North Carolina two hundred and eighteen members, among whom was the Lee family, which gave us Jesse Lee, the founder of New England Methodism.

This same year was the date of the conversion of Freeborn Garrettson—conspicuous for half a century among the men and events of the Church.



CHAPTER IV.



Up to the Revolution.

ON MAY 25, 1774, when the Second Conference met in Philadelphia, Rankin's firm and careful discipline had good effects to show. There had come regularity and harmony of action, which gave a feeling of strength. There had also been an increase of numbers. Yet Rankin had the faults generated in a land of obedience, and he could not adapt himself to the peculiar freedom of Americans. His official dignity and his air of authority were in marked contrast with the easy bearing of Asbury, who learned to rule in fact and spirit, without seeming to the eye to rule at all. Yet all the session was in love and peace. The additions to the societies had been over a thousand in ten months, thus doubling the number at the beginning. In the five Middle States were ten circuits with seventeen preachers. More than half the whole denomination were in Maryland, and thus the center of the nation was firmly occupied.

At this Conference, the itinerancy was even intensified. No preacher was to labor more than half a year on the same circuit, and

the preachers at New York and Philadelphia were to interchange quarterly. Each itinerant was to own the horse provided by his circuit, and to receive sixty-four dollars a quarter, besides traveling expenses. There was to be an Easter collection for debts and deficiencies. Rankin, who "traveled at large," was to be paid by any circuit which he might at any time be helping.

After Conference, Asbury was sick in New York. No trial could be more trying than weakness now. The people were so anxious to hear, and he so little able to preach, that he could but ask, "If I am the Lord's, why am I thus?" In John Street there was discord among the members, and a serious discontent with discipline. "My soul longs to fly to God, but he that believeth shall not make haste." Soon all came right in the society; new helpers came from England and Asbury went to Philadelphia. In the early spring he went, still feeble, to Baltimore. "Here are all my own, with increase," he writes with joy, and he is sure that it is the Divine will that he now be with this people. "The Lord will yet raise up for himself a large society in Baltimore."

Asbury now gave good proof of prudence and foresight, in view of the rising war. Rankin was alarmed. He saw everything with straight, English eyes, and to him ruin to the colonies and disaster to Methodism. Asbury had the vision of Adams and Jefferson. He said nothing, but he saw far and hopefully, and he made all haste to put Methodism in a shape to stand the storm and reach safely the quiet waters that he saw in the smiling distance. The providence of God worked with him. The preachers, like the Apostles, found that not many wise, or noble, or wealthy were called by their preaching, but some were called.

Henry Dorsey Gough, son-in-law of Governor Ridgeley, was one of the wealthiest men of the colony. His wife had heard preaching with deep concern, but he forbade her hearing a second time. In a gay revel he went with his company to hear Asbury, and

under the word came deep conviction. "What nonsense!" said one of the triflers. "No, no! What we have heard is the truth, the truth as it is in Jesus." He assured his wife of his consent to her hearing the Methodists. The world lost all its charm, and he thought of suicide.

One evening, as he rode away alone, he heard praise and thanksgiving from a company of his slaves. He was all the more broken in spirit that they should be so much more blest than he. Returning, sadly, he retired to a chamber and begged for mercy, and so asked that he received. Coming to his family and a company of guests, he told them, joyfully, "I have found the Methodists' blessing; I have found the Methodists' God!" Henceforth, Perry Hall, his residence, twelve miles from Baltimore, became a resting-place and a preaching-place for itinerants. It was one of the finest in the land, and its inmates, servants and all, were near a hundred.

Gough built a chapel, the first in America that had a bell, and to this his household were morning and evening called for worship. On Sunday there was preaching. What was quite as effective was that the mansion had an atmosphere as devout as the seat of Lady Huntingdon or Lord Dartmouth in England. Here came the aristocracy of Baltimore to the elegant hospitality of the Hall; yet, at the sound of the bell, none could be so rude as not to gather with their host at the chapel. If no other could serve as chaplain, Mrs. Gough herself served, reading, giving her colored people a hymn and then leading in prayer. "Take her altogether, few such have been found on earth." Her only sister and her only daughter were devoted Methodists. Gough, about 1800, had a season of darkness, but was restored, and, after great liberality and usefulness, went to his home on high. He was chief of Methodist laymen for many trying and weary years.

Rankin records this year his most wondrous sense of the Divine

presence since his coming to this country. It was at Watters' at a quarterly meeting. The preachers could not preach. They could only say: "This is the house of God; this is the gate of heaven!" If one arose to praise or testify, he was overcome and sat down silent. Rankin arose, and, pointing to the negroes who crowded the rear, said: "See how many Africans stretch out their hands to God!" As he spoke, the house seemed to shake with power and glory, and many were overcome, even to faintness. For three hours the breath of the Spirit was on the people—a pure, silent, overpowering influence. So the Holy Ghost prepared the souls of men by deep experiences for the times of sifting soon to come under the shock of war.

New laborers were rising, but the service was severe. The preacher had to be strong of limb and hardy of frame, as well as warm of heart and clear of brain. The feeble fell out by the wayside; only those marched on who were uncommonly strong and resolute. They had to remain single; the circuits were unable to support families, and marriage, unless the preacher had private means, made location necessary.

Gatch, in Delaware, saw trying times, such as our Story has told in England. He had to take the place of the fallen Whitworth, and to gain the confidence of the public which the apostate had betrayed. This sore task was made the sorer by violent persecution. There was one Kain, a clergyman, who, when Gatch came to preach within his parish, proposed to crush him; and of this Gatch had warning. In prayer, Gatch was reminded of David and Goliath. When the hour of service came, Kain was on hand.

"By what authority do you preach?" "By the authority that God gave me." "But why in St. Luke's parish?" "Hear, and then judge for yourself." Kain stood at Gatch's right-hand. The preacher was familiar with the prayer-book, took his text from it and "took it with me through the sermon." This confused the

"Parson." Kain spoke against extempore prayer. Gatch showed how Peter, sinking, did not go ashore for a prayer-book, but cried out instantly. Such discussion proved unpleasant to the parson and he quietly fell to the rear.

By toil, hardship, and no little peril, Gatch redeemed the circuit. At the end of the half-year he went to Frederick, where he had experience of cudgeling in the dark, and other ill usage; but the Word prevailed, and a hundred and sixty were added to the societies.

Then a preacher, Ebert, in New Jersey, followed Whitworth to the bad, and Gatch went to repair the damage done by the second apostacy. Here, too, the wound was healed and fifty souls gathered. In such a disaster he had the gifts needed for relief, he was so persistent, wise and fearless.

Abbott was in full movement. At Deerfield, a mob was proposing to tar and feather the first coming itinerant. Abbott was warned. "I thought it would be a disagreeable thing to have my clothes spoiled and my hair all matted with tar!" But "I resolved to go and preach, if I had to die for it." In the prayer the power of God came down; some fell, many wept, and the leader of the mob "had never heard such preaching since Williams went away, and so I came off clear." His own experience grew deep and wide. At Salem, a Presbyterian elder asked him to preach "at my house." The elder and his wife were awakened, and people cried, and one fell. "Do you know what you have done?" asked he of the elder. "What have I done?" "You have opened your house to the Methodists, and, if a work of religion break out, your people will turn you out of the synagogue." "I will die for the truth."

Hell Neck was such a place as its name might suggest. Abbott invaded it. "I have heard Abbott swear, and I have seen him fight. Now I will go and hear him preach," said a sinner

there. He was converted, and had Abbott preach at his house. Abbott went preaching on the Neck and won many souls. He was earnest and artless. His tender, simple appeals touched all hearts, and he well knew how bad and violent men can be touched. He was mobbed. At Mannington, one twice thrust his bayonet by the preacher's ear, but he retreated, not the preacher.

Removing his family to Salem, he notes a powerful work of grace breaking out. Many of the conversions were attended with remarkable circumstances, such as needed wise and tender treatment. He counted that these circumstances were no proof of conversion. Distress is no standard. If sin and guilt are removed and love enters the soul, that is enough. He always expected immediate results of conviction and, usually, of conversion in his preaching. Of "demonstrations" he made no account, though no preaching was ever attended by so many, and notable, as his.

Watters also speaks of his work in New Jersey at this time. "O how sweet to labor where the Lord gives his blessing and sets open a door, which no man can shut!" In Virginia, the numbers on the Norfolk circuit were nearly doubled in number, and on the Brunswick rose from two hundred and twenty to a thousand.

Wesley, this year, sent as recruits two regulars, James Dempster and Martin Rodda. Dempster, a Scotchman, trained at the University of Edinburgh, had traveled ten years in England. His health soon failed. He married and, without giving up the Wesleyan doctrines, became a Presbyterian pastor at Florida, N. Y. His son, the Rev. John Dempster, D. D., served for half a century the people from whom his father thus withdrew, and organized the Theological Schools of Boston and Evanston. Rodda could not let alone politics of the day, in which he took the Royalist side. He was obliged to flee the country (and his escape

was narrow) for distributing, as was believed, the King's proclamation.

Glendenning, who had come with these men, as a volunteer, soon left the Methodists. In a little while, Asbury alone was left of the Englishmen. The rest had gone back to England, or out of the denomination. Yet Asbury, himself, was worth a thousand men. The times were dark in the land, but there arose, in both Church and State, a class of men equal to the demand of the time. Washington and the men, the list of whose names he leads, proved adequate in war and legislation to all the demands of the Revolution.

Asbury, when men-of-war fired upon Boston, said: "I must go on and mind my own business and leave these things to the providence of God." His course proved to be the wise one. Able men rose up at his side and still abler helpers came to him from abroad.



RUINED TEMPLES.

CHAPTER V.

In the Revolution.



It is not here the place to say much of the American Revolution. It was in some things, like Wesley's religious movement, an effort not to form a new organization, but to restore life to one in decay. Wesley wished to revive the great Church by the warmth and force of a little one within it. The Americans wished to give effect in the colonies to a principle of the British Constitution—that tax-payers must be represented in the government, which the existing government utterly disregarded. Wesley, at first, failed to see the whole nature of the case. He afterwards gained larger and truer views, and foretold the success of the Revolution. "They asked for nothing more than their legal rights, and that in the most inoffensive manner. They are strong; they are valiant; they are terribly united." To his preachers he writes: "You were never in your lives in so critical a situation as you are at this time. It is your part to be peace-makers; to be loving and tender to all, but to addict yourselves to no party." His advice was well followed and his people grew right on in strength and numbers, while to other religious bodies the war was a disaster. When this nation was forming, Methodism, being also in infancy, was also plastic and molded itself happily to the new ideas and institutions. We shall see how it struggled in the days of struggle, and how, when the deluge of war subsided, it

settled down, at once and solidly, as the first ecclesiastical structure in the new nation—"The Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States of North America." During the war it had increased fourfold.

Asbury's sympathy was with the colonies, but he knew his own calling, and that politics, however important to laymen, were foreign to him, whose message was to both patriots and loyalists. From the Third Annual Conference he went to Norfolk. He found the society sadly undisciplined, and worshiping in a shabby old play-house. Discipline was his first care. "It must be enforced, let who will be displeased." He hoped to get a new chapel, but the next winter the loyalists burned the town, and it is not until 1803 that he found there a new chapel, "the best in the state." He learned the intention of Rankin and others to return to England. "It would be eternal dishonor to leave three thousand souls, neither is it the part of a good shepherd to leave his flock in time of danger. I am determined not to leave them. My business is to be more intensely devoted to God." He had now the sad duty of preaching the funeral sermon of Williams, the first Wesleyan preacher to find a grave in our soil.

Asbury loved Virginia. There his people struggled along in the war and were not disheartened, and he loved them for their zeal and fidelity, as also for their generous hospitality. He spent more time there than elsewhere, and there he finished his long ministry.

Shadford was now on Brunswick circuit, and souls were finding peace almost within hearing of hostile cannon. In some places, for long lack of Gospel service, the people were sorely heathenized. Planters and their families knew nothing of Christianity. Coming to such a place, when high water had hindered his travel, Shadford was kindly received, and offered to preach. The planter sent out for his neighbors. "They were as wild boars." The

next day, the man went some miles to show the preacher his best road, and again heard preaching. The result was that he and his wife, "who knew neither God nor themselves," were converted, and at their house were soon an appointment, a society of seventy and a Church. That year, eighteen hundred were added to the Brunswick circuit. Sinners were often seized with shaking and fell as if dead, some paralyzed, others praying; and Christians, in the unfolding of the divine love and power, were sometimes unable to stand on their feet.

The good Jarratt gave a full account of the work, yet left "the greater part untold." The work, seeing that it went on in the turmoil of war, was wonderful, "great, deep, swift and glorious." Jarratt afterwards writes: "I have not heard of one apostate yet." "We insist on salvation from the root of sin," and he thinks the attainment of that by many preserved the work.

Asbury came, and saw, and joined in the work. "My soul catches the holy fire." He held meetings with Jarratt, who promised to share, if possible, in the coming Conference. Thence he returned to Baltimore and Philadelphia, having, in ten months, ridden about three thousand miles. In all the great centers war was now rife. At Baltimore, a ship of war was said to be coming to destroy the town. Troops and intrenchments were preparing in New York. Asbury was unmoved. He had fixed his own policy and he steered right on, doing his utmost to save the souls of men. Soon he went out again to comfort and confirm the young Churches. At Perry Hall he rested, and Gough went with him to Virginia. He preached constantly. "But the zealous conversation and prayers of Mr. Gough seem to move and melt the hearts of the people more than my preaching does," and of this none could be gladder than Asbury.

His health was now poor, and he rested at the Warm Sulphur Springs in a truly Wesleyan fashion. He read daily a hundred

pages, prayed in public five times, lectured in prayer-meeting every night and preached in the open air every other day. The Springs, the Saratoga of the day, were not luxurious of entertainment. His Grand Central Hotel was sixteen by twenty, "with seven beds and sixteen persons therein, and some noisy children." But the woods were glorious. He hears of the British fleet off the coast. "What can they do without three hundred thousand men?" Asbury's journals show him now fully entered upon a career equal to that of any of the great Methodist heroes. For half a century, he seems either preaching or in the saddle for an appointment. We see in his record almost nothing of the glow that enlivened the labor of Wesley or Whitfield, but we find the calm, stern resolve to make the most of life. He attained much in the sacred languages, in theology and history, but he appears chiefly as a practical man, directing other men, studying policies and administration, and acting in the living present, leaving the morrow to bring its own issues.

Soon, Shadford, the last English Methodist preacher, leaves him and he is sad. "I am three thousand miles from home ; my friends have left me ; I am counted by some an enemy of the country ; I am every day liable to be seized by violence. Lord, stand by me !" The magistrates knew Wesley's first views, but not his second, and Asbury would not take a test oath of allegiance. He resolved to be strictly neutral. We shall see that it cost him trouble.

For the next two years the temper of men grew fiercer, but Asbury went on preaching. At last, in 1778, he could not safely travel. Thomas White, a judge of Kent Co., Del., gave him an asylum. At his house he met the preachers, or corresponded with them, and, though closely watched, he preached at large in the state, its laws and the temper of its magistrates being milder than elsewhere. Asbury gained the confidence of men in high

position, and once the governor secured from the governor of Maryland the freedom of preachers there in custody. Meanwhile his views of America grew wider and warmer. In 1777, he believes "the Americans will become a free nation." Soon he sees "that independence will give the Gospel a free course through the land."

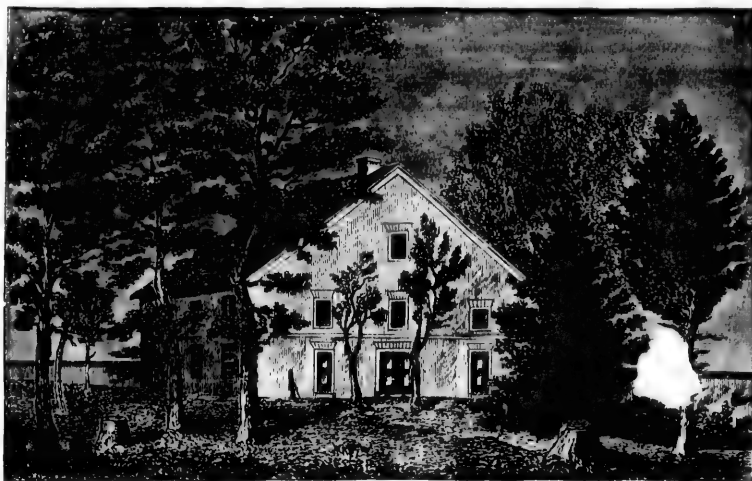
His confinement at Judge White's was for five weeks close and for eleven careful. After that the little state was his prison. For a year he preached among his neighbors and, in 1779, held the Conference in his asylum. In the second year, Delaware was his circuit, Judge White's house being his usual shelter at night. Mrs. White, his hostess, was the true duplicate of Mrs. Gough at Perry Hall. Her husband was arrested for being a Methodist; but she clung to him, resisted the patrol who brandished their swords, followed to his place of confinement and, after five weeks, procured his release. She prayed with a company of soldiers just leaving their weeping families, she led the class, she did everything but preach; and, even for that, she was ready and gifted. In everything she was worthy of her devout and generous husband.

In his retreat, Asbury won the regard of Richard Bassett, afterwards one of the framers of the U. S. Constitution, U. S. Senator and Governor of Delaware. Calling on Judge White, Bassett saw Asbury and some preachers "in sable garments, keeping themselves aside." Mrs. White said: "They are Methodist preachers, some of the best men in the world." "Then I cannot stay here to-night." "You must stay; they cannot hurt you."

Charmed at supper with Asbury, Bassett had him as a guest at Dover. Soon, Bassett, with Mrs. Bassett, was a Methodist, a lifelong liberal supporter of the Church and even a local preacher. He was chief founder of Wesley Chapel, in Dover, and his three residences, at Dover, Wilmington and Bohemia Manor, were homes for preachers. This last, his country-seat, became another

Perry Hall. His only daughter became ancestress of Thos. F. Bayard, now Secretary of State.

Another of Asbury's friends in this close time was Judge Philip Barratt. He now built Barratt's Chapel and, in 1780, the Quarterly Conference was held in it. This was long the finest of our country chapels, and here Coke first met Asbury and began to frame the M. E. Church. The very seat on which they sat is kept.



BARRATT'S CHAPEL, DELAWARE.

Such were Asbury's friends and guardians in his confinement, if he is confined who has a state for his prison. One sees what the man must have been that he drew and held such friends. To him it was due that Methodism in those regions took such hold of the ruling classes, and that, even to this day, it is of such social position on the "Shores."

For two years and a month, Asbury was in Delaware, which, we see, was not to him as Meschek and the tents of Kedar. He had shown himself in a character that none could longer doubt, a

true preacher, faithful to his adopted land and serving its sacred interests. The native preachers now made him assistant or superintendent in Rankin's place, and he is to be for a long time the hero of our Story. He now fully entered that course of ministerial service by which he was to spread Methodism over the nation, and along the wide frontier keep it in even march with the nation's growth.

His first journey was southward, where trouble had arisen about the sacraments. He writes, as he makes his way among rocks, rivers and pathless woods: "I was tempted and tried in Delaware to prepare me for, and drive me to, this work." In ten months, during which he returned to New Jersey and, for the first time, saw Abbott, he traveled four thousand miles, over rudest roads, and averaged a sermon a day.

In May of the next year, 1781, he started for the southern wilderness. "Greatly pleased I am to get into the woods, where, though alone, I have blessed company." Here and there among the Alleghanies, beyond the south branch of the Potomac, he found settlements where two or three hundred would gather to hear, and the mountains rang "with strains unknown before." At some German settlements he longed to have preachers of their own tongue, but in one place he tried his English before them, if perhaps they might get some crumbs of meaning. At Leesburgh, he held a Quarterly Conference and then set out to return. Thus for three years, to 1784, he was in constant motion.

At length, on the first year of peace, Wesley sent Dr. Coke to America. He was conducting service at Barratt's Chapel when Asbury came and, going into the pulpit, embraced him, kissed him and sat down by his side. No warrior ever gave warmer welcome to a reinforcement in the toil of battle. We have told of Coke. He had come as the first Protestant Bishop of the New World. As a grand and graduated English clergyman, he could

not come until war was over. He had now come to organize perpetual warfare and conquer the Union for Christ. Asbury greeted him as a very angel, bringing aid and comfort.

Rankin put on record his later experiences in this country, and some of them are interesting. When, in 1775, Congress appointed a day of fasting, he preached in Maryland to a large gathering. "I tried to open up the cause of all our misery." He was the first to set forth "the dreadful sin of buying and selling the souls and bodies of the poor Africans." He was glad to find hundreds of negroes among the converts in the great revival. He was in a strain of anxiety over the war.

One day in August, 1777, at his quarterly meeting, he was told that a squad of militia were coming to arrest him. They came. He went on with his meeting and, on rising from the first prayer, he noticed men and officers weeping. Under the preaching they trembled, and at last they departed, saying: "God forbid that we should hurt one hair of the head of such a minister!" That day Rankin had a strong impression that there had been a battle. Two days later an express came, telling of the battle of Long Island. He was alarmed and hastened to leave the country.

In London, he served, after his return, for over thirty years, and was at the death-bed of Wesley. He had proved himself in this country to be a man needed in matter of discipline; he had found things going loosely and had brought them to order. Beyond that he was not a manager for America. He was so unable to understand Asbury's wiser views that his presentation of them to Wesley caused the latter to write to Asbury, recalling him to England. The letter never reached Asbury, and for the failure Wesley was afterward most thankful.

In the absence of our English brethren, native preachers were growing in power. In Maryland and Virginia, Watters was, in 1775, blest with conversions every week, though his circuit was

on the frontier, and his hardships many. On his Virginia circuit a hundred souls were added in six months. The next year he was on new ground in Berkeley and Frederick counties. In 1777, he went to Brunswick circuit, the region of Jarratt's revival. Here he notes his first hearing of a Gospel sermon from a clergyman of the Church of England, M. Roberts, who afterwards became a Presbyterian pastor. So Watters labored and endured hardness until the end of the war. He then, for the sake of his family and his health, was obliged to locate. Not quite "locating" was it when he was still filling regular appointments thirty and forty miles from home!

The most important man who came to us during the war was Freeborn Garrettson. He was of an old and foremost Maryland family, and was strictly trained in the ways of the Church. He was early yearning over questions of conscience and religion, on which none could give him light, and the message of the itinerants was to him a mystery. Its first effect was to induce him to lead a prayerful, devout life, "serving God privately!" He thought himself a Christian. He fasted, prayed, attended church and rebuked his neighbors. The second effect of the preaching, to which he could not choose but listen, was to shatter this self-confidence and show him that Christ must be his Saviour. Riding home from a sermon by Daniel Ruff, he was deeply impressed that "*now* is the accepted time." "I threw the reins of the bridle on the horse's neck and, putting my hands together, said, 'Lord, I submit!'" "My soul was exceeding happy" Reaching home he called his household together for prayer and praise.

Soon followed a scene the like of which had not been seen in America. Standing in the midst of his household, bond and free, at family prayer, he pronounced his servants free, and knelt with them to pray to the Father of all. As he did the deed, "a divine sweetness ran through my whole frame." It was a great, brave

thing for a young planter to do, and the Holy Ghost in his heart endorsed the deed. He now began to tell of Jesus, to exhort and form classes. He started upon a circuit, but returned to work in his own neighborhood. Here he was mobbed, and, on one occasion, he was beaten almost to death with a stick, by one of the magistrates of Queen Anne county, for no other offense than that of being a Methodist preacher.



FREEBORN GARRETTSON.

He was summoned to military drill, but, sitting on his horse, he told his experience and exhorted a thousand people.

He did not drill, but was fined twelve and a half dollars a year, which he was never asked to pay.

Soon, Daniel Ruff took him upon a circuit, and his life-work began. He went upon new ground to form a new circuit.

As he went along, prayerfully, musing how and where to

begin, he came to a gate. "Turn in, this is the place to begin," was his inward impression. The house was an officer's, who, that day, held muster. He marched his troops to the front of the house for the sermon, and his own son of thirteen, Ezekiel Cooper, afterwards a prominent preacher, was converted. He went from circuit to circuit, and always had strength and victory. In North Carolina, he told his views of slavery and preached comfort to the slaves, pitying their sad case. He was threatened and interrupted. A man was shot for entertaining him, but he had attained the love that casts out all fear. The next year he was in Maryland when the masses were thinking that Methodists must be Tories. Hartley, his colleague, was put in Talbot jail, where he preached through the windows. After a while it was thought that he might as well preach outside of it, and he was released. The magistrate who had committed him, being sick, sent for Hartley. "When I sent you to jail, I was fighting against God; pray for me!" He urged his family to become Methodists, gave them into Hartley's charge, and requested him to preach "at my funeral."

June 24, 1718, he visited Asbury in his retreat at Judge White's, and "had a sweet opportunity of preaching." The next day, as he rode away from his congregation, a ruffian struck him on the head with a club, and a second blow brought him senseless to the ground. He was taken to a house and bled. It seemed as if he could live but a few minutes, and he was as if blest with the very vision of Stephen. "I was so happy that I could scarcely contain myself." His assailant sat by his bedside and offered him the use of his own carriage! Garrettson was summoned before a justice, who charged him with violation of law. "Be assured that this matter will be brought to light in an awful eternity!" The pen dropped from the Dogberry's hand, and the preacher retired. He preached from his bed that evening, and,

thirty years after, a kinsman of the ruffian invited Garrettson to preach at Church Hill, where he was vestryman, as if to atone for the outrage.

The next day, the scarred and bruised face of the preacher was in front of two congregations, and he soon came back to the scene of the outrage, and preached to a large and deeply-affected concourse. He was victorious. He was in Dover near the end of 1778. A mob gathered, crying: "He is a Tory; he is one of Clowe's men; hang him!" "I was in a fair way to be torn to pieces." A gentleman led him by the hand to the steps of the Academy and bade him preach. "I will stand by you." The sermon rang through the town, and a person in a window a quarter of a mile away was convinced, as were twenty others, and even the leader of the mob. A society was now formed in Dover. In Sussex Co., a man came with a pistol to shoot Garrettson, but was hindered, and at Salisbury the sheriff came to arrest him, but left him free. At Quantico, a couple who had heard Whitefield, but had not, for now twenty years, heard a sermon, felt their flickering piety kindled to a flame, and at their house was formed the first society of Somerset Co.

There was a region of Delaware called the Cypress Swamp, where the people were simply heathen. Garrettson took this into his circuit. Asking a man, "Do you know the Lord Jesus Christ?" he had for answer, "I know not where the gentleman lives." A second answer was, "I know not the man." The people simply had no religion, and their condition was every way deplorable. Light now came in upon them. Garrettson's congregations went as high as fifteen hundred. A church was built. Exhorters and preachers were raised up. The people began to till the land and build houses. The wilderness became a garden of Methodism and began to bud and blossom as the rose. Mobs and afflictions were still awaiting the young preacher. At one

place, a man presented a musket to his breast; others interfered, and, the wretch soon joined the Methodists, a broken penitent. At Salisbury, a mob tried to seize him and, not finding him, nearly killed his entertainer. He was urged to leave at once, but he was not afraid. While he was preaching, one sent by the mob to signal to them their best time to come on was so affected by the sermon that he went to tell them that, if they laid hands on the preacher, he would put the law on them.

Now we find him going to Lewiston; and the people, who had heard of his coming, gaze from their doors and say: "Oh, he is like any other man!" He is greeted with drums, guns, bells, and once, preaching at a court-house, on a hot day, a huge fire was made to sweat him out. He always held the ground, was always more than conqueror, and, from this rude region, he in fifteen months gathered thirteen hundred members.

In 1780, he was preaching ten or twelve sermons a week in New Jersey. Soon he is in Dorchester Co., Maryland, at the house of a Mr. Airey, whom Judge White and the Bassetts had interested in religion, and who now introduced preaching into his county. Though Airey, a magistrate and eminent citizen, was with him, mobs and annoyances were still his portion. One Sunday he was seized, while preaching, by a mob of twenty, led by an old man with a pistol, and was kept a fortnight in Cambridge jail. A fortnight of gracious experiences and of sweet fellowship of friends, out of which he came in new vigor. He preached to three thousand near the jail, and he conquered the county. It gave him the severest struggle and the completest victory. So he fared for three following years. In 1781, he rode five thousand miles and preached five hundred sermons. He then came to his old field and rejoiced over the permanence of the work.

Meanwhile, Gatch had fared still harder. In 1776, he had gone

to his work, after suffering from the small-pox, but, in pain and weakness, he pressed onward. Near Bladensburgh, on his Frederick circuit, a man, enraged at the conversion of his wife, vowed vengeance on the next preacher. He caused Gatch to be waylaid and tarred, while forgetting himself he prayed for his enemies. The leader, who put on the tar, and several of his crew, were afterwards converted. A plot was formed to murder Gatch as he should cross a bridge. His friends, learning it, sent him by another road, and one of them was arrested on the bridge in his place. These fierce men had flogged a young exhorter nearly to death. Yet the preachers were unterrified. Gatch was soon preaching where he had been tarred, and none molested him.

He next went to Hanover circuit on the James. Here some faithful Baptist evangelists had borne the brunt of violence, and he found easier times, large gatherings and ardent worshipers.

But now his health began to fail. He was riding to an appointment when two men came up, and each taking an arm twisted it behind his back, giving him racking pain and injuring his lungs. In 1778, he withdrew for his poor health's sake and went upon a farm in Virginia. He was by marriage owner of nine slaves. After the doctrine of Jefferson and the example of Garrettson, he gave these their freedom. "I do believe that all men are by nature equally free, and, from a conviction of the injustice of depriving my fellow-creatures of their natural rights, do hereby emancipate and set free the following persons."

Though now a farmer, he was, like other retired itinerants, constantly preaching. The relation of *supernumerary*—i. e., of a member of the Conference, left for good reason without appointment, was not yet created. The name of Gatch, therefore, disappears from the scanty minutes of the war time, as these give only the names of Asbury as superintendent, and of the preachers actually appointed, or who for any cause "desist from traveling."

During these years when New Jersey was by its position constantly under the tread of armies, Abbott was doing active service in the Gospel. He took no pay. His farm was worked by his own family and hired men. Even these he brought to his preaching, when near home, and paid them as they listened the same as when they labored. His children were as full of zeal as himself, and one son became an itinerant. Abbott appeared like a Quaker of that noble sort, even yet seen in his region. He was large of stature, kind of look and bearing, with hat and coat after Quaker fashion. "Thee appears so much like us we will welcome thee," was the feeling of the Friends. And, like them, he was opposed to fighting, though devoted to the cause of freedom. To his preaching he added wise and tender conversation, and this was even as useful as his sermons. His own experiences with soldiers and men of all classes, with families and congregations, make of themselves a volume. These were often impressive, but so were those of the other preachers, and, as they do not often specially illustrate our Story, we omit them. His first and perhaps his only money received for preaching was on Morris river. He was over two hundred miles from home, with fifteen pence in his pocket. As he was leaving, an old lady put two dollars into his hand. "He that was mindful of the young ravens was mindful of me."

A noble layman, peer with the Whites, Goughs and Bassetts, now arose to Abbott's help.

James Sterling was a patriot officer, a citizen of large means and abilities. At Burlington, his ample home was free to the preachers and to all Christian ministers.

It appears that he was converted under Abbott's preaching, and he at once made Zaccheus his example. His time and fortune were held for the Saviour, and for half a century he did more for religion in New Jersey than any other layman on its soil, while he

was believed to have given more for the support of preachers than any other man in the nation. He often went out with Abbott and exhorted after the preaching.

In 1780, Abbott invaded Pennsylvania. Mobs and menaces greeted him, but his fearless, kindly bearing and the force of his right words steadily prevailed. Perhaps his air (and fact) of great physical strength was respected. At Lancaster, Martin Boehm, a founder and Bishop of the United Brethren, warmly greeted him. This man, the warm friend of Asbury, made his house a preacher's home and gave his son Henry to the itinerancy. He died, in 1812, at ninety, and Asbury preached at his funeral. Henry, sixty years after his father's death, was the oldest living itinerant. Abbott's ministry was still attended with those strange physical phenomena. They had no moral or religious meaning, for as many convictions and conversions took place without as with them. Abbott, himself, neither sought nor shunned them. He took as little notice of them as possible. Had he been a feeble man, they might never have happened. His mighty presence had at least something to do with them. When scores were trembling, falling and senseless, he went right on, counting nothing worth regard but a changed heart and a reformed life. Hence there was no reaction.

At upper Octoraro many, as usual, fell under his word as men fall in battle. A Presbyterian declared the scene "diabolical." "Wait and see!" said Abbott. One after another they "came to," praising God and giving testimony for Jesus. "Hark, brother, do you hear them? This is the language not of hell but of Canaan." Soon, at a prayer-meeting, the people gathered, and the Presbyterian came also. "I gave out a hymn; Brother Sterling prayed, and, after him, myself." After a few words, Sterling fell and then every one in the house but two men, the opponent and Abbott. After a little down went the two men. The oppo-

ment lifted up his voice. "It is all delusion and the work of Satan!" At an appointment next day the Presbyterian again put in an appearance. Soon he fell as one dead. At the next preaching, nine miles away, there was his, now, familiar face. After the sermon he rose to say: "I am not of this sect; I have been with this preacher now four days; I never saw the power of God this way before, but it is the power of God." He went on exhorting for three-quarters of an hour. In thirty days of this crusade, Abbott held about fifty meetings and the result was ample.

Going to Delaware to help his son David, whose young labors were on a circuit there, he came where a clergyman was conducting a funeral and many were present. After the services he was asked to speak. A storm arose and, two clouds meeting over the place, the lightning flashed fearfully and the thunder shook the building. Abbott rose above the tempest and set forth the second coming of Christ, and, while "horrors all hearts appall," he urged them to flee to Him now for refuge. In the sublime and affecting hour the people wept and cried and fell.

Nor was Abbott himself exempt from emotions beyond control. Once when Ruff was conducting family devotions at Abbott's house, the latter was stretched upon the floor, overcome by sudden, perfect, overmastering love.

One more of these early men needs tracing. Jesse Lee had, in 1779, preached in North Carolina his first sermon. In 1780, he was drafted and taken into camp. He resolved, in prayer and good conscience, that to bear arms was not his duty and he would not do it. On his first parade the sergeant offered him a gun, but he refused it; the lieutenant did the same, with the same result. The latter reported the case to the colonel and, returning, leaned a gun against him; he still refused and was put under guard.

"We must pray before we sleep," said he to the guard, and a

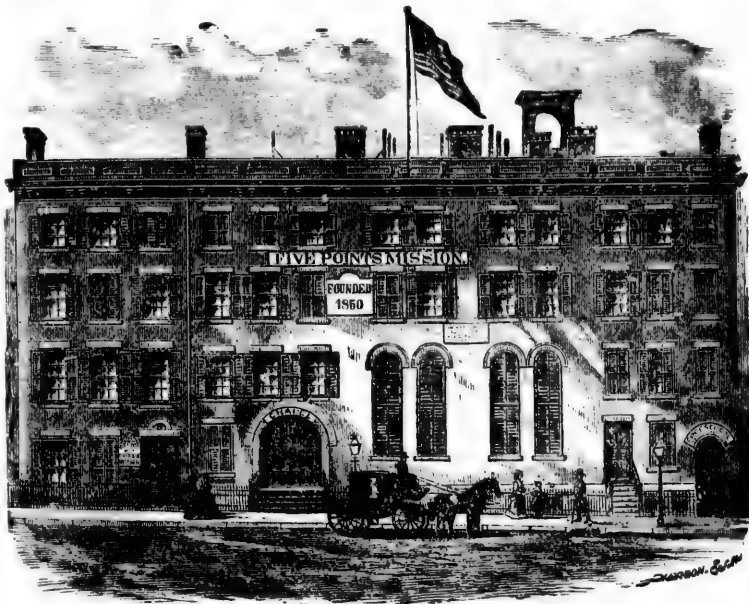
Baptist, also under guard, led in prayer. "At daylight I began to sing; hundreds soon joined with me and we made the plantation ring with the songs of Zion." An innkeeper, still in bed, heard the song and prayer, and came with tears begging him to preach. Lee stood on a bench near the colonel's tent and preached repentance. Officers, soldiers and people were in tears. The colonel talked with him about bearing arms. Lee was willing to drive the regimental baggage wagon and the colonel was satisfied. Four months the young preacher bore the life of the camp and the army, fared hard by marches, hunger and toil. To this was added for Lee the fierce profanity and rude manners of the soldiery. He was more chaplain than teamster, preaching and praying, attending them in sickness and suffering, and holding their burial services.

At length he came home, honorably discharged. In 1782, he was at the Annual Conference. Asbury asked him if he would take a circuit, but he shrank from it. "I am going to enlist Brother Lee," said Asbury to another. "What bounty do you give?" "Grace here and glory hereafter, if he is faithful." Lee hesitated, but was soon planting the good seed on a new—Camden—circuit, in North Carolina, where more than usual power attended his word.

He was rich in the qualities that serve in public address, and which nothing brings out and uses like the Gospel. On leaving his first circuit, he was obliged to stop speaking and mingle his tears with those of the people brought in under his ministry, who wept aloud at his departure.

Thus, during the eight years of war, great men came out to labor and great revivals took place. The chief prosperity was in the regions of which our Story has been telling. War is no "friend to grace," and not only law, but even the Gospel has small bearing in "the clash of arms." Church buildings fared hard. Few

were built and some were put to military uses. St. George's, in Philadelphia, became a riding-school for British cavalry, and the chapel in Trenton was occupied by troops. For seven years, from the battle of Long Island, 1776, to evacuation, 1783, no preacher was sent to John Street. Still, service was held there, and John Mann not only preached Sunday nights (the morning being given to the Hessians), but, by filling in his own person all its offices, saved the society, and at the close of the war reported sixty survivors of the two hundred at its beginning. Only one itinerant, Spraggs, of unpoetic name, crossed the Hudson during the war, and he, a royalist, fled there for refuge. Meanwhile Boardman's little society in Boston became extinct and none were left in New England.

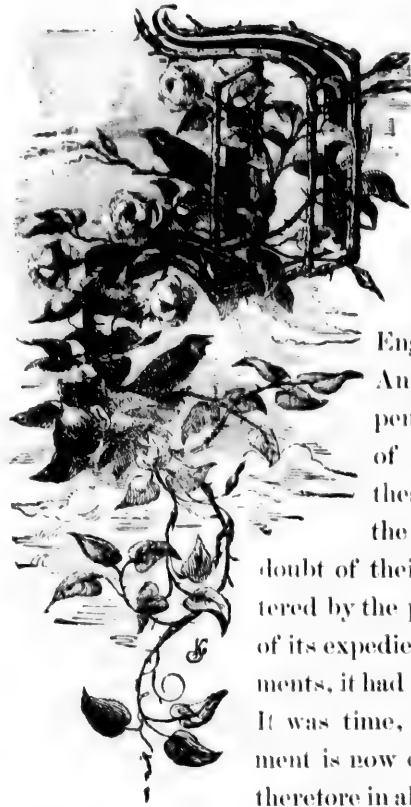


FIVE POINTS MISSION, NEW YORK.

Erected on site of "The Old Brewery," a haunt of murderers and robbers, by the Ladies' Home Missionary Society, January, 1853.

CHAPTER VI.

Forming a Church.



URING the remainder of this Story we must take less note of personal histories. The early heroes have now been presented and we must mark only the general movements. The question of the sacraments, which was serious in England, became more serious in America. The Methodists depended for these upon clergymen of the Church of England, and these, in the war, nearly forsook the country. Our people had no

doubt of their right to have these administered by the preachers; the only doubt was of its expediency. After several postponements, it had a hearing at Fluvanna in 1779. It was time, for "the Episcopal establishment is now dissolved in this country, and therefore in almost all our circuit

bers are without the ordinances." Four men were appointed a "Presbytery," to administer the ordinances themselves, and by laying on of hands to authorize to do the same "to those who are under our care and discipline." The proper persons to receive the ordinances were designated and the modes of procedure were de-

terminated. The "Presbytery" then solemnly ordained one another and such of the preachers as desired it. A preparatory Conference at Kent (Judge White's) had been held, at which seventeen had been present, which had voted against separation from the Church, and, of course, against anything leading to it, as this action about the sacraments straightly led. At Fluvanna, the Seventh American Conference, regularly appointed, twenty-seven were on the list and eighteen voted for the above measure. Those voting nay are not recorded. Asbury had not yet entered upon his office, for though the preparatory Conference had named him as superintendent, yet it was needed that the regular Conference confirm the nomination. The action at Fluvanna was therefore legal.

The brethren thus ordained administered the sacraments, it would seem, in few and extreme cases. They afterwards agreed, with those who dissented from such action, to refer the matter to Mr. Wesley, who replied that matters should remain as they were until farther notice. Soon, all was made good by Coke's arrival. There was, for a while, some fear that a division might follow, and when love and reason prevailed the feeling of relief was great indeed.

In 1780, we have glimpses of a high morality. The wives of itinerants were to have an allowance from the quarterage equal to that of their husbands. It was determined to "disapprove the practice of distilling grain into liquor and disown all who would not renounce it." Preachers holding slaves were to promise to set them free, and, seeing "that slavery is contrary to the laws of God, man and nature, we pass our disapprobation on all our friends who hold slaves, and advise their freedom." This was eight years after Mansfield's decision in England, and even before Wilberforce wrote his school-boy essay against slavery. It was the first public antislavery utterance.

The time was now drawing near for the Methodist Church to come into existence. In 1784 a preliminary Conference, as was several times done, was held in April, in Virginia, the chief session being opened May 25th, in Baltimore. The preachers were now eighty-four and the members were fourteen thousand nine hundred and eighty-eight, of whom about nine-tenths were south of Mason and Dixon's line. Among new circuits appears the Long Island, though Woolman Hicks brought Methodism into Brooklyn in 1787, by preaching on a table in front of the present Sands Street church, and forming a class in a cooper shop. The first obituary question, "Who have died this year?" is now put, and "Dead, on the field of honor," is answered for two, Wm. Wright and Henry Metcalf. Asbury's salary was fixed at sixty dollars and traveling expenses. His personal property was "one coat and waistcoat, half a dozen shirts, two horses and a few books."

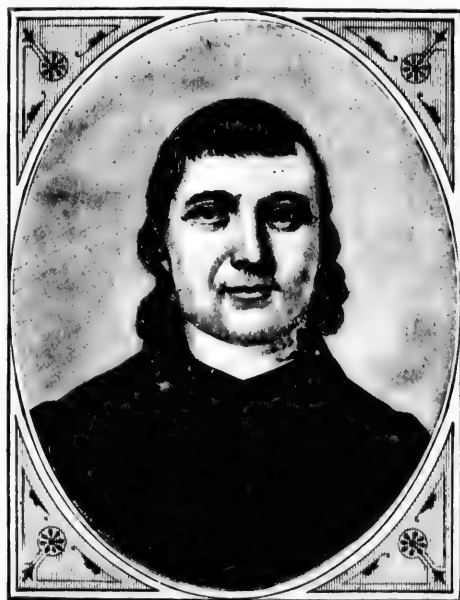
In 1768, John Jones, from Maryland, had followed on Braddock's path, and built his cabin on Redstone creek, which flows westward from the Alleghanies into the Monongahela. Robert Wooster, a local preacher, had followed in that region. This year, a Redstone circuit was formed and soon the oldest society west of the Alleghanies was formed at Uniontown. Just east of the mountains was formed a circuit on the Blue Juniata. In many such regions, local preachers migrating introduced Methodism. Under their labors, little classes were first formed, and then the itinerant created his circuit with its societies.

In this year, Wesley sent Thomas Coke with Thomas Vasey and Richard Whatecoat to take charge of the work in this country. Of Coke as an Englishman, and of his first meeting with Asbury, we have already spoken. He came as superintendent or Bishop, and the others were elders. The usage of the English Church was that at least two elders, or presbyters, join with the Bishop in the ordination service. Vasey had given up ease, wealth and family to

enter, in 1775, Wesley's itinerancy. He had been this year ordained by Wesley, but he was now re-ordained by Bishop White, of Philadelphia, of which Wesley seems to have taken no notice. On his return, after two years, to England, he served in the Church as a curate. This was agreeable to Wesley's policy of having in the parishes able Methodists, who, by serving the Methodists in the sacraments, might prevent them from desiring a separate

Church. Vasey soon came back to the itinerancy and served it, in one form or another, till his death, in 1826.

Whatecoat was a true member of the brotherhood of saints. His uniform behavior was "as if he saw Christ," and he was "as if sent to the Church to show to what a life of peace and holiness Christians may attain on earth." He was born in 1736, and piously trained by a godly mother. In 1758,



REV. RICHARD WHATECOAT.
Third Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

he was converted and, in 1761, was enabled to love God with all his heart. For some years he was leader in Wednesbury, where we saw those terrible mobs.

In 1769, when Boardman and Pilmoor came to America, he joined the Conference at Leeds. After great success and much suffering, he came, with prayer and fasting, to America to aid in organizing the Church. The material for the work had, as we have

seen, been strangely gathered. If we except that brief effort at Fluvanna, we may say that here were thousands of converts without baptism or the Lord's Supper, yet sincere, zealous and spiritual.

The English Church in America was now in ruins. Before the war, it had been absolute in Virginia; at the close, only a third of its strength remained and, from being the controlling Church, it was now able to obtain from the Legislature no favor beyond other Churches. During the war, in spite of it, the circuits had grown and the life and power of the revival, called Methodism, had affected wider and wider regions, as if it were to coincide with the extent of the new nation and be the National Church.

Wesley saw that something must be done. Such a body of Christians must have the sacraments and become a Church in form as it was already in fact. Unable to procure Bishops ordained by Anglican Bishops, the Bishop of London refusing, Wesley resolved to do as the ancient Alexandrian Church had done, to provide Bishops ordained by presbyters alone. He, himself, and others, as Coke, were regular presbyters of the Church of England. On September 1, 1784, he, with Coke and Creighton, ordained Whatcoat and Vasey as deacons and, the next day, as presbyters, then ordaining Coke as Bishop (or superintendent) of the Methodist societies in America. Coke was the first Protestant Bishop in America and his was the first Protestant Episcopal Church. Wesley prepared for this Church the Articles of Faith (omitting that on Predestination) and the Liturgy (abridged) so that the Methodist Episcopal is not wrongly called the eldest-born and lineal successor of the Church of England in America. That is not very important.

Wesley preferred Church government by Bishops, but he did not consider it so prescribed and ordered in Scripture, or that another form might not be as good, if one chose it. He believed

that Bishops and elders are in the New Testament the same, and that the unbroken succession of Bishops from the apostles is a fable.

The little band, freighted with such duty and authority, had a stormy passage of six weeks, sailing four thousand miles and landing at New York on the third of November. Stephen Sands first entertained them in generous style and John Dickins, preacher at John Street, gave them hearty welcome. He was the more delighted, learning their errand, to bring the sacraments to the societies. That evening, Coke preached, at John Street, his first American sermon. In Philadelphia, Jacob Baker opened his house for them.

On Sunday, Coke preached in the morning for Mr. Gaw at St. Paul's and in the evening at St. George's. Dr. White, afterwards Bishop of Pennsylvania, called on him the next day and invited him to his pulpit for the following Sunday. He was also presented to the Governor of the state, who knew Wesley and admired Fletcher.

Coke was favorably impressed by men and things in America. He stopped at Bassett's in Dover, and was soon at Barratt's chapel, "from the name of our friend who built it and who went to heaven a few days ago." In this chapel in the midst of a forest he had a noble congregation. "After the sermon a plain, robust man came up to me in the pulpit and kissed me." He saw this was Asbury. After the preaching came sacrament to five or six hundred and love-feast. "It was the best season I ever knew, except one at Charlemont in Ireland."

This was on November 14th. Young Garrettson was sent off, "like an arrow," to send and gather all the preachers at Baltimore on Christmas eve. For this interval, Asbury turned over to Coke Black Harry, his servant, got him "an excellent horse," and planned a trip of a thousand miles. "He and I have agreed to

use our joint endeavors to establish a school or college." As prompt in education as in preaching! Dickins, who met Coke at John Street, had already projected a college.

This Black Harry was called by Dr. Rush "the greatest orator in America." No matter for whom he was groom or driver, Asbury, Coke, Whatcoat or Garrettson, before the people he excelled them all. He was slight, utterly black, keen of eyes, quick of speech. If the eminent men above named were sick, the congregations were glad, if only Harry were there, and Asbury owns



BLACK "HARRY."

that they preferred Harry to himself. His popularity was a severe strain, and once he fell by wine, but, recovering, he was faithful to the end. Once, some who came to hear Asbury, but were forced by the crowd to listen outside, were delighted to hear such eloquence. "That is not the Bishop, but the Bishop's servant." They politely said: "If such be the servant, what must the master be!" Coke said, "I believe he is one of the best preachers in the world."

Coke was now preaching to crowds on the Peninsula, and bap-

tizing thousands, and giving the sacrament, of which there was, as we saw, great need. "I am charmed with the spirit of my American brethren." He saw in them courage and devotion. He admired American institutions and wished their prosperity, and, in turn, his ease and purity of speech, his air of culture and his simple humility were fully appreciated. On December 17th, all the new-comers met at Perry Hall, "the most elegant house in the state." They all gave thanks to God for the noble hospitality, the affluence and the true piety that ruled in all the mansion. Four days they now gave to the preparations needed for the important work just at hand.

On the day before Christmas, of 1784, at ten A.M., was opened the first General Conference, in Lovely Lane Chapel. It was called the Christmas Conference, because it continued through Christmas week. In six weeks, Garrettson had sped "like an arrow" twelve hundred miles (and, as he went, preaching), and gathered sixty preachers.

At first a letter was read from Wesley. It set forth his unwillingness to violate the order of the National Church, to which he belonged, and his conviction that in America no such order prevailed. He here invaded no Bishop's legal right by appointing and sending laborers. The brethren here were free from all entanglements of state and from the English Establishment. They could simply and freely follow the Scripture and the primitive Church.

"It was agreed to form ourselves into an Episcopal Church, and to have superintendents, elders and deacons," says Asbury. Whatcoat adds: "in which the Liturgy should be read and the sacraments be administered by a superintendent, elders and deacons, who shall be ordained by a presbytery, using the Episcopal form." Persons to be ordained were to be nominated by the superintendent elected by the Conference, and ordained by the imposition of the

hands of the superintendent and elders; the superintendent had a negative voice.

Asbury was elected, ordained deacon, then elder, and then consecrated as superintendent. In this last rite the good Otterbein assisted. Twelve were ordained deacons and then elders, and several were ordained deacons only. Time was given to discussing Rules of Discipline and a plan of Abingdon College. "Our Conference continued ten days. I admire the American preachers." He found them "holy, zealous and godly," such as could "carry the Gospel from sea to sea, and from one end of the continent to the other." The sixty were young—few would be called old men. The oldest, Dromgoole, had traveled ten years, and only fourteen had been in the work five years or over. Yet hard toil and hard fare had put a mark upon them. These fourteen, with the four from England, formed "the Senate" of the Conference, representing its years and experience and fixed character.

The work of these men was simple, clear and permanent. To compare their task with that of the men who then framed the Constitution of the United States might be unreasonable, for the undertaking of the latter was far more complex, but the Discipline, for wisdom and for effectual working, without need of amendment, may challenge the Constitution. The moral temper of the Conference was the key to their success, for truth and unselfish love of the general welfare illuminated all their thoughts and showed the way to their conclusions.

Two were ordained elders to labor in Nova Scotia, and one for Antigua. For the United States there were ten elders and three deacons, leaving about forty preachers unordained.

The doings of this Conference were published in 1785, and bound up with a Sunday Service and with Psalms and Hymns of Wesley's preparing. This Service contained a form of Public Prayer, the Ritual of Ordination and the Articles of Religion. This use of the Liturgy for form of public prayer has never been

repealed. It was kept for a few years in some societies, but it was found to be in the way of class meetings, love-feasts and the like, and so it fell away. It might be legally revived in any society, but there is small chance of that. When those who had been reared in the English Church came to be outnumbered by others, the Prayer Book, and with it the gowns and bands worn by elders, quietly fell into disuse. Wesley reduced to twenty-four the "Thirty-nine Articles" of the English Church. To these were added one "Concerning Christian Rulers." Methodists have now twenty-five presentations of Scripture doctrine, such as not every member would have leisure to gather for himself, "as guides through the voyage of Christian inquiry."

The Conference declared its purpose of allegiance to Wesley, during his life, as his sons in the Gospel, obeying him in all matters of Church government. It also pledged itself, as far as the interests of religion and the welfare of the United States would allow, to keep union with the Methodists of the Old World.

Measures were taken for the extirpation of slavery, and the ugly subject was plainly handled. Every member was to emancipate his slaves within twelve months, where the state law allowed, and was not to be admitted to the Lord's Supper until he had so done. Unless he did this in the said time he was excluded from the Church. Buying, selling, or giving away slaves was to be followed by expulsion. These rules were far in advance of the time, and it took eighty years to bring all Methodism to riddance of slavery. Yet, though hotly opposed, and suspended in six months, they caused some emancipations and fixed the true and lasting temper of the Church.

The duties of preachers were fixed about as they now are. To each preacher was allowed sixty-four dollars yearly, and the same to his wife, with sixteen dollars to each child under six, and twenty-two to each under eleven. This allowance for children was in

two years repealed, but, in 1800, provision for them was again made. The Conference refused themselves all fees, presents and perquisites at weddings, baptisms and burials. Afterwards they accepted these and charged them in the "allowance." Each preacher paid two dollars yearly to a "Relief Fund" for extreme and necessitous cases, and widows and orphans. Never did any body of men more sternly renounce worldly good and take vows of poverty and toil more truly than these preachers. Their unworldliness and their devotion to life's great, unseen realities was not paraded before men, but no man was so blind as not to see it, and it was a source of their power. Preachers now, after a hundred years, are faring better, yet many a struggling itinerant, in fields still severe, comforts himself with the example of these early men, who through faith and patience gained their victories.

A General Fund, chiefly for the expenses of men in fields new or remote, was to be raised by yearly or quarterly collections.

The attitude in taking the Lord's Supper and the mode of baptism were left to the choice of the candidate. Neglect of class meeting and "marrying unawakened persons" were grounds of exclusion. This latter act was afterwards to be only "discouraged."



FORTY FORT CHURCH, NEAR SCENE OF WYOMING MASSACRE, KINGSTON, PA.

CHAPTER VII.

Doctrines and Institutes.



RULES adopted by the Christmas Conference were, by their nature, open to change or repeal. In telling now of the doctrines and institutes of American Methodism, we come to things permanent. In all branchings of the original Church these have remained the same. The accepted doctrines agree with those of the great bodies of Christians from the beginning. We reject Predestination and a Limited Atonement; we hold the mode of baptism to be optional; we reject Purgatory and Prayer to Saints, the Apostolic Succession and the Descent of Christ into Hell. Beyond these, there is a body of doctrine, ample for guidance of faith and conduct, on which all modern Churches agree. It is not badly given in the Apostles'

Creed, that compendium now sixteen hundred years old, in which all Christian Churches agree.

Baptism is with Methodists a sign, not a cause of justification, and is administered to infants because, as such, they are of the kingdom of heaven. Sin, after this, may yet admit of the grace of repentance and find pardon.

It is notable that two doctrines most earnestly preached by Wesley and still prominent among all Methodists do not appear in the Articles. These are the Witness of the Spirit and Christian

Perfection. The reason is that these are matters less of doctrinal statement than of *experience*. It is not possible to solidify experience into doctrine, as has been shown by many a weary discussion especially of this matter of Perfection. The satisfactory nature of the utmost divine working in a human soul is a glorious fact, attested by many a full experience, but nothing of the kind is made a condition of membership, and of t' a ministry is required only a confident, earnest desire. Nor do the Methodist Articles state that all men may be saved. With the preachers, that went without formal saying. They saw it daily proven. Formulated doctrine is not quite "the skin of truth dried, stuffed and hung up," but vital experience preserves even unstated doctrine and a degree of religious truth unstatable as doctrine. A Methodist may hold his creed and yet be a meager Christian, as a man may keep inside of statute law, and yet be a meager citizen.

Methodist Arminianism was long misunderstood by the Calvinist of New England. These thought that it denied the sovereignty of God and the need of His gracious aid in repentance and all good works. It only teaches that enough grace is given to all men to make them responsible and guilty, more or less, if they are not saved. Professor Stuart, of Andover, himself a Calvinist, nobly showed his people their error of judgment in the matter and the question of Calvinism has now, for years, slept in this country the sleep from which few would wake it.

"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirits that we are the children of God." On that rests the unwritten Methodist doctrine of Assurance. This inward feeling of harmony with God, which Assurance means, so that one knows the comfort of His peace, has been held from the beginning of Christianity. "We know" did not begin to be said by Wesley. The soul is conscious of its own state, and, if light from above enters it, the glow is unmistakable, more than even any outward vision.

"Perfection" is a word awkward to use amid human infirmities, as it seems to imply no farther progress possible. It is not so in other connections. A *perfect* shrub is not one incapable of farther growth; it is the one best fitted to grow and unfold into a tree, and such is Christian Perfection as it is produced by the cleansing, disinfecting work of the Holy Ghost in hearts surrendered, and desirous, that it is often called Sanctification.



ARMINIUS.

In nothing has the influence of Methodism upon other Christian bodies been more salutary than in heartening them to strive for 'the region fair' of perfect love and holiness.

It has already been noted that the unwritten creed of Methodism

constitutes in all the world the bulk of its preaching, and chiefly inspires its zeal, effort and experience. For admission to Methodist societies only one thing is required; "not name or sign or ritual creed," but simply a desire to flee from the wrath to come, and to be saved from sin. "'Is a man a believer in Jesus Christ, and is his life suitable to his profession?' is my sole inquiry." "I have no more right to object to a man for holding a different opinion from me than I have to differ with a man because he wears a wig and I wear my own hair." The Methodist church in America is just as liberal. It does not ask what a man thinks. "But, if he takes off his wig and begins to shake the powder about my eyes, I shall consider it my duty to get rid of him as soon as possible." Who would not? No member can be expelled for opinion. There must be, as in civil law, "an overt act," misdoing "sufficient to exclude one from the kingdom of grace and of glory."

There were now recognized three Conferences, the General, the Annual and the Quarterly. In the General Conference all the Annual Conferences were at first assembled. Such was this Christmas Conference. Three such were afterwards held, in 1792, 1796 and 1808. In 1812 it became a Conference of Delegates, the number of preachers having become too large for meeting in mass. The Annual was, up to 1812, the chief Church convention, and it has not lost its interest and importance. It is now mainly what it was at the beginning. It is an impressive and usually a joyous occasion, the ministerial feast of the year. The presiding Bishop conducts business by a series of fixed questions, but the routine is enlivened by exuberant spirits, venting themselves in a thousand ways within the limits of decorum. It is the one vacation week of hospitality, brotherhood and prayer. Every preacher has his tale to tell his brethren; laymen renew acquaintance with old pastors and plan for future ones; the wives of the preachers have some days of relief and revival, and the sun looks down on no oc-

casions more entertaining. At first, the Bishop alone considered the men and the field, and made out the appointments. No preacher knew his destiny until the Bishop read the list at the close of the Conference. The reading was usually taken as the speaking of Divine Providence, and soon after the parting benediction the preachers, with strong heart and hope, were on their way to their new posts of service.

Many now living will remember when the meeting of the Quarterly Conference was a great occasion. It has always been known as the Quarterly meeting. This Conference was made up of all who held office in the circuit and had charge of all local interests, as chapels, finances of local preachers and exhorters, of trial of appeals and presentation of candidates for the itinerancy. This business was soon done and then came love-feasts, sacraments, prayer-meetings and sermons. From miles away, Methodist families were in attendance and there was amplest hospitality. Prayer and praise, revival and rejoicing filled two days or more, and people came to know and love each other. The unity of the Church, already begun by the wide acquaintance of the preachers, was promoted by the old-time Quarterly meetings. In later days, they have, by increase of population and the system of stations, lost much of their early character; but other gatherings, as camp-meetings, institutes and the like, do, in place of these, a somewhat similar work.

At the formation of our Church there were, in all, one hundred and four preachers, of whom twenty-four were ordained. These are soon called elders and deacons, and the words "assistant" and "helpers" disappear. The Bishop was commander, almost dictator. His sway was such as could be safely trusted only to a wise and good man, for it was tempered only by expulsion. To this he was more liable than any of his brethren, for he alone could be expelled for "improper conduct," without crime. He was paid

no higher than his brethren, and in the intervals of Conference must "travel at large," which Asbury and his successors have done, indeed, at very large.

The "assistant" was soon called the "preacher in charge." His duties and those, in fact, of his helper, were about the same as we noted in the Wesleyan system in England. They were to enforce the rules. In those for dram drinking, etc., Wesley's rule about tobacco has never appeared; perhaps because Asbury and many preachers used it, as do some of their successors unto this day. The rule of Wesley about preaching at five in the morning never worked in this country. It was soon qualified by "where he can get hearers!" Then it vanished altogether. The regimen of Wesley was hard, but it was almost in its entirety adopted in America. There it stands, facing the preacher and, if later virtue has not been able to attain unto it, still its influence has been monitory and beneficial.

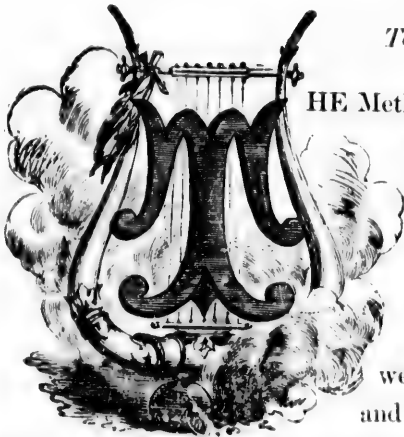
The new Church was now upon its career. Its footing was sure. It was crowding no other aside. There was room enough in the spaces of our continent for all existing Churches, and part of its errand was to revive these and cheer them to their own work. It had also its own task and we proceed to tell how it has been doing that.



AN AFTERNOON AT CHAUTAUQUA.

CHAPTER VIII.

To the End of the Century.



THE Methodist Episcopal Church began with eighteen thousand members, one hundred and four itinerants and some hundreds of local preachers and exhorters. The attendants on its services, besides its members, were about two hundred thousand, and these were the more from there being in Delaware, Maryland and Virginia almost no other ministry. There were sixty chapels in regular use, "none of them frescoed, yet the mystic shekinah, the glory, was manifested in them." There were no Methodists in New England, but, from New York to Georgia and to a point near Pittsburgh, the preachers were calling the people to the Saviour. Over all these regions no voice protested against the new organization. Its servants had enough to do, for hundreds, on a single occasion, would come for baptism and the sacrament was crowded. Some Churchmen were no longer seen at the meetings and the good Jarratt, though he did not break with Asbury, had no liking for the new arrangement. Still all the preachers felt the life of the epoch and entered with ardor upon its conquests.

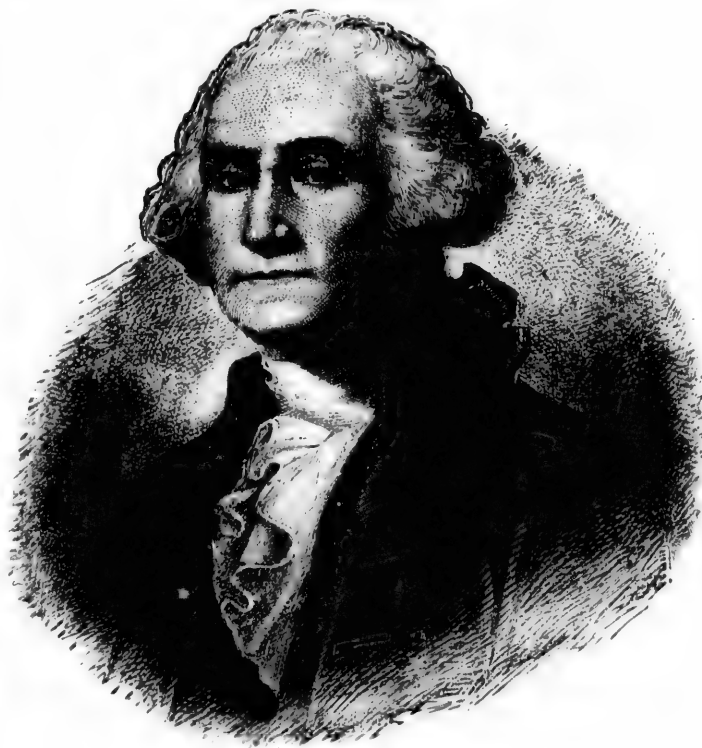
Coke's first "order" was for gathering material to build a school at Abingdon, Md. He then went north, begging for his mission in Nova Scotia. He returned to Baltimore, where the chapel of the

Christmas Conference was now sold and Light Street church begun. Going southward, he had a taste of the perils of the wilderness, for he came near drowning in a swollen stream, across which he had to swim his horse. Wet and shivering, he reached a house whose master and mistress were absent. "The principal negro lent me an old ragged shirt, coat, vest, breeches, etc., and the negroes made a large fire and hung my clothes up to dry all night."

At Roanoke, he found Jarratt, who condemned the Rule on Slavery. "The secret is, he has twenty-four slaves of his own." Soon, Coke had a taste of persecution. He fearlessly denounced slave-holding. As he did this, many "of the unawakened" left the barn where he was preaching and got ready to flog him as he came out. A lady offered them fifty pounds if they would "give that little doctor a hundred lashes." On the "doctor's" coming out, "Brother Martin," a magistrate, seized one of them. Colonel Taylor, "a fine, strong man, only half awakened," assumed a fighting attitude and the crowd fell away. Brother Martin set free fifteen slaves; Norton eight slaves, and Ragland one. Brother Kennon set free twenty-two, worth two hundred dollars apiece. Coming into North Carolina, Coke was silent on slavery, for the laws forbade emancipation.

The first North Carolina Conference was now held, and a petition for the right of emancipation, to which Asbury had gained the Governor, was addressed to the General Assembly. Returning to Virginia, Coke resumed his urging of the Slavery Rule and arranged for every preacher to circulate a petition to the General Assembly of Virginia, praying for immediate or gradual emancipation. The subject had already been under debate, and Coke was sure that the freeholders signing would not be few. Going westward, he dined by appointment with a "plain country gentleman," George Washington, who now had his first contact with

Methodism. "He received us very politely." After dinner, Coke presented the Emancipation petition, entreating his signature if in his high place he felt free to sign any petition.



George Washington

Washington assured Coke that he held Coke's views and had stated them to leading statesmen. He declined to sign the peti-

tion, but promised to write to the Assembly, if the matter came to a hearing. It is affecting to think how different might have been the reading of our national history had these views of Washington, Coke and the Conference so prevailed as to change the course of the nation on slavery in the day of small things, when "An ox might drink the infant Hudson dry." After a few weeks, the Rule on Slavery was suspended at Baltimore, and never again enforced. From that Baltimore Conference, which adjourned January 3, 1785, Coke sailed to Europe.

Asbury, of course, had not been idle ; he had for four months averaged thirty miles a day, with daily services of every sort. Lee and Willis went with him to Charleston, and at this southernmost point they staid two weeks. They preached every day ; their host was converted, and a society formed, which Willis staid to serve.

On Sunday, June 5, 1785, he laid at Abingdon, twenty-five miles from Baltimore, the corner-stone of Cokesbury College, the first of Methodist institutions in this country, the leader of a long train of nearly a hundred and fifty now, the Methodist Episcopal Church having built, since that day, more than one a year. Five thousand dollars had been raised for the work. From its commanding site, one looks up the valley of the Susquehanna, and down over the Bay to the ocean. Asbury felt the nature of the occasion. "The sayings which we have heard and known and which our fathers have told us, we will not hide them from our children," was his text, and he spoke as if he foresaw the noble schools of every branch of learning, the glory and strength of his people, of which this school was the pioneer, as he was himself the pioneer of a goodly fellowship of Bishops in the hereafter. The building four years later was not quite complete, but thirty students were there, and a preparatory school of fifteen had been three years in progress, in whose examination Asbury took the deepest interest. Already a collegiate town was building around it. Here

met, in 1786, the Baltimore Conference. Its professors were also preachers, and at times great religious interest prevailed among the students.

In 1792, it had over seventy students, pursuing, with English branches, the chief languages, ancient and modern, as well as giving attention to "agriculture and architecture." A high moral character and purpose was required for admission, and morals and religion received careful attention. The sons of traveling preachers were boarded, clothed and taught gratis, as were orphans. The regimen was interesting. None were to study after seven in the evening, or to be out of bed after nine, or to be in bed after five of the morning, and there was to be no feather-bed. There were to be seven hours of study, with abundance of recreation in and out-of-doors. For ten years it did well its work, and then, at midnight, December 7, 1795, it burned down. It had cost fifty thousand dollars. Asbury shed no tears that his name and Coke's—Cokesbury—thus went to ashes. "If any man should give me fifty thousand dollars per year to do and suffer again what I have done for that house, I would not do it." He regretted the loss of the library, but he thought that neither Whitfield nor the Methodists were called to build "colleges." He wanted a simple school. The Cokesbury disaster did not complete the Methodist collegiate enterprises.

Coke left England for Nova Scotia September 24, 1786. He did not reach the haven whither he would be, but he fared strangely better. In mid-ocean the ship sprung a leak; then came a hurricane, and all the terrors which they see who do business in the great waters. "They cry unto the Lord and He delivereth them out of their distresses." Candles and food were failing when the full beauty of a tropic island, with its birds and palms and sunshine, opened before them on the Christmas morning, and instead of Nova Scotia they were at Antigua. Our readers will recall the

work of Gilbert and the missionaries in the island that furnished the first African Methodist.

Coke's coming was of course a comfort and a blessing. Reaching Charleston, he was amazed to find that a society of forty members had built a church worth five thousand dollars. He and Asbury dedicated it, and held in it the first South Carolina Conference, for it held fifteen hundred hearers. Coke loved the southern people. "Great has been the work of God in this state and Georgia."

The two Bishops set out to ride through the continent and in a week they had made three hundred miles, preaching every day. Thick forests, frightful swamps, bad roads! "The preachers here ride a hundred miles a week through morasses tremendous." He fairly delights in it! Preaching in the midst of great forests, with hundreds of horses tied to the trees, he finds truly romantic, and he is surprised at the progress of Methodism. On Pedee circuit, two years before, there were but twenty in the society; now there were eight hundred and twenty-three members. In this year, two and twenty preaching-houses had been built on this circuit. In Mecklenburgh county he found the largest congregation he had seen in America, four thousand, and at a Conference in the mighty forest was a great, joyous gathering. Here came word from Kentucky, near the mouth of the Ohio, of an awakening under an elder, who had been sent there, Haw, the first to enter that wild. He wanted help, and a young man, Williamson, volunteered for the wilderness.

A Conference had been set for Abingdon, July 24th. Coke had changed it to Baltimore, May 1st, and the change seemed arbitrary and unpleasant, but harmony prevailed. Six thousand and six hundred had been added to the societies within a year. Coke then went back to England.

Asbury resumed his immense travels and was soon in Charleston, where he was mobbed while preaching in the new church; and "I

had more liberty to preach here than I have ever had before." At his first Conference in Georgia, at the Forks of Broad River, he noted that many who had no religion in Virginia found it on migrating to Georgia and South Carolina. And now he crosses the mountain barrier to the northwest and enters Tennessee. His journey to the edge of the Mississippi valley was "awful." The first Conference in Tennessee, at Keyswoods, was amid many discomforts, but it was like taking formal possession of a rich and boundless land. Some from Kentucky were there, and Methodism was inaugurated into the heart of the continent. Asbury made his way back, preaching in the settlements, and went to Pennsylvania. His journals tell a story of hardship among the Alleghanies. "O how glad should I be of a plain, clean plank; the beds are in a bad state and the floors are worse! The gnats are as troublesome here as the mosquitoes in the lowlands of the sea-board. Many of the people are of the boldest cast of adventurers, and the decencies of life are scarcely regarded. Savage warfare teaches them to be cruel, and Antinomian preaching (faith without works) poisons their morality." The region, now part of West Virginia, is not yet in the front of civilization. At Uniontown occurred the first ordination west of the Alleghanies, that of Michael Leard. Asbury officiated in clerical gown and band, as did Whatecoat, who assisted him.

In February, 1788, Coke returned and found Asbury in Georgia, and shared with him the trials of Episcopal fare. In the back parts of Georgia they often ate nothing from seven in the morning to six in the evening, and then "bacon, eggs and Indian corn." "The great revival, the great rapidity of the work and the consolations of God's Spirit" more than balanced all. The noble forests, the wild deer, and the charms of broad, free nature, delighted Coke. They found in Georgia two thousand and eleven members. "Our principal friends" were ready to give two thousand acres of

land for a college and "we agreed to build one." "Coke wants colleges," quoth Asbury. A like offer soon came from Kentucky. "If they will give five thousand acres of good land we will complete a college in ten years." So education is kept in remembrance.

The first Conference in New Jersey was held at Trenton, 1788. There had been a decrease, almost the first one in this country. Coke did not grieve, for he thought it at least a proof of sound discipline. Soon there was a Conference at New York, where Garrettson, who had a talent for opening new places, reports the work carried to Lake Champlain, to most of the New England states and to "the little state of Vermont." The numbers in the state of New York were six thousand one hundred and eleven, and in the United States forty-three thousand two hundred and sixty-five, being thirty-five thousand and twenty-one whites, eight thousand two hundred and forty-one blacks and three Indians. Who these three were does not appear.

The "printing business" had now been "settled"—i. e, the Book Concern was founded, which we saw begun in the person of one man. Its profits were in part to help the Cokesbury College and in part to plant Indian Missions.

The itinerant life on the frontier may be illustrated by the use of split bushes. The preacher at cross paths in the forests split two or three bushes along the path leading to the appointment, and this guided his successor. Mischievous fellows, learning the secret, sometimes used it to mislead him.

Coke, returning from England, met Asbury in Charleston the day that Wesley died, March 2d, 1791. The departure of "the most influential mind of the century" was duly mourned. Asbury was no unworthy follower of Wesley. "I have served the church over twenty-five years. I have gained two old horses, my companions seven thousand miles a year. My clothing is the

same as at the first, neither have I silver, gold or any other property." Yet he was charged with ambition to become an Archbishop or a Pope!

Lee now invaded New England. Preaching in South Carolina, he met at Cheraw a New England merchant, conversation with whom impressed Lee's mind with the duty of entering the East. This he could not at once do, and, meanwhile, Methodism had entered "the little state of Vermont," and a class of two or three had been formed at Stratford.

Now, Lee strikes out for Boston, and July, 1790, is the epoch of Methodism in New England. It was just thirty years after its arrival in the Western Hemisphere with Mr. Gilbert at Antigua.

Lee, in the late afternoon, stood on a table under the Elm, long venerated, now gone, and began services alone. His singing drew four hearers, and when he had ended prayer people in evening leisure were gathering around. He soon had three thousand hearers and his word was with power. The sons of the Pilgrims, used to dry discourse, were taken by surprise. Many wept; some thought of Whitefield, some went to hear him again, and "could follow him to the ends of the earth." Methodism had now reached Nova Scotia and Canada, Georgia and the mouth of the Ohio, and, five years after, Lee's impression was just entering New England. If there was any region where it was *not* wanted it was this. Yet here it was wanted. The old order was declining in both doctrine and experience. The Churches were becoming fewer. Infidelity was ripe, and the Unitarian movement was about to carry away a large proportion of the parishes. There was need of Methodism, and, though the Methodist Church, after near a century of struggling growth, has only now come to full prosperity, it has all the time proved its mission of diffusing newness of life through other Churches. It has saved religion in New

England, when rank heresies were well-nigh crowding it from the soil.

For the first year Lee was alone. Before coming to Boston, he had begun his work in Norwalk under an apple tree by the roadside, after all houses had been refused him. He had twenty hearers. He was the first appointed preacher and this was his first sermon. He was glad of the tree. "Who knows but I shall yet have a place in this town where I may lay my head!"

He went to Fairfield, and, in the town-house, his soul flaming with plans and ambitions, he had the school-master and three or four women, and at last thirty. "My soul was happy" in this day of small things. At New Haven, the president of Yale came to hear him. This man, good Dr. Stiles, predicted that in this country, after a hundred years, the religious population would be mainly Congregational and Episcopal, some Baptist and "perhaps a few Wesleyans!" Had he lived he might have seen the "Wesleyans" more than both his first-named and have worshiped with them in their noble and thronged New Haven houses.

Soon after, he again preached in this "Athens," in a Congregational chapel. Two clergymen, Austin and Edwards, came to hear, but no man asked the preacher home. He, at the tavern, found comfort in prayer when "David Becher came" and was Lee's host thereafter. At Greenfield and Stratfield, Lee was shunned, and at Milford preached three times without being asked to dinner, or making any acquaintance. The Christians of the region were frigid enough. Then he went to Rhode Island, where he liked the open-communion Baptists, and opened the way for preachers who should follow him. Coming back he formed a circuit—the first in New England—with Stratford as center, where also was held the first New England class meeting, of three women, though a few Methodists had come to Stamford and Sharon. These three women at Stratfield were the first Methodist Church

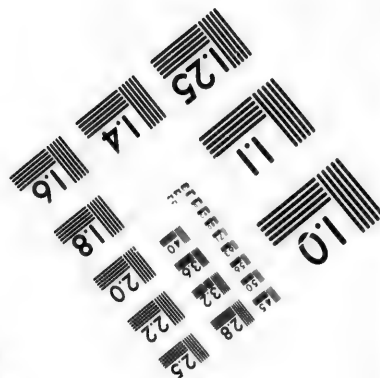
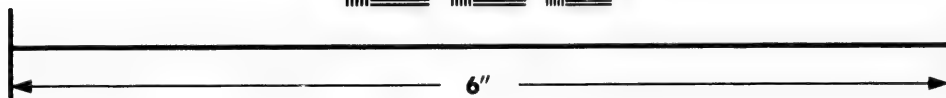
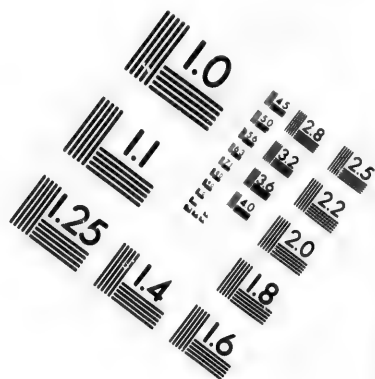
in New England. They remind us of Barbara Heck, of Lydia, the first European Christian, and they were the fruit of Lee's three months' labor, not a showy result, but Lee was more than ever sure that Methodism was needed in New England.

After seven months he had five members—one man only, Aaron Sanford, in whose line came to this day many preachers and laymen. Lee was annoyed in a thousand ways by the "Standing Order." Counting him "unlearned," they tried him with Greek; he would answer in Dutch, which they revered, taking it for Hebrew!

Nathan Bangs, the greatest of itinerants after Asbury, was now a lad of twelve in these parts. His father, a sturdy blacksmith, forbade his hearing Lee, but his young heart was hot and restless from what he learned. Clearly, Lee was affecting widely the staid old atmosphere. Soon, three preachers came to his help and, in 1790, four preachers and eight members were the New England Methodist Church. A volume might be written of their exploits. May 10th, Lee "invaded" Middletown to preach the first Methodist sermon where has long been the first and best of our colleges, the Wesleyan University. Going towards Boston, he, with surprise and delight, met, ten miles east of Providence, Garrettson and Black Harry, returning from Boston after their mission to Nova Scotia. He had, unknown to Lee, made an excursion from New York through Hartford, where his meetings were broken up by a mob, "even those who are called the gentry."

Lee could find in Boston no place but the one used the year before under the Elm, but he had three thousand hearers. At Newburyport, "Rev. Mr. Murray" refused Lee his pulpit, on the ground of his "unpardonable sin of preaching four times in one day!" but Lee got in a sermon at the court-house at six in the morning. His next congregation under the Elm was five thousand.

After facing hindrances and hardships heroically for sixteen



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

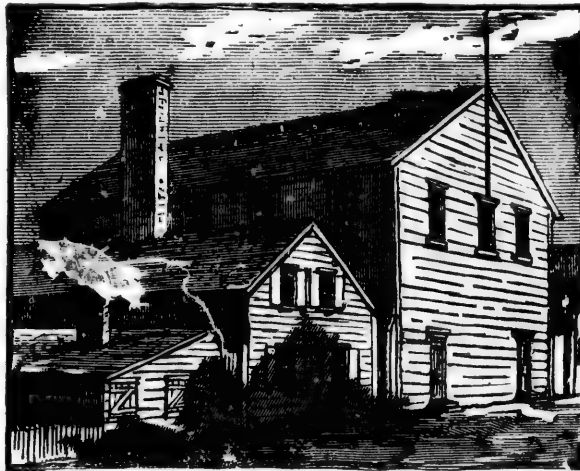


months, Lee reported at the New York Conference two hundred members and two chapels, one, "Lee's Chapel," in Stratfield, the first in New England. Asbury heard with delight Lee's story. One district of five circuits and seven preachers was put on the scheme for New England and Lee was sent to Boston. On his return thither he was ignored in a chilly manner. He could only say, "Lord, help me!" The Elm would hardly do in the end of November and no other place could be had, even after four weeks' effort. He had been invited to Lynn. There he was warmly welcomed by Benjamin Johnson, had a good hearing and spoke with a glad heart. Once more he tried Boston and, amid neglect, insults and destitution, he touched some hearts, and Boston began to be saved. At Lynn, February 20, 1791, he formed of eight persons his first Massachusetts society and, June 26th, dedicated there the first chapel. At the Conference then held in New York, four hundred and eighty-one members were reported in New England. The Church was now fairly planted, to struggle, to abide, to flourish. It had three chapels. Lee was made presiding elder of New England and Canada! "Forward with fresh strength and courage!" said the hero. He was traveling five hundred miles and preaching forty times a month.

Asbury now enters the region to second with his own vast energies his loved lieutenant. At New Haven, Dr. Stiles and others came to hear him preach—in other respects he was "a stranger"—never inviting him near the college. "I will requite their behavior by treating them as friends, brethren and gentlemen." At Middletown, he preached in the Congregational church, but had to go a mile out of town to lodge. He thought that, of old, the poor were the most blest in the preaching. At the poor-house in that city there was, fifty years later, a good woman, converted by this preaching of Asbury's and still owning a Testament bearing his autograph.

He went to Boston and preached at "Murray's Church" to twenty people. "I have done with Boston for the present. At 'wicked Charleston,' S. C., I was kindly invited by many ; here, by none." "The Methodists have no house, but their time may come." *It has* come, and if he can look from on high upon fifteen churches, one the largest in the city, and upon the University and all the belongings of his Church in Boston, he will know it has come !

At Lynn he was delighted. "Here we will make a firm stand and



FIRST METHODIST PREACHING HOUSE IN BOSTON, MASS.

the light shall radiate through the state." He staid there ten days, equal to ten years of some men. Here, in August, 1792, was held the first Conference in New England, of Asbury and eight preachers, foremost of these the heroic Lee. In July of this year, a small class of poor people was formed in Boston. They could easily get a place for meeting, and it was not until 1795 that the first Boston chapel was founded.

Meanwhile, events were elsewhere in progress. In 1786, the title "Bishop" first appears as a form of address. In 1789, John

Dickins lent the Church six hundred dollars, and on this capital he began the Book Concern in Philadelphia. His first publication was Wesley's Thomas á Kempis' "Imitation of Christ"; then came the Discipline, the Hymn Book, a reprint of the *Arminian Magazine*. So began the immense "Concern" that to-day employs the best brain of the Church. In 1789, Asbury and the other Bishops presented to George Washington, just inaugurated as President, an address, assuring to him and to the Constitution the loyalty of the M. E. Church. He received it and replied with great courtesy, assuring them of his favor as a patron of vital religion, of his prayers for them and his desire for their prayers in his own behalf. Other Churches were a little vexed that the Methodists should be the first in an exercise so fitting and patriotic.

In 1790 was formed the first Sunday-school in America. This was nine years after, as our Story tells, Mrs. Bradburn had suggested one to Mr. Raikes. The Conference now first gave order on the matter, though really the first Sunday-school in this country was started by Asbury in Virginia four years earlier. Thus this is historically a Methodist idea in both worlds, the old and the new, and it is one so satisfying a felt want that now hardly a Church organization in the land is without it. We may fairly name it as part of the good which Methodism developed for mankind. In the Church that originated it, the growth of the Sunday-school has kept pace with the general growth and is to-day gigantic.

When the General Conference met, in 1792, Methodism had been well planted. By Lee's invasion of Maine it now held the coast from Nova Scotia to Florida, and had gone to the western frontier. This had been done by men, of whom Coke alone was learned, who, in toil, poverty and hardship, but in the spirit and power of the apostles, had given their lives to the work. They reported now sixty-six thousand members and two hundred and sixty-six preach-

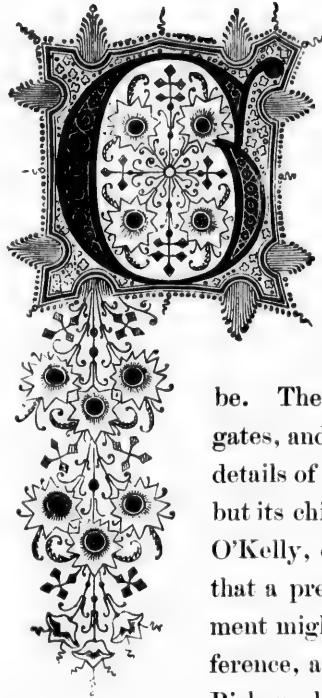
ers. But how much this success had cost! One-third of the preachers died before they were thirty years old and two-thirds died before they had traveled twelve years. Hard work and fare! Our Story will hereafter be less personal. Great men, as well as great events, will come before us, but our Story is not to be a history.



VIEW ON CHAUTAUQUA LAKE.

CHAPTER IX.

Schisms—Eminent Characters.



OKE now came over to hold a General Conference in Baltimore. He worked while at sea on a Commentary, cheered by six canaries that sang in his cabin. After his years of toil and expenditure, he writes: "I am forty-five. I have done nothing." Preachers from all circuits in the nation were there, but Lee sees that this cannot always

be. The Conference must be formed of delegates, and so, after sixteen years; it was. Many details of rule were perfected in this Conference, but its chief concern was a motion introduced by O'Kelly, one of its oldest members, providing that a preacher discontented with his appointment might appeal from the Bishop to the Conference, and, if the Conference sustain him, the Bishop should give him another appointment.

It was equal to a declaration of distrust of Asbury, and it called forth an eloquent and affecting debate, and developed a high order of deliberative talent. The question after a while took this form: 1. "Shall the Bishop appoint the preachers?" 2. "Shall the preacher be allowed an appeal?" On the first there was no vote in the negative. The second was, after a long debate, decided negatively. Ware, an able and prominent preacher, thought it might have been

carried, but for the bad temper of its advocates. One must see that at a Conference one man's successful appeal and change might, by displacing another, call out a new appeal, and so on, and the Conference might sit all the year. The morning after the vote, O'Kelly and his friends, against much entreaty, withdrew from the Conference.

This was the first secession. O'Kelly was said to deny the doctrine of the Trinity, but that never appeared in the debate. The question was: "Should the itinerancy retain its military character, the preachers being free to enter or leave it?" This question was now effectually settled. O'Kelly was an able, fearless Irishman, who had toiled and suffered equally with the best, and in Virginia and Carolina his influence was great. He now went to that region to frame a new Church, and many, even McKendree, afterwards Bishop, were in sympathy with him. He went on forming societies, to which he gave the taking name of "Republican Methodists," getting the term from the political party opposed to a strong central government. Trouble came on. Preachers and members were drawn off and embittered, and all the evil fruits appeared that are wont to appear when politics overwhelm piety. At a Conference of the disaffected, in 1793, O'Kelly renounced all Church government, except as each man might find it for himself in the New Testament, ordained his own preachers, and took the modest name of "The Christian Church." His organism soon went to pieces and his followers were few, but he clamored stoutly against "despotism" until his death, at ninety-two. So intense was the spirit and so stern the rule in the Methodist body that it is simply wonderful that our human nature worked in it so well and quietly. The victories that rewarded the toil and discipline, as in armies, were a constant solace and encouragement. A smaller schism, apparently from only personal ambition, was made by one Hammett in Charleston. He was eloquent and popular, and

his followers built him in the city a very fine church. He denounced Asbury and Coke as tyrants, but he made out no case, and his Church died with him.

Asbury went now twelve miles from Savannah to see the ruins of Whitefield's Orphan House. He thought of the money and labor here spent, "now all swallowed up," and was sad. He then thought how this enterprise had caused its founder to come seven times to America and what blessings those visits had brought and how he was entered into Whitefield's labors in the world that the great preacher had quickened, and gratitude filled his heart.

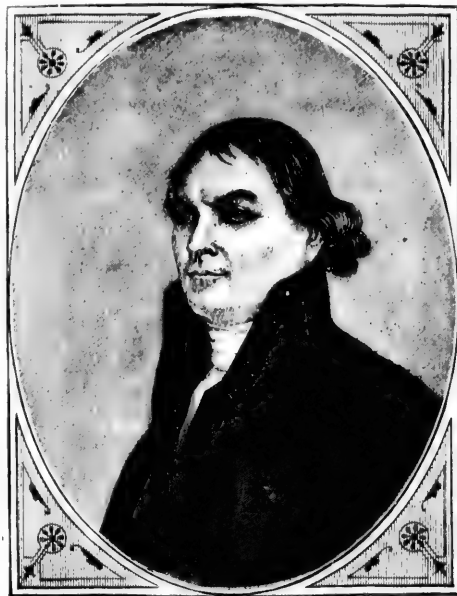
After a wearying trip through the southwest, we find him resting for two days at the home of Mrs. General Russell, in eastern Kentucky, whose husband, an officer in the Revolution, had been a faithful Methodist. Mrs. Russell was a sister of Patrick Henry, and eloquent in meetings as he in the forum or Senate. Her grandson, Wm. C. Preston, was U. S. Senator from South Carolina. He rides a thousand miles in three months. Near the Catawba, he writes: "Swamps, cold, rains and starvation. After a ride of twenty-seven miles, without eating, how good were the potatoes and fried graham! If a man-of-war is a floating hell, these rice plantations are standing ones—wicked masters, overseers and negroes; cursing, drinking, no Sabbaths, no sermons!" Three weeks of the three months he had spent in Conferences. Forging dangerous streams, out at night in storms and darkness, facing every peril in Georgia, he says: "I am mightily wrought upon for Maine and Lower Canada! Oh, for more of God!" What breadth of love, toil and sacrifice! This was in March. In June, he was in Baltimore, and, by October, had visited Boston and the North and was at rest for a day, grieving over the loss of the noble Judge White. Bassett, of Bohemia Manor, had also entered into rest. Asbury could not stay to mourn. He went South and spent some days at Charleston, where he was cheered with prosperity, but ne

heard of the burning of Cokesbury College. In June, he was again in Baltimore, having preached along twenty-three hundred miles of wintry road in six months, besides a month in Charleston.

In 1796, Abbott, whom we have found a wonderful man, even in wonderful times, was called out of this world. His death was fitting to his life. Power attended his word to the last, and his final utterances were: "I see heaven opened! Glory!" His place

was filled by mighty men of old, men of renown, who did exploit and bore shame and toil, but were more than conquerors. Such were Henry Smith, Francis McCormick, John Easter; and, of all these, time fails our Story to tell.

William McKendree had served in the Revolution and been present at Cornwallis' surrender. At the age of thirty he was converted, and his standing and talents brought him at once to



WM. MCKENDREE.

The Fourth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

the front. He became, with much shrinking, a preacher. At one of his early appointments he could not lift his eyes to his audience, and after sermon, when the people were gone, there he sat, on the pulpit stair, his face in his hands. A gentleman came to invite him. "I am not fit to go home with anybody." An old preacher afterward said, "The Lord has a great work for you to do," and so it proved.

Soon he was in charge of the whole work in the Mississippi valley. He was of magnificent presence and a look at him gave assurance of a man. We shall see him a leader to the last, following Coke, Asbury and Whatecoat, as fourth Bishop. The South, especially Virginia, the mother of Presidents, was the mother of a high order of Methodist preachers. It was a good place for Methodism, for south of Delaware were, in 1796, about forty thousand members, two-thirds of the whole Church.

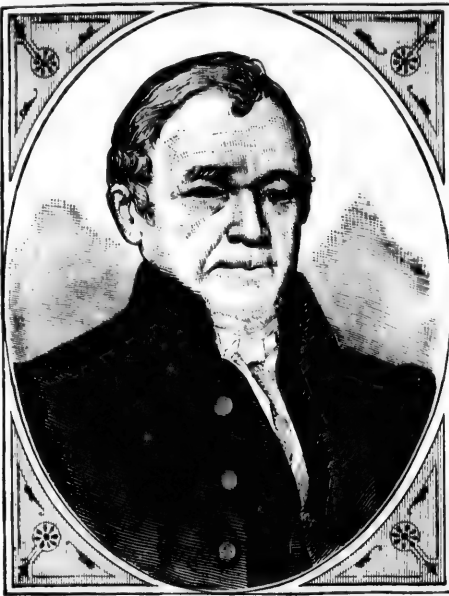
Going northward, Asbury found a patron and brother in General Van Cortlandt, a man of high position, in whose home, near the mouth of the Croton, the greatest statesmen had been visitors, and from whose porticoes Whitefield had preached. He was a true Methodist and his social and political standing aided the cause. Garrettson had married Catharine Livingston, and his ample home at Rhinebeck was another resting place to the wayworn, often weary and depressed, Bishop.

George Pickering was received on probation in 1790. In 1840, he was still active, though he says, in his semi-centennial sermon, that he "shall not labor much longer!" He was the only itinerant who had served fifty years; the patriarch of the hour. This true Nestor was tall, trim and vigorous of person, scrupulous in dress and, to all who now remember him, most venerable of aspect. His smallest ways and habits were perfectly systematic. Of his fifty years of itinerancy, he had spent just a fifth with his non-itinerating family. Nothing at home, not even the loss of his daughter at sea and the grief of the family, brought him back an hour ahead of his programme. When his time for return after her death came, he gave up hours to silent, solitary grief. He was brief of speech, simple and direct in his ideas, and in every place a gentleman. When, seven years after his fifty, he laid down his active service, all said, "Servant of God, well done!" His chief labor was in New England. There was Ezekiel Cooper, who brought

the Book Concern to perfect order and success, raising its capital in six years from nothing to forty-five thousand dollars, and whose ministry, effective and superannuated, reached sixty-two years. He is the first preacher who is on record as a "furious" sportsman, his dear recreation being "the gentle art" of angling.

Some of the preachers had, with a full experience of the familiar hardships, now made their way up the Hudson. Thomas Ware

became Presiding Elder of the vast region. He dined with one of his preachers. For the Elder, the man and wife, and seven children, there was only a blackberry pie with rye crust, with no ingredient of lard or butter. Ware had a few dollars and gave them to his brother, while they all wept together. There were many settlements now, large towns with flourishing Churches, that were utterly without the Gospel until these faith-



THOMAS WARE.

ful, suffering evangelists came. Northeastern Pennsylvania was as hard a field as any. Ware made his way to Wyoming through every difficulty. "That is what I glory in!" He found settlements with no form of religious service, but his errand was not in vain. From one of the points he reached came Henry Bascom, the greatest Church orator of his day, and Bishop of the southern branch, Thomas Bowman, now Senior Bishop, and the Peek

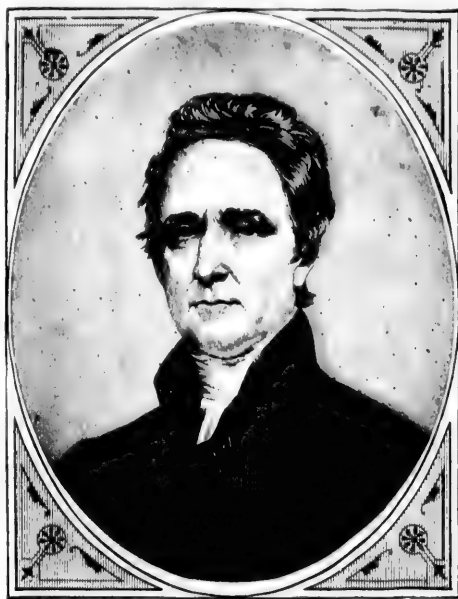
family of seven preachers, one an eminent editor and another a Bishop, in one generation and many preachers in the one following.

In 1796, there were, on the northwestern border of settlements, three circuits, each a Conference to-day, the Tioga, Wyoming and Seneca. As far at least as Seneca lake, New York was occupied. On its northeast, Richard Jacobs, disinherited from a wealthy house for his Methodism, was drowned in going to preach to the settlements in Essex and Clinton. Which was the better, his father's wealth or this, that all his family were converted, three sons and two sons-in-law becoming preachers?

On Long Island was an event as notable as any. Mrs. Moore, coming from New York to Southold and finding no Church privileges, joined two other ladies in prayer that a preacher might be sent them. Late in the evening she felt an answer: "I have heard their cry and am come down to deliver them." That very night, Wilson Lee, who at New London was awaiting a wind to take him to New York, felt a strange and sudden impression to go to Long Island. The next morning he took ship for Southold, and, being a stranger, was directed to Mrs. Moore's. She instantly knew him as the preacher, and his errand was proved by the power of his word.

In February, 1793, Lee was again in Boston, not so "chilly" as he once had found it, for he met a class "at Mr. Burrill's." Lynn was his New England home, and there Asbury came, in July, to Conference. The Bishop had been ill four months, yet had ridden three thousand miles, of which the last two hundred were the hardest. The Conference, too, had elements of pain. Some preachers withdrew, through O'Kelly's influence, among them a "Boanerges," John Allen, who retired to Maine. "Camp-meeting John Allen," who has labored in more camp-meetings than any man now living (he is near ninety), bears the name of the mighty in this century. At Waltham, the life-long home of Pickering's

family. Asbury staid with Benjamin Bemis, father-in-law of Pickering. The first native itinerant of New England now appears—Enoch Mudge was of devout parents who found liberty under Lee's preaching in Lynn, as did Enoch afterwards under that of John Lee. In 1793, being eighteen, he began preaching, and his long and useful life was marked by ministerial, legislative and literary labors, until his death, in 1850.



JOSHUA SOULE.

*Seventh Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church,
First Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.*

In Maine, Mudge found young Joshua Soule, long a Bishop of the Church and then of the Church South. Men now living well remember others who now came into the ministry. Hunt, whose grandson is now Secretary of the American Bible Society, Ostrander, and who can say how many unforgotten worthies?

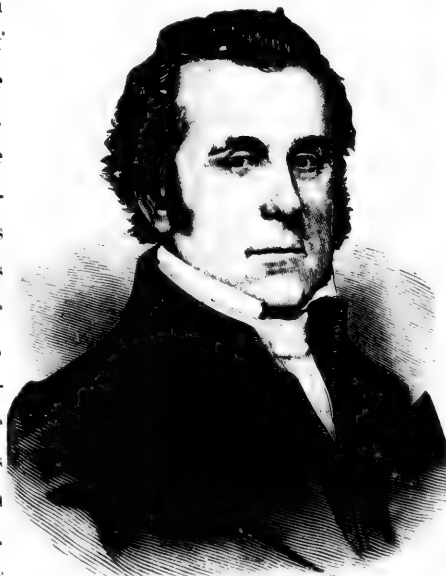
It was the Roman usage to employ soldiers as far as possible from their native provinces, and

something of the sort is seen in the appointments of the Methodist preachers. The men of the South, glowing of temper and utterance, were launched upon New England. They had much to bear from the settled clergy, who were strongly entrenched, for the law taxed all the property in the parish for their support, were fond of argument and afraid of zeal. Baptists and Methodists in Massachusetts and Connecticut were sent to jail for refusing to

pay taxes to support a ministry which they did not want. The "Standing Order" were intelligent, wealthy and aristocratic and yielded but slowly, but they yielded. Odious laws were repealed. At first, those who gave no notice of their support of other Churches were held to pay the Congregational tax. At last, all laws were erased and all support of the Gospel was free. The struggle was usually called Calvinistic, but it was like that of Wesley with parish priests of the Church of England and any other name would have served as well. All that is now far gone behind us and the New England Churches of all names are in fair harmony. It was a severe trial, though, to be annoyed by intolerance, jealousy and petty controversy, and it would not be strange if the preachers were often witty, often harsh and often impatient in reply.

In 1794, Conference was held at Wilbraham, Mass.,

and more than half of its recruits were from Maryland and Virginia. The little village afterwards became a seat of learning. In 1826, Colonel Binney, of Boston, and others founded there Wesleyan Academy, which others, as Isaac Rich, the founder of Boston University, have since made a noble and useful school. It has trained more Bishops, preachers and men of affairs than any other Methodist academy. The session of the Conference here was remarkable and seemed to leave an influence on the very soil.



REV. NICHOLAS SSETHEN.

Now appears a man to be noted. Nicholas Snethen, born on Long Island, 1769, joined Conference at Wilbraham. He, later, traveled with Lee and Asbury, was an able preacher, and made a vigorous defense of the Church against O'Kelly. In 1820, he began to write against the spirit and usages of the Church he had so labored to build and defend, and, in 1828, he presided in Baltimore at a convention of seceders which formed the Protestant Methodist Church. He was dissatisfied with the place of the laity in the "Old Church," and for twelve years he gave his energies to the work of the New. His last work was founding Snethen Seminary, Iowa City. His Church has now about twenty-five hundred preachers, traveling and local, and one hundred and thirty thousand members. The privileges which he claimed for laymen have since been granted. From this same Conference went the first itinerant to Maine, where the first class was formed in Monmouth, and the first member was Daniel Smith.

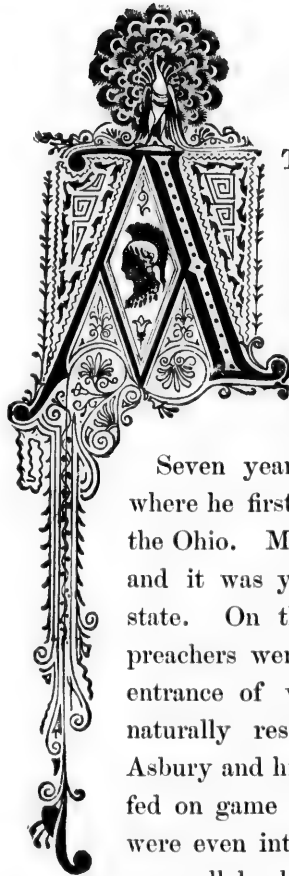
In 1795, the first chapel in the state was dedicated by Lee at Readfield. The cause went forward with great energy in New England during this year of schism and decrease in the South, and there were reported two thousand five hundred and seventy-five members, of whom three hundred and eighteen were in Maine. The first chapel was erected in Rhode Island, and New Hampshire called for more preachers. And now, five years from that sermon under the Elm, Lee laid the corner-stone of the first Boston chapel. It was in a bad place, Hanover street, but it was a home, and from it Methodism went out over the city.



28 MODEL OF MOUNTAINS OF MOAB, CHAUTAUQUA.

CHAPTER X.

The Wild West and Canada.



At the close of the last century the Ohio and Kentucky of to-day were the wild frontier of the nation. "Westward the star of Empire takes its way," and Methodism keeps even pace with Empire. To take it there was a task of even greater peril than any other, for the Indians were fiercely hostile.

Seven years after, a preacher came to Redstone, where he first brought Methodism to a stream feeding the Ohio. Marietta, the first Ohio town, was founded, and it was yet thirteen years before Ohio became a state. On the military path of the Cherokees the preachers were ten years behind Daniel Boone. The entrance of white men into these fair regions was naturally resisted by the Indians at every point. Asbury and his preachers were in constant peril. They fed on game and corn, they spoke to armed men and were even interrupted by the war-whoop. All rough men, all bankrupts in character or fortune, pushed to the frontier to get its shelter and freedom. They became filthy, drunken, quarrelsome and barbarous. If the preachers had not followed quickly and boldly, the frontier would have been dreadful in its demoralization. One might say that Methodism justly claims the great West as its own field.

Barnabas McHenry was the first preacher to rise west of the mountains. He entered the work at twenty and served forty-six years. William Burke appears next. It is strange that, in the midst of that fierce Indian war which General Wayne brought to a close, while the itinerants were in the region of burning and massacre, not one was hurt. Burke's journeys were sometimes a hundred miles through the woods without a cabin to stop at, camping where night found him, wearing out, in one season, "two good horses" and all his clothes. In 1811, after twenty-six years of the hardest service, he formed and took charge of the first "station" in Ohio, at Cincinnati, where he died in 1855.

Thomas Scott had done good service in Kentucky, but, marrying, he could itinerate no longer, as, indeed, hardly any could. He became a lawyer and led a useful life in Chillicothe. Under his preaching was brought into the Church Edward Tiffin, a medical man of Charlestown, Virginia. He became a local preacher. His position in Ohio was like that of the noble men of the East, Gough, White and Bassett. He was the first Governor of Ohio after it became a state, and he did honorable service in the United States Senate. His wife, Mary, sister of Governor Worthington, was dear to Asbury and all preachers for her hospitality, piety and tender sympathy with their trials. The Bishop wept at her tomb. "How deeply I feel her loss!" No early citizen did for Ohio in so many ways as much good work as Tiffin. Scott became Chief-justice of the state, and no two men ever could have done more for religion within it than these, its highest dignitaries.

Francis McCormick is counted the founder of the Church in the Northwestern Territory. This was the vast, vague region north and west of the Ohio. His father had offered him the homestead in Virginia, if he would renounce Methodism, and was fiercely angry at his son's persistence. The poor man, a distiller, afterwards sent for his son to come and pray by his death-bed.

The son was married, but he became a local preacher, and emigrated to Bourbon Co., Kentucky, to preach the word. Though born a slave-holder, he then came across the river and founded McCormick's Settlement, near Cincinnati, to live on free soil.

Stopping for a while at Milford, he formed the first class in the northwest, and got John Rabler to come from Kentucky, who was their first itinerant in the vast realm of now a dozen states. McCormick's house was the seat of ample hospitality. Of Henry Smith, Valentine Cook, and of many brave and good men, we cannot speak particularly.

In 1795, Asbury came through the region, and again in 1796. His health was poor, but his long, rough rides, his daily services, "sleeping four hours, and riding forty miles without food or fire," were cheerfully done. "Oh, if I were young again!"

We must leave the West for a while, but we shall come back to find it furnishing Bishops, McKendree and Roberts, champions like Finley and Cartwright. In 1796, the Methodists of Ohio were too few to count, but on the frontiers of the states below were six thousand five hundred members, twice as many in New England.

There was the same tale of toil and progress in the north beyond our border. The widow of Philip Embury married John Lawrence and, on the outbreak of the Revolution, went with the Hecks to Augusta, Canada. There Embury's son became leader of the first class in Canada, and Paul and Barbara Heck, with three sons, were of its members. Still pioneers! The first preacher came six years later. William Losee was the first appointed to Canada, and with him Darius Dunham. This latter was a mighty man, quick of wit and strong of voice, nor was Losee far behind.

September 15, 1792, the Church in Canada was organized. A circuit had been made of purely new territory, and that day the

first business meeting, the first Quarterly meeting, was held at Bay of Quinte. The next day came the love-feast and the Lord's Supper, and the march of Methodism began. The next year, Dr. Mountain, in England, was made Bishop of Quebec, and sent over, endowed with a seventh of the lands of Canada, to form the Protestant Episcopal Church. The Methodist Episcopal, as in the states, was ahead of him. Here, too, it was the call and glory of



REV. ALBERT CORMAN, D. D.
Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church in Canada.

the latter to go to the borders, to find the settler in his cabin and bring him to Christ by bringing the Gospel to him. Losee found Embury's class and Barbara Heck waiting for the coming of the messengers of peace. Paul died this year. The two men reported a hundred and eighty-four members, this year, as the first fruit of Canada, gained where Christ had not been named before.

Losee had a romantic fate. He fell in love with a young lady of unusual charms, but another gained her before him, and his heart and mind gave way. His name disappeared from the list. He led an honest, faithful, but broken, eccentric life and died at Hempstead, L. I. His successors were Coleman and Woolsey. Going to his circuit by a canoe up the Mohawk, Coleman, fifteen nights, was obliged to go ashore and build a fire, as a defense against wild beasts. They shoved against the cur-

rent, day after day, until they reached Oneida Lake and went down the Oswego. Only once in the nineteen days, fifteen in rain and snow, between Albany and Oswego, did they sleep in a cabin, and that a poor, sick settler's. The family were delighted with singing, conversation and prayer, and begged all Methodists would stop with them. From Oswego, they paddled out upon the lake, but they met storms, and winds detained them on Grenadier Island, until their last food was gone. Eating their last biscuit at noon, they started and, at midnight, reached a friend's, Captain Parrot's, on the shore. They were ravenous with hunger, but, after three weeks of bivouac, they got no sleep on feather-beds. They now hurried to their work and found crowds hungry for the Gospel and glad of their coming.

The people had no money, but gave such as they had. One offered fifty acres of land; another followed the boat into knee-deep of water, saying, "As long as I have two mouthfuls of bread, you shall have one." In a year, these men gathered four hundred and thirty-three members. Next year, they came to Conference in thirteen days. They called at "the poor, sick settler's" and found a glad welcome in a home fairly comfortable, with "corn, potatoes and two or three cows." They told at Conference a hopeful tale and were sent back. Their return voyage was better, though they were nearly wrecked in a storm on Oneida Lake.

This year, the first helper in that region appeared, Sylvanus Keeler, who, in a long and active life, preached from the St. Lawrence to beyond the Rideau and the Mississippi. Woolsey's health failed and he came to the milder climate of the states.

"The handsomest pair in Canada," Samuel and Mrs. Coate, now appear as laborers. Their personal beauty was not a hindrance. Both were laborers, faithful and very successful, while Wooster was mighty in faith and eloquence as he worked with them. In Canada, as elsewhere, the work began with the poor and gained

and went
en in rain
n a cabin,
ated with
ists would
the lake,
Grenadier
biscuit at
, Captain
nger, but,
her-beds.
ry for the

ad. One
nee-deep
read, you
dred and
rence in
nd found
n, pota-
hopeful
, though

Sylvanus
St. Law-
s health

te, now
drance.
Vooster
m. In
gained



METROPOLITAN METHODIST CHURCH, TORONTO, CANADA.

but few of the higher families, but it worked upward. This year, each preacher—four—gained over eighty members.

And now, in 1796, Methodism had thus been founded in all the land. Virginia had the most members, fourteen thousand, and New Hampshire the fewest, sixty-eight. Schism had reduced the aggregate to fifty-six thousand six hundred and sixty-four, or nine thousand three hundred and sixteen less than four years earlier, but that was no discouragement and, thenceforth, there was no decrease. Washington saw the benefit of the work to the country and wrote, when the "Whisky Insurrection" was ripe, to the preachers in its region, thanking them for their brave and true loyalty as "good and meritorious citizens." Coke was glad to hear of prosperity. "The last year is the greatest Methodism has ever known," and he urges attention to the conversion of the negroes, which he believes will in some way be followed by their freedom. So it proved.



A DINNER AT CHAUTAUQUA

This year,

l in all the
asand, and
duced the
y-four, or
years ear-
there was
rk to the
was ripe,
brave and
e was glad
Methodism
ion of the
d by their

CHAPTER XI.

Persons and Incidents.



LITTLE of special interest was done at the General Conference of 1796. Coke had come and found in Baltimore a hundred and twenty preachers. The work was now framed into six Annual Conferences. The holding of Church property was given to trustees, the pulpit being guaranteed to the preachers. A Methodist magazine was to be published. Rules were made for the discipline of schools by which there was to be no *play*, exercise by manual labor or walking, and *all* students, at all seasons, were to rise at five! Remonstrance was made against giving or retailing spirituous liquors. The sale of slaves was cause for expulsion, and emancipation at certain ages was enjoined. Soon after this, Asbury, in South Carolina, saw a slave fishing. The Bishop asked, "Do you ever pray?" "No, sir." Asbur taught and exhorted him; the negro wept, and Asbury sang a hymn and, kneeling by his side, prayed and left him.

Twenty years later, the negro came sixty miles to thank Asbury. He had been converted. Forty-eight years after this, an itinerant heard of a flock in the wilderness and went to find it. There were two or three hundred on a plantation unknown to any Church. "Is there a preacher?" "Yes, massa; de old Bushup lib hyar." "Is he a good preacher?" "Oh, yes; he word burn we

heart!" The "Bushup" was Punch, now palsied and white-headed. With beaming face, he said: "The Lord has sent you, my child. Now lettest Thou thy servant depart in peace." The humble apostle had here gathered throngs of hearers, until the overseer had forbidden it. One evening, a few were praying in Punch's cabin when he was alarmed at the overseer's calling him. He went out. "Punch, will you pray for me?" The man, with grateful tears, owned the blessing of the negro's prayer and became a preacher.

But Asbury had trials. Just a year after the burning of Cokesbury, an academy, started in Baltimore to replace it, with Light Street Church and parsonage were burned—a loss of one hundred thousand dollars. For ninety years the Maryland Methodists undertook no other school.

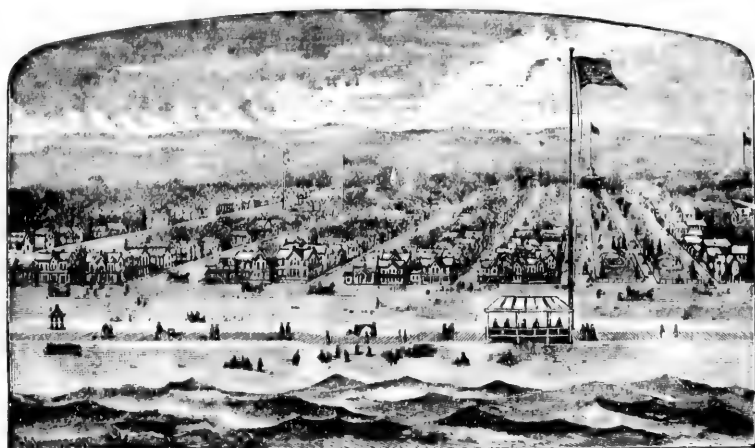
The overwork that made havoc of the preachers told on the Bishop, and what he said of his favorite horse might be said of the rider. "No wonder he is stiff after being ridden five thousand miles a year for five successive years!" The loss of helpers made him sad. Wells, who first welcomed him to Charleston, an able and liberal pillar of the Church, died, and, though McFarland, his partner in business, took his place, yet it was but one for two. Coke was deeply interested in the meetings of the negroes, of whom five hundred were members. Their mythological names, Jupiter, Mars, Diana, seemed to him comical. He now left for England, but the next year, in Virginia, he suddenly met Asbury, and Lee, "riding a borrowed horse with a large white boy on the same behind him." It was Asbury's turn to see something comical! Coke had come to get release from office in America. Asbury, by the advice of the Conference, granted it, but he showed how from the place of one Conference in Charleston to that of the farthest in Maine was thirteen hundred miles, and there was "only one worn-out superintendent"—that is, Asbury himself.

Lee was the man dear to Asbury as colleague and successor. He was now forty, and his record of fifteen years' preaching was wonderful. A southern tour was now ordered for him, and in December he had twenty-five appointments and five hundred miles of travel. In Charleston, thirteen years after he had preached there the first Methodist sermon, he found two chapels, and five hundred members, black and white. Returning to Virginia, he persuaded his father to emancipate by will the slaves of the homestead, and then hastened to and fro as Asbury's substitute. The next year, 1800, both were in the vast field, preaching in new places, where people even grown and having families had never heard a sermon. Lee roughed it as well as the Bishop, sleeping in log-cabins of one room for all the people, and "thirty or forty hogs under it." For four years, to 1804, he preached in Virginia, and the whole state felt his word. He was flush of vigor, full of wit and glowing eloquence. At one Quarterly meeting every person present was converted, the service lasting all day.

Camp-meetings were introduced. The first was held in Kentucky, where, in 1799, a meeting held by a Presbyterian and a Methodist had suddenly outgrown the house and been adjourned to the woods. In the early days, the attendance was immense and the good of them very great. They were to the scattered people in the leisure after harvest like the various summer assemblies and Chautauquas of to-day, only that they were for devotion only. Lee used them to good purpose in Virginia. In 1800, wonderful revivals took place in the South and West. Baltimore was deeply moved and a hundred and fifty were converted during the week of General Conference.

In east Virginia, a clergyman of bitterly hostile temper announced that he would now preach "the funeral sermon of Methodism." There was a vast assembly, and prominent was a Captain Burton, a Churchman, and a very Saul in opposing Methodists.

The discourse was so able that it was suggested that Coke be brought from England to answer it. Captain Burton came away strangely impressed that the Methodists might, after all, be right! He grew distressed, sent for a preacher who explained Methodism, prayed, and left the captain and family in tears. The next afternoon there was preaching to a crowd at the captain's house, and before morning victory came. The meeting held thirteen days. Burton, his wife and children, and all his negroes and neighbors,



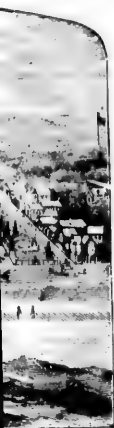
OCEAN GROVE, N. J., CAMP-MEETING GROUND, ORGANIZED 1869.

ninety-five in all, formed a society, and "Burton's Chapel" was long a grateful memorial of the work.

Preachers pressed into the rudest regions of Georgia and the Carolinas, through forests, swamps and canebrakes, reaching people who had never heard prayer or sermon, and where general barbarism ruled. In every place some were converted and these did much to reform their neighbors.

Of persecution there was little, but of hardship enough. The first mob raised on the slavery question fell upon Geo. Dougharty, in Charleston, 1801. He was dragged from the church to a pump

Coke be
ame away
be right!
ethodism
next after-
ouse, and
een days.
neighbors,



apel" was

a and the
ching peo-
neral bar-
these did

gh. The
ougharty,
to a pump

and would have been killed by the water, only that a brave woman at last stopped the stream with her shawl, and a courageous man with a drawn sword scattered the mob. Mrs. Kugley, the lady, and the preacher both died of this treatment that winter night. Watters, the first American itinerant, now resumes service in and about Washington, and then vanishes. He died in 1833, but a church stands on his farm in Harford Co., Maryland, and a Watters, a Methodist, is said still to occupy the estate.

William Capers, afterwards Bishop, now began to itinerate in South Carolina, following Gassaway, a mighty preacher, assisting him by service and exhortation, as a squire did a knight of old. In like manner, McKendree was called from his Richmond district to go with Asbury and Whatcoat to the widening West. "My business was to take care of their horses and wait on them, for they were both infirm old men." Asbury was now obliged to go in a sulky when the roads would allow. Thus the two young preachers were in training for the Episcopal office.

In 1802, the South produced the most eloquent preacher of the first quarter of our century. James Ryland, an Irishman, was the peer of the greatest Irish orators. He was six times chaplain of Congress, and Jackson, Pinckney and other statesmen were his ardent admirers. Jackson, just before his first inauguration, visited Ryland, who was sick, and, kneeling at the bedside, was the subject of an ardent prayer. He made the faithful man chaplain in the navy for the support and employment of his old age. Ryland died in 1844, his good fame being thus the property of the united Church. Ryland Chapel, in Washington, bears his name.

Another, James Smith, of Saxon temperament, joined the Conference with Ryland and, though hardly twenty, was at once a rising star. He sat in three General Conferences and, dying in 1826, had thus early made a mark for Methodism in the highest society of the great cities. The South was thus, up to 1804, still in the lead of

the Church. It had still about half the membership, and gifted men arose to push the work of the Church and to adorn its annals.

But prosperity attended the preachers elsewhere and everywhere. In Dover, Senator Bassett was as eminent a preacher in his way as Lord Radstock is to-day. He held a week of meetings in Dover, in 1802, partly at his own house, where, in one meeting, twenty or thirty were subject to grace. Thomas Ware was on the Philadelphia district (which reached to Seneca Lake), and found a warm friend and helper in the eminent Dr. Rush, whose professional service and cheering words were extended freely to itinerants. He sent out one of his best students, Dr. Chandler, as a medical itinerant, and the recruit did good service, not only in the Gospel, but in urging upon all members total abstinence and the like, so that he was a true St. Luke in his service.

There was still some call for the old heroism in facing mobs and opponents. At Dover, on the Flanders circuit, some fierce Romanist foreigners mobbed an aged preacher, Owen. They meant to kill him, drumming him out of town, court-martialing him and proposing to hang him, disfiguring his horse, drawing his likeness on a board and selling it, and seven times preventing Thomas Smith from preaching, while other citizens were cowed with fear. At length there were better times—an appointment and then a chapel.

This Thomas Smith was the most daring of men. At Pember-ton, a young man was trembling with conviction. Three men tried to get him away. "We do not believe in the Christian religion." He challenged them to be prayed for thirty minutes. To this they agreed. If under prayer their own minds changed, they would confess it; if not, Smith was to renounce Christianity in the presence of the whole congregation! "I will most solemnly do so. It is a bargain. Amen." Many trembled and turned pale at this awful contract. The men came up to the pulpit.

"Infidelity and Christianity are fairly at issue, and may God answer by fire!" Praying people, crowding to the help of the Lord, were told to pray for conviction only, not conversion. Time was called and the minutes noted, while the very foundations of the house seemed to tremble. "Fifteen minutes gone!" One man fell to the floor. "Twenty minutes!" Another fell, like Jericho's wall. At twenty-five the third sunk to his seat. At the end of the time Smith called on them to stand to their bargain. Those who could speak solemnly owned their change and confessed that Jesus Christ was the son of God. Victory was with the daring itinerant, but who would take such risk?

At one place, a band of young men blocked the door, with clubs to maul him. After meeting, he came brushing through them, and every hand hung helpless. Four bound themselves soon after "to spill his blood that day." "I will put my trust in God!" and rode through and past them, while they cursed each other as cowards.

In 1802, this same Smith found a place, then rare, where Methodism had flourished and then died almost out. He spent a Sunday in the ruin. A love-feast was held at which some from abroad were present. Before its close three hundred persons, some in tears and prayers, had come about the house. The doors were opened and in they came, and Divine Power came in also. They fell like men in battle and for hours there was no preaching. Meetings were held until Thursday. On Monday, eighty-five became members. On Monday night, after coming out of the house, the people could not leave. Smith preached again from a grave in the yard, and none went home until ten of Tuesday morning. The society was amply restored "unto this day." Thomas Smith was of great bodily vigor, never preached over twenty minutes, and his power is shown by these incidents.

Henry Boehm was converted in 1793, but concealed the fact

five years. "Lost years," he writes bitterly. Of his father, Martin Boehm, we were telling. He built his own chapel, which became a great center of Methodism, and he sometimes entertained a hundred guests. From it went Wm. Hunter, writer of "Joyfully onward I move," and other beautiful ballads, David Best, still represented in the ministry, and a dozen other itinerants. Henry began his life-work in 1800 after General Conference. His home speech was German and he spoke English so poorly that he came near giving up preaching, when Mrs. Ennals, in Maryland, where Garrettson had been put in jail, gave him a timely word of both warning and encouragement. Sixty years later he was still gratefully remembering her truth and kindness.



REV. HENRY BOEHM.

On one of his circuits was Snow Hill, a place for the sale of negroes for the South. Boehm boldly denounced the trade, persuaded his converts to liberate their slaves and completely broke up the traffic. Herr Gruber, on a circuit in Dauphin Co., preached to Germans in twenty out of their thirty appointments, and, even in Reading, Boehm put the sermons of the Elder into German, for many had never heard an English sermon. Introducing Methodism into Harrisburg, he found opposition and annoyance, but these were strangely quelled. A young man was mimicking the Methodists. He clapped his hands and fell down to the great amusement of his comrades.

But there he lay. They were alarmed, and, shaking him, found him breathless, dead! Ridicule ceased, and the people believed that God was for the Methodists. Seventy years after this time, Boehm, the oldest living preacher, was young of heart and lively in rehearsing the early heroes and heroisms.

This Jacob Gruber, his fellow German, had been driven from his home in Bucks Co. by a father angry at the son's becoming a Methodist. For over half a century he was never absent from his work four consecutive weeks, and he did more work with less loss of energy than any other man of his time.

At this time the Albrights appear. They are offshooting Methodists. Jacob Albright was a local preacher, who, in 1796, felt that his call was to Germans alone. Asbury loved him, though forsaken by him.

In 1800, Albright began his organization. Boehm had, at his own expense, procured a German version of the Discipline and this the Albrights used. After the death of their founder, they took his name. So has Methodism, besides its own distinct organization, not only thrown life into old ones, but also thrown off new ones. The Albrights, now called The Evangelical Association, have one hundred and twenty-five thousand members. They differ from the Methodist Episcopal Church in almost nothing, but some items, as electing Bishops for four years only. The United Brethren, Otterbein's people, are about the same, and both Churches are earnest, spiritual and prosperous.

Looking now eastward, we find rising a man most devoted, useful and entertaining. Billy Hibbard, named from a Governor of a state, was put on the Conference roll as "William." He would not answer. "Is not that your name?" asked Asbury. "It is Billy Hibbard." "But Billy is a little boy's name." "I was a little boy when my father gave it to me."

The Conference was convulsed with laughter. In passing his

character he was charged with practicing medicine. "Are you a physician?" asked the Bishop. "I am not. I simply give advice in critical cases." "What do you mean by that?" "In critical cases I always advise them to send for a physician." His wit was always ready, and it could be rude, for he would not "hew blocks with a razor." In a crowd, a noisy infidel challenged him by saying a man's soul goes with his body. "Suppose the body was yours and should by accident be eaten by a pig?" "Then I am soul and body in the pig." "And if the pig be made into soap?" "Then I am in the soap." "Well, we'll leave you there in the soap!" while the throng roared at the man's "position."

Billy Hibbard gave the ministry a son, Freeborn Garrettson Hibbard, for fifty years the most effective preacher in western New York, and widely known as an author. His eldest son and namesake, long a prominent citizen of New York, was obliged to give up "Billy." Not one in ten would so address him and he had to be "William." At twelve, Hibbard went through an intense religious experience, from which he fell away, but at length came out into settled peace and a life-long purpose. His wife, a woman of clear head and even temper, was converted and he began to suspect his calling. Conversions followed his earliest efforts, but he felt weak and unworthy. At Pittsfield, he heard preach a weak, "a very weak," brother, who weakened as he went on. "He is weaker than I am, or, if I am as weak as he, I will never try to preach again." The next morning he learned that five were converted under that sermon of "the very weak brother." "I hid my face in my hands and said, 'O Lord, marvelous are Thy works!'" He saw that the power was of God, and he never again spoke of weakness. He went to preaching, spent his own property and got almost nothing, but his noble wife encouraged him, reared her boys, who came to honor, and the venerable man, far on in life, had nothing to regret.

On Thurman's Patent, near the Hudson, he found young martyrs. Two young women were whipped by their father for "experiencing religion," until the blood ran from their backs down to their feet, and were then turned out-of-doors. Their two young brothers suffered the same. Of ten children, eight were treated in this manner for their religion. They agreed to go back together and pray for their father. Entering, they tenderly told their concern for his soul. He threw himself on a bed and howled while they prayed. He lost all strength, was helpless eight years, and could never raise a whip again. After about fifty years of various labor he departed, as he said, to his son, with mind as calm as a summer eve. He was a wonderful man.

In New York state, Methodism was working its way westward. The first meeting-house west of Albany was built in 1800, at Sauquoit, near Utica, when that fine city was a cedar swamp, and Kirkland Griffin, Esq., prayed at the laying of its corner-stone. Whatcoat preached the first sermon there.

Soon, Colbert, Elder of the Albany district, was heard perhaps as far west as Canandaigua, and Lorenzo Dow made here a startling campaign.

Canada beyond Niagara seems to have been reached before western New York, and, in 1801, the first church there was built by Sawyer, and bore his name. Canada now gave to Methodism a name familiar in every department of Church work for more than sixty years. No man labored longer or better to manage and secure its varied interests and he is the most truly representative Methodist of our century.

He was born in Connecticut, but was now a surveyor in Canada beyond Niagara. He knew the Methodists only to despise them, but under a sermon of Sawyer's he was converted. As he was then teaching, he opened school with prayer, for which he was stormily dismissed. He began to preach. Those who have seen

majestic men in the full dress of the day can see how Bangs, who was of manly beauty, must have changed in a preacher's garb. He sold everything in 1801 and went out to preach. No result seemed to follow and he was downcast. Then he dreamed of picking at a rock and making no impression. He would pick no more,



NATHAN BANGS, D. D.

when a stranger appeared, and said: "*Your duty is to pick.*" At another blow the rock flew into a thousand pieces! Bangs was never again tempted to give up. He soon had an experience about "impressions." He went to a settlement on a winter's day

to call for prayer and conversation at every house. He came to one back in the field with no path to it through the snow. He went on, but was impressed that he ought to visit it, until the impression became intolerable. He turned back, waded through the snow and found not a soul there. He never again trusted impressions.

Going to an appointment he was annoyed on the road by three half-drunken men, who also came to his preaching. In his sermon he spoke of the sin of drunkenness, which brought from one of them threats and curses. Bangs prayed to Daniel's God for deliverance, and they hurried out of the house. That night they murderously assaulted a traveler, supposing it to be the preacher, but he put them to flight while Bangs was safe in bed.

Three hundred were gathered on his first circuit, and many there still remember him. The next year a typhus fever affected Bangs' voice, giving it a peculiar double and unpleasant quality, for life, such as his hearers remember.

We must now take leave of Canada Methodism, unless for incidental notice. Its separation from the Church in the states will be noted. We may say that it is now "The Methodist Church" after the Wesleyan style; that it has noble schools, church edifices and all material prosperity, and reports one thousand six hundred and twenty-eight itinerants, with one hundred and sixty-eight thousand eight hundred and three members.

And Barbara Heck once more. In 1804, at seventy, she sat dead in her chair. Her German Bible was open on her lap; it had taught her how to live and how to die. Her grave is shown in the old church-yard, with the rude forefathers of the lamlet and pious great-grandchildren, and descendants beyond call her blessed. So does the Church, which she founded in New York thirty-nine years before her death, and which now, eighty-two years after it, has covered one continent and reached to many.

CHAPTER XII.

Some Men.—The West.—Two General Conferences.

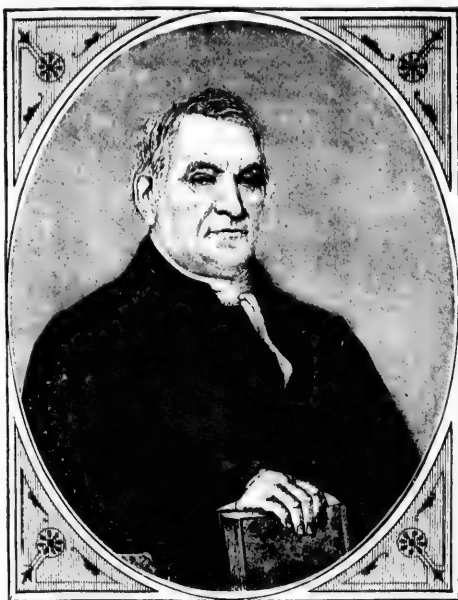


LAST four years since Wager's entering Maine, there had been gained a thousand members. In 1799, three years after his entrance of New Hampshire, that state had one hundred and thirty-one. Of all New England, this was the hardest at first, but such it has not continued. In these years Lorenzo Dow was admitted to Conference and did immense labor in western Massachusetts. Daniel Webb, who now became a preacher, was at his death, in 1867, the oldest effective preacher in the world, serving sixty-nine years.

Elijah Hedding, a future Bishop, the eighth, began service in 1799. He was born in Dutchess Co., New York, but was reared in Vermont. He had all due initiation, for in northwestern Vermont he had to meet the fierce frontier barbarism. Even when he had formed societies, he was often troubled with what is at once the strength and weakness of New England—the people would “go West.” Their emigration to this day drains Churches of their most active members, and for that reason the growth of Methodism in New England is the more remarkable. Hedding grew in power. At Hebron, Connecticut, in an audience of three thousand, five hundred fell within five minutes under his preaching, and lay as if dead.

Maine, as well as Vermont, now developed a coming Bishop.

He was born in Bristol and began work in 1798, rude of mind and manner, but unable to find a school. His education was gained by close study while he traveled. Like Vermont to Hedding, so Maine was to Soule no gentle nurse, but their training made them strong men. Soule was majestic in person, and he might have been mistaken for Andrew Jackson. He afterwards became book agent in New York, and, in 1824, was made the seventh Bishop.



REV. ELIJAH HEDDING, D. D.

The Eighth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

He served the Church twenty years. At the great division he went with the Church South, and did faithful service as its Senior Bishop for twenty-three years, dying at Nashville in 1867.

In some parts of New England, rough times were had that tested the mettle of the preachers. In Boston, where the little church on Hanover (or Methodist) Alley was slowly building, they had sore annoy-

ance from rude fellows of the baser sort, and the city authorities gave no protection. Hibbard, preaching twelve sermons a week at Granville, was attacked with stones and dogs. In Vermont, a preacher, Crawford, was ducked in the river, and others suffered constant annoyance. In these quiet regions, where the Churches have so long had rest, it seems incredible that preachers, in the very land of the Pilgrims, should suffer as if among the heathen.

The dominant Church seemed bent on their extirpation. They were denounced from pulpits, snubbed in courts, interrupted in sermons and mobbed on the streets. To this day, the sons of the Pilgrims, grim with moldy pride, often speak with distant contempt, or with the grace of patronage, about "the Methodists," whose growth and power gives them unwelcome surprise. For, despite all hindrance, Methodism had, in 1804, over ten thousand members and eighty itinerants.

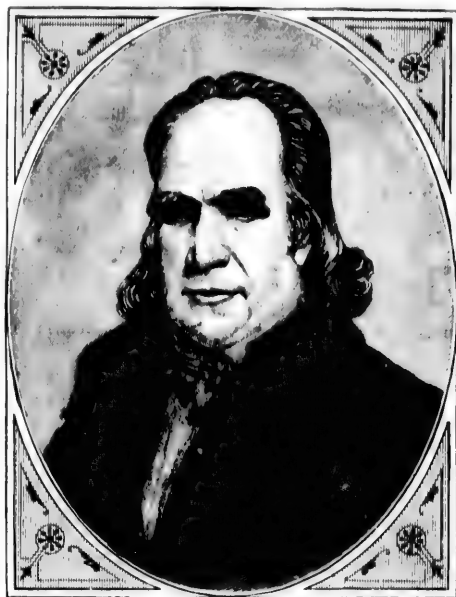
In the West the ground was more free. Scotch Presbyterians had, however, settled in western Pennsylvania, and they were a vigorous race of good citizens, warm in temper and fixed in religious ideas. They were fond of controversy, and, "e'en though vanquished, they could argue still."

Roberts, a bold young hunter of the region, tells of a public debate to which a Scotch clergyman had challenged Valentine Cook, the Presiding Elder. It was held in the woods, where ample seats were had and a throng had been two days gathering. All things had been arranged in the interest of a victory for "Calvinism." Cook was sitting quietly when a stout, Scotch clergyman came a little late, but early enough to "gie the youngster a dose from which he will not recover." The dominie was rude to Cook, and, without prayer or preliminary, rushed into the rough pulpit and began a furious attack on Wesley and his whole system. He yelled, stamped and fairly foamed. When he came to defend "Calvinism" he had no reserve of voice. Hoarse, and hardly audible, he growled for an hour and took his seat, utterly spent.

Cook began with prayer, and with clear, sweet voice, quickly gained the completest attention. His defense of Wesley and his reply to his opponent were almost wholly in careful quotations of the ringing words of Scripture. His Scotchman sprang up and howled "Wolf! wolf in sheep's clothing!" but Cook spoke right on. He then called his friends to go with him from the place and

"leave the babbler to himself." Only two or three, from thousands, went with him. As Cook was concluding, the vast throng rose to their feet and stood, many in tears, under the spell of his word, and, at the end, silently left the spot under the deepest impressions. This debate made Methodism respected and opened an effectual door for it in the state west of the mountains.

In 1800, Asa Shinn began service in the Pittsburgh district.



REV. ROBERT RICHFORD ROBERTS.

The Sixth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

He became the founder of the Methodist Protestant Church. This body, formed in 1830, and now having fifteen hundred itinerants, with one hundred and forty thousand members, differs from the parent Church mainly in having no Bishops and in making the laity equals of the clergy in Church management.

Near the Ohio line, forty miles south of Lake Erie, is Old Salem, the home of Robert R. Roberts, a Bishop at thirty-

seven; only E. S. Janes having become Bishop so young. He was early a student of Methodist authors and, in 1800, became a preacher. His earthly passion was for hunting and, even after his making into a Bishop, keeping his home in the Salem cabin, he would go upon his old sport. His skill was wonderful—only, in later years, he would get lost in thought, and, leaning on his rifle, let the game escape. He was kingly to look at, born to command,

and his love of frontier life fitted him to serve as Bishop, to use the papal phrase, *in partibus infidelium*, among the frontiersmen. His memory is still dear at Salem and along the Chenango.

In West Virginia, Cook, the debater, was doing the work of an evangelist, but he was soon broken in health. He then took charge of the first school of Methodist founding in the West, Bethel Seminary, in Kentucky, and he continued as educator until his death, in 1820.

In 1800, William McKendree, afterward fourth Bishop, took charge of the western work. The first western Conference was at Bethel, Ky., where ten preachers besides Asbury, Whatcoat and McKendree were present.

We noted the development of camp-meetings. They came rapidly into use in all the West, and McKendree availed himself of them to the utmost. People came to them from even three hundred miles away, and deeply impressed, and even converted, opened for the itinerants access to their own neighborhoods. All this gave vigorous growth, and in two years the western Conference doubled its preachers and gained five thousand members.

Jacob Young, who more than fifty years later wrote his own biography, a brave and active youth, now spiritual and zealous by sound conversion, came into the work from Kentucky in 1802. He began on Salt River circuit with Colonel James Gwin, Jackson's chaplain at New Orleans, who could not let alone the rifle. Young's book is full of lively and even thrilling experiences. On Fishing creek, Ky., he found a society of which every member had been brought in by the labors of a slave, Jacob, who could not read a word. On Saturday night, Jacob's kind master read to him the Bible, and Jacob would choose a text and think it over with prayer, and the next day preach from it. His congregation was large and the society prosperous.

Young loved all and feared none, and the roughest "Hunters of

Kentucky, half horse, half alligator," listened to him and many were converted. He felt himself to be one with them in the full spirit of a pioneer. He took in three hundred members on the Salt River circuit.

In 1800, Tobias Gibson went to "Mississippi Territory," and gathered eighty-seven members at Natchez. He had reached the place by canoe down the Cumberland, the Ohio and the Mississippi, with a courage quite equal to that of Père Marquette, the Romish missionary of Wisconsin. Four times he came back through the lorn wild of six hundred miles for helpers. He went to his heavenly home in 1804, but men had come to carry on his work. Blackman, who followed Gibson, left four hundred and fifteen members. The planters were emigrants, even refugees, from older regions, and their hostility made the service in the low countries very painful.

Cincinnati, a dense forest in 1798, was entered by John Collins in 1804. "Is there any Methodist here?" asked he of a grocer with whom he was dealing. "I am one." Collins wept as he embraced the brother. "There are several." The grocer opened his house for preaching. The first Methodist congregation in Cincinnati was twelve persons, in the chamber of John Carter's house, and John Collins was the preacher, in 1804, and a class of eight was formed, four being the Carter family. "A handful of corn in the top of the mountains." The next sermon was by Robert Sale to forty in a house on Main street between First and Second. The Stone chapel was begun in 1805. What conquest has Methodism made in the city in eighty years!

The first Methodist in Indiana was Nathan Robertson, who came to Charleston in 1799, and the first class was at Gassaway, near Charleston, where also the first chapel was built in 1802 and is still shown.

Indiana is now the Methodist state, half of its Christian popu-

lation being in the Church and its congregations being more than half its population, though Iowa follows hard after.

In 1804, Benjamin Young went as a missionary to Illinois. He had a hard time. Few people were there, but "stealing, fighting, lying!" He found five societies of thirteen each. He was sickly; he lost his horse, stolen by Kickapoos; he had to sell his books at Kaskaskia for his board before the people began to help him, but he knew he was "in the work of God" and was not cast down.

The first Methodist sermon, in Detroit or Michigan, was by one Freeman in 1803. Bangs preached there in 1804, welcomed by one convert of Freeman's sermon, and the first society in the city and state was formed in 1805. Detroit was a Romanist city of French and Indians, and no Protestant church was built there until 1818.

Asbury threaded the West about once a year. He was always sick and infirm, but his soul was a driving-engine. The details of his experience we have no room for. In our Story, hardship, suffering and victory are amply familiar, but we may take a little more from Asbury's faithful Journal. At Claiborne, Tenn., he writes, "What a road have we passed, the worst on the continent, yet there were four or five hundred crossing the hills while we were. As many thousands come yearly from East to West, and we must send preachers after them. Should a well-mounted man complain when he sees men, women and children, almost naked, paddling barefoot and barelegged along, or laboring up the rocky hills, while the best-off have two or three on the same horse? The people are the kindest, but what can kindness do with a log-cabin, twelve by ten, cold and rain without, and six adults and as many children (one always in motion, to say nothing of dogs) within? I have taken the itch—strange I have not taken it twenty times: there is no security in these filthy beds, but sleeping in a sulphur shirt. But we must bear it for the elect's sake. The air

is pure and the house of God is near." Reaching North Carolina, "once more have I escaped from filth, fleas, rattlesnakes, hills, mountains, rocks and rivers; farewell, western world for a while!" He took the cup of which his humblest brethren were drinking. But they all had success. The Gospel was heard from Detroit to Natchez, and in the wild, thinly-peopled frontier were more than fifteen thousand Methodists in the van of the nation.

Coke now came to the General Conference at Baltimore in 1800. The number of preachers present is nowhere given, but the leading men were there.

On Sunday, May 18th, a high day, Richard Whatcoat was ordained Bishop, having been on the third ballot elected by four votes over Jesse Lee. This latter was not dejected by defeat, and Whatcoat writes it as the chief glory of the Conference that two hundred were converted during the session. Ezekiel Cooper was made book agent. The allowance of preachers was raised to eighty dollars, for the price of all supplies had nearly doubled. A motion was made to have Presiding Elders elected by the Conferences, and, though defeated, it came before many following Conferences. A motion to create the General Conference of delegates was for the present defeated.

In 1799, Richard Allen, a colored man, had been ordained by Asbury—the first case of the kind. He became, in 1816, the first Bishop of the African Methodist Episcopal Church. A rule was now made to allow such ordinations where the African brethren had a house of their own. Propositions against slavery were offered chiefly by southern men.

The General Conference of 1804 met at the same place, May 7th, with Coke presiding. One hundred and twelve were present; of these, more than two-thirds were from the nearest Conferences, the Baltimore and the Philadelphia. This showed the need of a system of delegation. The discipline was now carefully revised. The

Bishops were to fix the time, but not the place, of each Conference and to allow it to sit for at least a week. They were to appoint no man to the same place for more than two successive years. The Book Concern was removed to New York, and preachers becoming authors were to show their manuscripts to the book committee. The United States were formally acknowledged, as now, a sovereign and independent nation. The slavery question did not fail to be discussed, and an edition of the "Discipline," with the chapter on slavery omitted, was ordered for circulation among the slaves. Coke now took his last leave of America. He was the first Protestant Bishop in America, excepting some visitors sent by the Moravians. His labors were, as we have seen, not confined to the United States, and, though he had designed to make America his home, such were the needs of the English societies after the death of John Wesley that the General Conference in America permitted him to reside in England. George Marsden, an English Wesleyan minister, who had been one of the general secretaries of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, and twice president of the Conference, now visiting America, thought he saw here Methodism in its grandest form, on a scale equal to the grandeur of the country. In England it was a river; here it was a torrent. He thought that without it the new settlements would have become heathen. He was right. Tobias Gibson, a man of great wealth, who had forsaken it all to proclaim the Gospel in 1799, volunteered for the Mississippi valley, though already broken in health by excessive labors. He reached Natchez eighteen years before the Mississippi territory was admitted into the Union. From this, then a vast wilderness, he went six hundred miles to obtain more laborers from the Western Conference. Four times he made this journey, and a few laborers were given to him from time to time. His successors at Natchez had entered the edges of Louisiana and Florida, so that Methodism was now in every state and territory of the

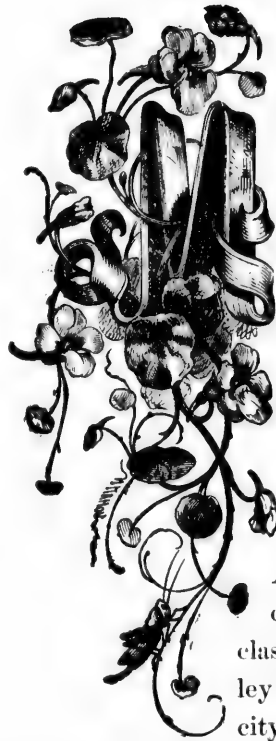
Union. While thus keeping up with the territorial spread of the nation, it has outrun its fullness of population. It has not failed to make an annual increase of twenty per cent ahead of the increase of population. To this we come in another chapter.



REV. STEPHEN OLIN, D. D., LL. D.

CHAPTER XIII.

Men and Doings in the South.



METHODISM had become at this date, 1804, a great thing in the South, having more than one hundred thousand members. It is strange that Savannah, where the Wesleys and Whitefield had been, was very difficult of entrance to their successors. Several preachers had been driven away when, in 1806, Asbury called for volunteers to a post so hard to gain. Samuel Dunwoody attempted it. Teaching a small school for a living, he began to preach, with scant and humble hearing. At the end of the year, Lee gathered into a class twelve, seven being negroes, the first class in Savannah. Five years later, a "Wesley Chapel" was, with outside help, built in the city in which the founders of Methodism had

lived and labored.

At Charleston, the antislavery struggles had been injurious. In 1811, only a hundred and forty-five white members were found in the city, but in the next ten years their number was more than doubled. Still that was slow growth for a Methodist society.

Richmond was singularly destitute of religious institutions. In 1799, it had a small Baptist chapel, and an Episcopal church in which a service was held but three times a year, and that to hold

certain endowments. The first class was formed, in 1793, by some persons just come from England. In 1799, Thomas Lyell began a chapel.

In 1811, the most impressive disaster up to that date in this country, the burning of a crowded theater in which many of the gayest perished, opened the hearts of many to hear the Gospel. Another church was built, the Virginia Conference was held there and Lee was appointed there. The Methodists were now in advance of all other Churches.

Not only in these southern centers, but inward and on the frontier, progress was made. Lorenzo Dow, who truly counted the world as his parish, preached, in 1803, the first Protestant sermon, in Alabama, to the rude pioneers on the Tombigbee and other streams. Randle, the first Presiding Elder, had a district of which the extreme circuits were separated by four hundred miles of Indian territory. In 1811, the country having, by the extinction of the Indian title, become more occupied, about four hundred members were reported. The region was served by preachers from the South Carolina Conference, but it soon began to be counted as a part of the great West, and men were appointed from the western Conference, from which we saw Gibson come to Natchez.

Four young evangelists went, in 1812, to preach in the farthest regions of the Gulf. Full of ardor and devotion, they found no lack of toil, peril and adventure. Heroes became many. Lewis Myers, who lived to 1857, was a hardy, courageous, able man, who long took, as if from choice, the brunt of labor and suffering in the lowlands. Wm. M. Kennedy had, among other gifts to be coveted, a powerful and melodious voice. He was the sweet singer of his Conference and, with his ability as preacher, could sway the vast throngs at camp-meetings. James Russell learned to read after he began to preach, the only case of the kind in the history of Methodism. His marvelous, natural

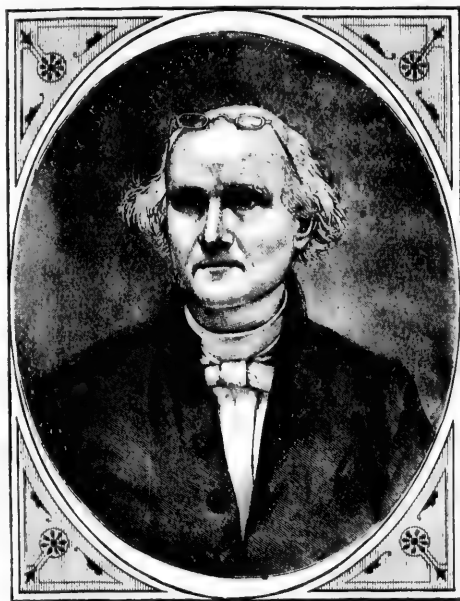
gifts carried him into Conference. He was a born orator and could move with ease as he would an audience, however large. Eye, voice and muscle joined to express his thoughts, and he became a power in founding the Church in the South. On his first circuit he carried a spelling-book, and was not ashamed to get help from the children of families that entertained him. He became a good scholar, and no man had occasion to despise him. Stephen Olin, afterwards the greatest Methodist orator, had the highest admiration of his genius and power in preaching, and declared his success "seldom equaled since the time of the apostles," and that, in his brief career, thousands of souls were given him in the South Carolina Conference.

In the same year, 1804, with these men, two brothers, Lovick and Reddick Pierce, came into the Conference. The former has but just died, after so near a century of prominence at the front of southern Methodism, a prominence due to his labors and sacrifices, as well as to his great abilities. These young men, whose father despised the Methodists, were once allowed to attend a preaching. They were awakened and began lives of prayer. Within three weeks after they joined the Church, their whole family became Methodists. The next year, 1802, Pierce chapel was built on Tinker's creek, South Carolina, and the brothers entered upon their sacred calling. Under Reddick's preaching among his old associates, great results followed. "Eleven sinners at one time fell from one seat, crying for mercy." He died in 1860.

One of those four "true knights" who went to Mississippi was Nolley. He was a poor orphan near Sparta, Georgia, where Captain Lucas, a Methodist, took him in. At a camp-meeting, in 1806, so great was the congregation that Lovick Pierce held an overflow meeting. The power of God was present, and more than a hundred, of whom Nolley was one, were there converted.

In 1807, we come to the name of John Early. He joined the

Virginia Conference at twenty-one, and his first labors were among the slaves of Thomas Jefferson in his own, Bedford, county. His character and talents brought him quickly to the front. In 1811, five hundred joined his circuit. Two years later he was Presiding Elder, and at one of his camp-meetings more than eight hundred were converted in one week. Nor was he a preacher only. He



WILLIAM CAPERS, D. D.

Third Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

founded Randolph Macon College, in Virginia, and was for years its president. Every office of trust and honor in the Church, and some very flattering positions in the state, had been offered him. He had, at the close of his life, probably received into the Church more people than any man then living. Strong, simple and spiritual of address, clear and energetic in business, he was valued early and late in his career, and his name adorns

both the Methodist Church and the Methodist Church South.

Major William Capers was a leading Methodist of Charleston. He had been under Marion in the Revolution and won his title in defense of his state. His son William showed early promise, and, after a collegiate course, gave himself to the study of the law. His father had, meanwhile, fallen away from peace and hope, but the son had been awakened at a camp-meeting, though not converted. One evening, father and son caught the hymns that a

daughter was singing and both hearts were touched. They went away and prayed together, "until grace was restored to my father and mercy came to me." The father resumed his love for Asbury and the Methodists, from whom he had been so sadly estranged, and the son entered upon that long and eminent career in the ministry, which belongs to both the northern and southern Churches.

Entering Conference in 1808, he began with twenty-four appointments every four weeks. On his second circuit, he found, at Fayetteville, Henry Evans, a negro well worth noting. This Evans, being free, had come from Virginia to ply his trade of shoemaking. He found his people in the town poor heathen, at the lowest of morals and habits, and with earnest soul he began preaching to them. Forbidden to do this in the town, he went out to the sand-hills, and when a mob was raised he eluded it by constant change of appointments, while he honestly told of his efforts and their cause. Soon there came a change upon the conduct of the negroes—there was more fidelity, less vice—so plain that Evans was allowed to preach in town. Then masters and mistresses followed their servants, and a meeting-house was built. The attendance grew. Soon the whites took the house and built at the sides ample lean-tos—extension sheds for the negroes.

Capers testifies to Evans' power; the facts do so very plainly. He began at the bottom and left off at the top in Fayetteville. Capers preached the good man's funeral sermon, who was buried under the chancel of "Evans' chapel," his just monument. His record is on high.

Capers, in 1810, was in Charleston. Strangely enough, such was the feeling roused by the General Conference's disapproval of slavery that he, son of an eminent slave-holding citizen, was no longer allowed to preach to the negroes. He found, as substitutes, able and eloquent colored men, whom he licensed to preach, and

sent out far and near to the slaves on the plantations. The result was very beneficial and the negroes have since been mostly Methodists. This form of labor on the plantations, so beneficial to the poor slaves, led Asbury and others to soften their ideas of emancipation into conciliation and thus affected the policy of the Church. Capers served the Church long and well, spending in the service an ample fortune. He filled important offices and, in 1845,

became Bishop of the Church South, dying in 1855.



REV. BEVERLY WAUGH, D. D.

Eleventh Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

Beverly Waugh joined the Baltimore Conference, at twenty, in 1809. He took his early training in Virginia, his native state, on one of its hardest western circuits.

After serving in many places, he was, in 1828, made book agent at New York, from which post he was, in 1836, made the eleventh Bishop. He died in 1858, leaving the record of a prudent, laborious man.

He was about the last whom the present generation remember as wearing the severe ministerial garb of early times.

To all these rising men Asbury was dear and venerable. His example constantly inspired them. Young Capers, when first introduced to him, came up very timidly. Asbury, who, seventeen years before, had been Major Capers' guest, caught young William in his arms, saying, as he remembered the family, "I've got the

baby!" and he won "the baby's" heart. The Bishop loved the South and the warm-hearted men of the South, among whom he found so many heroes. Seventy times he passed over its territory, spending there a part of every winter, even in his old age.

After 1804 he wrote less, but was otherwise as active as ever, only he had now a companion, usually another Bishop. He writes from Georgia that himself and McKendree, "two Bishops of us," are riding in a poor thirty-dollar chaise, with purses to match. "What Bishops! But we hear great news and we have great times. Each Conference will, this year, have a thousand souls converted to God. Are we not well paid for starving and toil? Yes; glory be to God!" He carried an ax slung under his carriage, for trees would fall across the road and his companion must cut them away, as well as care for the Bishop's infirmities, and even preach at the appointments when the latter was too sick or feeble. His early friends drop away. Forty years have told on Perry Hall, the dearest of all his resting-places. In 1805, he finds it newly-painted and gay with grandchildren, "but I and the elders of the house felt that it was evening with us." Gough died in 1808, and Asbury came to the house of mourning to shed his own tears, as he preached over the body of his true and noble friend. In 1811, he preached at the chapel, and, in 1813, he was there to write, "Alas, how solitary!" Bishop Gilbert Haven, then chaplain of a Massachusetts regiment, visited Perry Hall in 1862. "The most elegant house in America" had been burned in 1845, and its successor was inferior; the estate had been divided and sold, the trees were scant and straggling. "A glory had passed away from the place," but it will not pass from the Story of Methodism. Many generations will venerate the asylum of the weary preachers, the abode of piety and culture, such as made it dear and sacred beyond all the stately mansions of the land.

Otterbein, founder of the United Brethren, now died in Balti-

more; "sixty years a minister, fifty years a converted one." Asbury loved and revered him, and, preaching his funeral sermon, calls him "the great, the holy Otterbein."

The Bishop shows something of an old man's notions, though he was never in his life so cheerful. He fears that wealth and honor may harm the Church. A church-going bell from a chapel steeple startles him, and he hopes it may be the last as well as the first. (How bells are vanishing in 1887!) He finds southern families reluctant to marry their daughters to preachers, and he is glad, for celibacy is "all the better." In the Virginia Conference, 1809, of eighty-four preachers, only three were married, and Asbury and McKendree, its Bishops, were bachelors. It was well called "The Bachelor Conference." Asbury could not see how the itinerancy could do otherwise than lose its semi-military order and energy, if the preachers had families. We now see how, in the slow and natural change of social conditions, his fears have proved groundless.

The spread of the Church delighted him. He computed that Methodism, in 1806, had on this continent four million hearers. Over all these he was commander in chief. Well might he say, "What a charge!" In 1812, he was feeble, and one foot was useless by rheumatism. He had to be carried into Church and sit while preaching. Sick with fever, his feet swelled and painful, he was still preaching twice in one day, or traveling twenty-five miles. Among the preachers his presence was electric, for no man on the continent, or then living in the world, had such a record as he. His feeble voice was worth a thousand men.

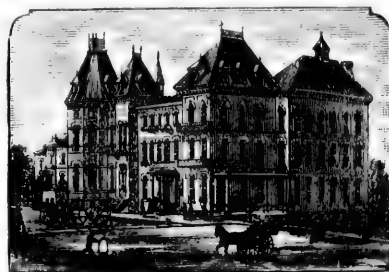
At the great camp-meetings, now frequent in the South, attended sometimes by three hundred preachers and ten thousand hearers, where a thousand conversions would occur in a week, he was the luminous, inspiring, central figure.

This man, the chief founder of Methodism in America, died

March 31, 1816. Beginning his ministry in England at seventeen, and coming to America at twenty-six, he closed his career at seventy-one. For over fifty years he had preached fully a sermon a day, and, in America, had, for forty-five years, traveled six thousand miles a year and ordained more than four thousand preachers. He had been in the West, but was returning through the South to the General Conference at Baltimore. At Richmond, March 24th, he preached his last sermon, being carried to and from the pulpit and preaching from his seat. He went on to Spottsylvania and died. His last entry in his Journal tells, "My consolations are great." His last gesture was raising both hands as affirmative to an inquiry after his comfort in Christ. He then entered into rest.

At the soon-coming General Conference, McKendree preached his funeral sermon, and, escorted by an immense procession, in which was most noted the sad and noble face of Jesse Lee, the coffin was laid beneath the altar of Eutaw Street church. He was the last of the great quarternion, the foremost four of Methodism, Wesley, Whitefield, Coke and Asbury.

Six months later, Lee himself rejoined his great leader. We have told of his career, how for thirty-five years he had gone from Maine to Florida, had brought Methodism to Boston, had been chaplain to Congress, and the earliest Methodist historian. He ranks next to Asbury in service, a Bishop in everything but the name. So fell, at the close of its first half-century, the two greatest figures in the front of American Methodism.



THE UNIVERSITY OF DENVER, COLORADO.

CHAPTER XIV.

Men and Doings in the North.



HE most eminent preacher next rising in the Middle States was John Emory. He entered the Philadelphia Conference in 1810. To do this, he had renounced the law, for which he had been finely educated and in which his prospects were very brilliant. What was more, he had to

brave his father's displeasure, who refused him a horse and, for two years, would have no communication with him. Afterwards, there was complete relenting and the father was comforted with the son's ministrations. Ready for the hardest service, Emory was but three years on circuits. He served in the cities where the highest talent and character were needed. In 1816, he was a delegate to the General Conference, as to every other, but one, during his life thereafter. We saw him, in 1820, a visitor to the British Conference. He became book agent in 1824—"Emory and Bangs" was the name of the firm—and Bishop, the tenth, in 1832. In 1835, he was thrown from his carriage and died unconscious. His son Robert rose to eminence and became president of Dickinson College.

Jacob Gruber had now in Maryland a lively experience. At a camp-meeting near Hagerstown he preached against slavery before

an audience of three thousand. For this he was indicted and tried for felony in Frederick county.

The case aroused great interest among the Methodists, for their preachers were often doing the same thing.

Roger B. Taney, afterwards Chief-justice of the United States, was Gruber's chief counsel.

Taney entered heartily into his case, and showed ably the sentiment and policy of the Church, as having steadily in view the abolition of slavery. He went on to denounce slavery as a "blot on our national character," and looked hopefully to the time when "we need not blush at the language of the Declaration of Independence." One can hardly identify the young advocate, so ardent and generous in behalf of liberty for Africans, with the venerable jurist who, forty years, in the highest court of the nation, affirmed that, in this country, "the African has no rights that we are bound to respect." But all that has passed away, and by-gones are by-gones.

Gruber was cleared, but he steadily refused "to learn by my trial to call good evil and evil good." His next appointment was on the very spot of his trial.

Farther north, Nathan Bangs brought into the Church his brother,



REV. JOHN EMORY, D. D.
Tenth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

Heman, whom many recall as majestic of stature, voice and brain as Nathan himself. He was an effective preacher down to our own days.

Nathan was now for many years serving along the Hudson. In 1810, he found in New York about two thousand members. Four hundred were added during his two years of service. He went upon the Rhinebeck district and it grew to be "as a field

which the Lord hath blessed," a very garden of Methodism, to this day. Here he called into the work the third of collegiate graduates, following Capers and Emory, Robert Seney, a man of rare and varied excellence, whose son, Robert I. Seney, has been so generous a patron of Methodist enterprises.

Samuel Luckey, a man prominent in the state of New York for more than half a century, now began on a circuit requiring, each week, ten sermons and one hundred miles of travel.



JABEZ PITT CAMPBELL.

A Bishop of the African Methodist Episcopal Church.

In Philadelphia, now occurred the separation of the African Methodists. It was not easy, it is not yet any too easy, for negroes to be peers with whites in the societies, though the utmost kindness might prevail. All Americans will understand that. Richard Allen, ordained, as we saw, by Asbury, in 1799, was a remarkable man. He was born a slave, redeemed himself, became wealthy and built for his people on his own land a church, which

Asbury dedicated as a "Bethel." For a while, it was under Methodist supervision, but a decision of the court put the property into their own hands and took from the Methodist Episcopal Church all pastoral responsibility. They proceeded to form, in 1816, the African Methodist Episcopal Church, which has now four hundred thousand members and is the largest Protestant African Church in the world. It has a college, "Wilberforce University." Xenia, O., with four flourishing seminaries elsewhere, and perhaps fifteen hundred day schools. In the slave states it had not been allowed, colored people being held to worship with the whites, but, in 1865, Bishop Payne, assisted by Bishop Brown, the successor of Allen, who was the first Bishop, formed a Conference in South Carolina. Since the civil war it has greatly prospered. It has, at Philadelphia, a Book Concern and publishes the *Christian Recorder* and the *Repository*. At one time its organization included Canada, but, in 1856, the Canada Conference became a separate body. It differs from the parent Church on the color line only, and most friendly courtesies are interchanged between the General Conferences of both bodies. It is often called "African Bethel Church," from the place of its origin.

This movement was, in 1820, followed by another. The new Church gathered in New York a congregation at a house called the Zion Church. Dissatisfaction with Church government led to a schism, and the new body was called the African Zion Church. It has grown to have three hundred thousand members, with two thousand traveling, and as many local, preachers.

It differs in nothing from the "Bethel," only in name, "Zion," neither does either of these differ from the parent Methodist Episcopal Church, unless that their Bishops are elected for four years only.

Why do they not unite with each other and with the Mother Church? The color question is surely not in the way, for five

hundred thousand freedmen have come into "de ole Chu'ch" since the war.

In 1815, Tobias Spicer preached in Troy, with great success, where the work had moved but slowly. A young blacksmith, Noah Levings, arose and began as exhorter. He came to eminence, and was the first Methodist secretary of the American Bible Society, and by his zeal, eloquence and sagacity he caused that his Church was honored in him.

Methodism was now taking wide and lasting hold of central and western New York. In the Susquehanna valley, taking parts of New York and Pennsylvania, was the Canaan circuit, embracing more territory than the Wyoming Conference of to-day. In 1810, it was all the young preachers for training ground. The roads were shocking, "pole bridges and no bridges." There was enough of hunger, cold and weariness, of rude shelter amid frontier discomforts, and the preacher's pay was forty-nine dollars and ninety-eight cents and traveling expenses. Many a winter evening has this writer, whose father's house was a preacher's home in the region, heard the rehearsal of circuit life there and gazed on the narrator as upon some man more than human.

Soon the charming Lake country was threaded, and Peter Van-nest, fording the Genesee at Rochester, preached at Ogden the first sermon beyond it. The first class was formed at Newstead. George Lane, best known as the longest-serving of book agents, held the next year, 1808, the first camp-meeting, and from that came a new impulse.

In Lyons, that daring Thomas Smith, coming to the circuit, found a handful, but the wicked were in large majority and full of insult and annoyance. Unable to endure this, Smith planned a battle. "I should not wonder if, to-morrow, Lyons should be visited as it never has been and may never again be to the end of time." The meeting became quiet. "For God's sake, tell us

what is to happen to-morrow?" cried one at the close. "Let to-morrow speak for itself!" was the answer.

Smith went home with Judge Dorsey, just out of town. Next morning, Mrs. Dorsey came with the preacher to call on a family. Crowds were coming into town and there was excitement. At the end of the call, Smith asked if prayer would be agreeable. "By all means, Mr. Smith, by all means, sir." Scores crowded the doors and a crusade began. Smith and his praying ones went in procession from house to house, entering and praying for the souls of the family. Soon there were four hundred in the procession. They entered the tavern, where the seat of all mischief was, and, shouting, stormed it. At four they came upon the village green; thirty-two converts came within the circle, and forty were that day added to



WM. CASE.

the Church. Truly, Lyons saw no such day before or since, and no living man could have dared and done this but Thomas Smith. At Judge Dorsey's barn, in Lyons, the beams of which were fifty years after made into memorial canes, the Genesee Conference was formed. It was of magnificent extent, comprising most of New York, a large part of Pennsylvania, and Canada to the infinite—to the Pacific.

One of the members was William Case, the apostle to the Indians. His chief labor was in Canada, and though he served circuits and several districts, yet the work among the Indians was his passion. At the separation of Canadian Methodism, in 1828, he took entire charge of its Indian schools and missions. He loved the Indians, and his coming to a village was a joyful occasion to them. Even the shy children he would run and catch and kiss. Hundreds were brought to Christ by his labors, and no missionary has had such success among them. The whole system of Canadian Indian missions is of his devising.

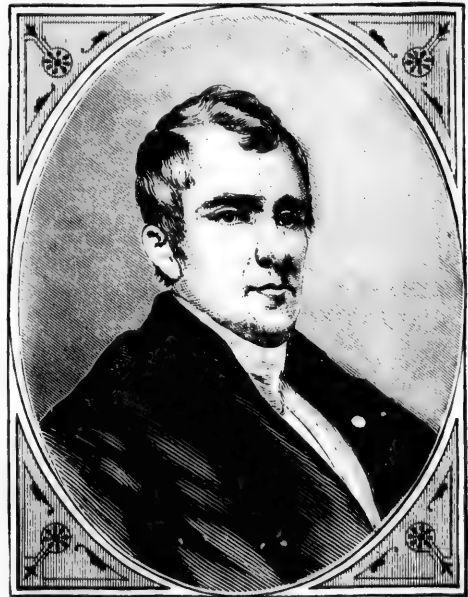
In 1830, he was made general superintendent of the Methodist societies, and, had any Bishop been elected, he would have been the man. In 1854, he preached to the united Canada Conference a "Jubilee Sermon," fifty years after his entrance on his ministry. The union of all Canada Methodism had been his heart's desire and this he lived to see. His death, by a fall from his horse, occurred in 1855.

The war now coming on cut off the Canada region of the Genesee Conference, and its preachers made their own appointments, splicing on the local brethren. Some preachers from England came to Quebec and Montreal, but the loss was great.

After the peace came freer labor, and, in 1817, the Conference was held at Elizabethtown. Bishop George, the fifth in order of election, presided, and the session was pentecostal. A hundred were made subjects of grace, and a flame of revival went out to all the circuits. Another session was held at Niagara, on Canada soil, in 1820. At that date, there were in upper Canada forty-nine clergymen of other denominations, and of Methodists eighty besides sixty-five exhorters, and the members were six thousand three hundred. Asbury once entered Canada, but the route cannot now be found.

Looking to New England, we find Wilbur Fisk, even yet, the

greatest, dearest name. He entered the ministry in 1818, the first New England preacher of collegiate training in a region where that counts seriously. He had graduated at Brown University in 1815, having been a member of the Church already five years, and had intended to give his life to the profession of law. He was not long an itinerant. His calling lay chiefly in the work of education. In 1826, he became principal of the academy, just removed from New Market, N. H., to Wilbraham, Mass. In 1832, he took the presidency of the Wesleyan University, at Middleton, Conn. I have never heard of a teacher who so deeply impressed his pupils. The venerable survivors can never speak of him without tears of love and reverence, and his simple monument near the University is visited by many a pilgrim gray, "To bless the turf that wraps his clay."



REV. WILBUR FISK, D. D.

Of his preaching, this may be told. A lad of ten years was taken to hear him in a rural church. "I know I never took my eyes off from him, and I thought he sat down as soon as he got up." The sermon was two hours long! He was twice elected Bishop (once for Canada), but he held himself to his work in education. In 1839, at forty-eight, he went from perfect love and service to perfect bliss in heaven.

At this time, too, appears "Father Taylor," one of the men found hardly once in a century. He had been twenty years a sailor, though only twenty-seven of age. Amos Binney helped him to three months at school, and he began to preach. His true field was found to be among sailors, and, in 1829, he was made Sailor's Preacher at Boston. Here he had been converted, after crawling in through a window to hear Hedding preach, and here he now labored forty-three successive years. His genius for preaching, his hearty and poetic feeling and utterance, drew audiences from all classes, and Dickens, in "American Notes," gives him a whole chapter. "He is worth a hundred policemen," said a mayor, and it was true. He forgot the vices of his hearers in their woes, and the poorest and most degraded were helped to the way of goodness by his labors.

At the close of the war, Hedding was preaching in Boston. Building the Bromfield church, afterwards the chief one, drained Methodist resources, and the ruin of business by the war put upon



the enterprise eighteen thousand dollars of debt. In this dark case, Amos Binney offered, if pews could be sold to the amount of the debt, to cash the notes of the buyers and furnish to each enough work in his calling to pay the face of the note. There seemed no other road from ruin, as one Board of Trustees held both houses and both would go for the debt. But the pews were thus sold; Colonel Binney paid the debt and the houses were saved.

This began "pewed churches" in Methodism. The first academy in New England was now founded at New Market, New Hampshire, and Martin Ruter became its principal. In 1820, he was sent to found the Book Concern at Cincinnati. After serving as President of Augusta and Allegheny Colleges, he went, in 1837, as the first missionary to Texas, which had just become independent of Mexico, a "lone-star state" of twenty thousand people. Here he spent a year in vigorous and effectual pioneer work, dying in 1838.



EDWARD T. TAYLOR.

Asbury had taken a deep concern in New England Methodism. He saw the country sound and free and full of enterprise in every direction, but that of religion. There he saw stagnation, partly by the bad influences of its old theology and partly by its pride of intellect and culture. He groaned to see renewal

and conversion. Up to 1810, his Journals give quite ample accounts of labors and victories. Thereafter we read little, only that he regrets the entrance of pews, steeples and instruments of music.

Lee comes over his old fields, after eight years, and is glad all along the way. He finds two Churches, in Boston, where the Elm had been his first temple, and at Lynn; he with that first society weeps for joy. In Maine he was even more affected. Fifteen years before this, the people had never seen a Methodist; now there were societies of communicants, thronged congregations, and preachers, local and itinerant. Lee's words were often tears. In Maine he preached forty-seven times in forty-three days, and then, after a week and seven sermons in New Hampshire, he came by Lynn, Boston and Hartford to Garrettson's "Rest" at Rhinebeck. His work in New England was done, well done, done to remain, and he now took his last leave of it, with gratitude and peace. The work fared on in New England in a fashion not specially notable, but, in 1820, there were twenty-five thousand members, with a hundred and twenty-five traveling preachers and several times as many local preachers.

In the remote West, Methodism was not falling behind the rapid growth of the nation. Northeastern Ohio had belonged to the state of Connecticut and was called its Western Reserve. This had been settled from New England and even yet bears the New England character. A local preacher, Shewel, came from western Virginia and made an effectual entrance upon this Puritanic region. He made his own cabin a center and went out in all directions, raising up classes and societies, and preparing the way for the circuit preacher. Jacob Young took charge of this district, the Monongahela, in 1812, and his preachers shared the energy of the Elder. At North East, Pennsylvania, they found a small society, sprung from the last efforts of a dying man.

Thomas Branch had, with the scant furnishing of books and saddle-bags that marked an itinerant, started from New England to labor in the milder climate of the Southwest. He had entered the wilderness along the south shore of Lake Erie and disappeared. For fifteen years his old friends heard nothing of his fate. He reached a little settlement where there were no Methodists and preached there. At the close of his sermon, he told the people that



JAMES B. FINLEY.

he was too ill to proceed on his journey and he asked **their** hospitality. After a long silence, a man, who had a log-house, with a large family of children, invited him home. In his illness, Branch would preach, pray and exhort when unable even to stand. He rejoiced in the Lord to his last breath.

There was a meeting-house in North East, the name of the set-

tlement, but it was grimly refused for his funeral, as was also interment in the new cemetery and a wagon to carry the coffin. A prayer was made, and the coffin, on a rude sled, was drawn by oxen to a grave a mile west. It is within the modern cemetery. The strange providence of Branch's death had its solution. A revival began; many to whom he had spoken in his illness were converted and where, at his death, there was not a Methodist within twenty miles there was found a thriving society.

James B. Finley, "the war-horse," appears in 1819. Born in North Carolina, he had come on the wave of migration into Ohio. His youth was wild, and he delighted in adventure with savage men and savage beasts. At a Kentucky camp-meeting he had been converted, with such a variety of violent exercises as rude, strong natures were wont to experience. After agony and crying for a night and a day, he found peace. "I thought I should die with excess of joy." He was then seven years in the wilderness, without seeing a preacher. He then went with his wife some miles to a meeting and joined the society. The next year, 1809, he began to preach, and now had the district along Lake Erie. He was of great bodily strength and a terror to the ill-behaved; his sandy hair bristled upwards, his features were coarse and his voice stentorian. He found the Lake winter hard, but he had a glorious revival, especially at North East. This year he traveled daily about twenty miles, preaching once and leading class, and doing on Sunday three times as much. Finley soon became missionary to the Wyandotte Indians. After that, he filled many important stations and districts in Ohio, and was also an author, and prison chaplain. He died in 1856.

We omit many characters that now arose in the West, but we cannot omit Jane Trimble, a woman equal to any in all the Methodist record. Thomas Quinn, whose passion for frontier life kept him on the border, was, in 1806, serving the Sciota circuit,

where he had thirty appointments, of which the nearest was fifty miles from his family. At a meeting, a lady remained to attend class and confess the pardoning love of the Saviour. She was a widow, lately from Kentucky, with a large family of children. She had come ten miles to the meeting, and to ask the preacher to preach in her cabin for the benefit of her children and neighbors.

At his next round,

Quinn preached at her cabin, near Hills-

borough, the preacher

and the widow being

the only professors of

religion. After ser-

mon, Quinn, being

soon to go to Confer-

ence, could leave no

appointment, but he

sang a parting hymn.

Her daughter-in-law,

wife of Allen, the

Governor of Ohio,

and mother of an

eminent preacher,

Joseph M. Trimble,

was deeply convicted

and in prayer was

brought to the Saviour. The widow was Jane Trimble.

She was born at Augusta, Virginia, and had removed to Kentucky, carrying in her arms, on horseback, the future C

She was a bold rider and swollen rivers had no on her.

In Kentucky, her husband and herself decided to remove to Ohio

and free their slaves, and so she came within reach of an itinerant.



JANE TRIMBLE.

She trained her children and servants in the fear of the Lord, and her mind, well versed in English and sacred literature, was a wonder for the frontier. Her husband had died before reaching Ohio. She had one of the earliest Sunday-schools; she aided the Indian missions, and her long, active life was a blessing to her family and the Church. Her descendants are still identified with the Church which she served fifty years.

The most effective pioneer in Illinois was Jesse Walker. The border had charms for him as it had for Daniel Boone. In 1806, he was missionary to Illinois, which meant all he might choose to put upon it. The wilderness was his home. He was never lost, he never complained. McKendree was once with him in a tour. They were on horseback and it was very rainy, and some know what that means on the prairies. Their horses swam the full channels, the riders carrying their precious saddle-bags high on their shoulders. They cooked their own food and slept "by the beautiful star." In winter, Walker went from cabin to cabin, faithfully exhorting with prayer the families of the settlers. In the summer, he rode far and near to preach. When a young preacher came to his help they had a camp-meeting, with this remarkable end: It ceased "for lack of argument"; the last sinner was converted!

He preached near Illinois to a neighborhood of seventy. After three days' service, he read the Rules and "opened the doors of the church." The leading man said: "Sir, I trust we will all here unite with you to serve God," and, coming forward, all came with him. Thus, in one year, two hundred and eighteen members were gained in Illinois.

He then went to Missouri. John Travis, the first appointed preacher, had been preceded by Oglesby, a pioneer, who, in 1805, went into the territory as far as the Osage river, seeing there Daniel Boone, who had come there for "elbow room." He preached the first sermon in Missouri, its utter novelty attracting the peo-

ple. Travis gathered in the wilds a hundred whites and six blacks. In 1816, a Conference was formed of part of Indiana, and everything west, to the last cabin toward sunset. Walker came to Nashville, in 1819, to see the Tennessee Conference. He was "ragged, weather-beaten, war-worn!" A suit of clothes was bought for him, which he blushing accepted and went back to his border.

St. Louis was then a terrible place. The only show of religion was by Romanists, unless by a handful of Baptists. Walker proposed to take the town. He engaged two young preachers of the unflinching sort to stand at his right-hand and his left, and they went to the field together. They found the Legislature in session and every hotel full, and they could get no private lodgings. Some laughed at them, some cursed them. Sitting on their horses in the public square, they discussed the gloomy prospect. The hearts of the young men sunk. They thought if the Lord would have His Word preached there He would have made some opening for it. They shook off the dust of their feet for a testimony against St. Louis and deliberately rode away. The veteran sat in his saddle and, for once, had gloomy thoughts. It was his first defeat. "I will go to Mississippi and hunt for the lost sheep of the house of Israel," and slowly and sadly he rode eighteen miles southward. He stopped and thought: "Was I ever before defeated in this blessed work? Never. Did any one ever trust in the Lord Jesus Christ and get confounded? No; and by the grace of God I will go back and take St. Louis!" Waiting for neither food nor rest, he turned his horse's head to the battle field. For the night, he staid at a wretched inn with high prices, and in the morning reconnoitered the city. He met legislators who knew him. "Why, Father Walker, what has brought you here?" "I have come to take St. Louis." "But the people are Catholics and infidels, wild and wicked. No preacher can get access to them. You had better go back to Illinois." "I have come in the name

of Christ to take St. Louis, and by the grace of God I will do it."

He found a place of worship belonging to a handful of Baptists and was allowed to preach there. At his second preaching there was some stir and the house was refused him. He rented a large, vacant dwelling-house at ten dollars a month, got some old benches cast away from the court-house, and, borrowing tools, repaired them with his own hands, and soon, in his largest room, had regular worship.

He lived in the house and, by day, taught the children of the poor to read and spell, and, by night, the negroes. School and chapel were soon full, and a work of grace began. The house then changed owners and he had to vacate.

Without a penny in hand, he contracted for the building of a chapel. A gentleman gave him lumber standing in the forest and soon the chapel was raised and covered. Some Episcopalian gave him an old Bible, cushion and pews, from which he quickly took off the doors. Money came in, and the chapel was finished, furnished, and filled, and paid for. At the end of the year he reported a thriving school and seventy members. He had taken St. Louis, "the stronghold of devilism." He returned the next year and, in 1822, Conference was held there. The Story of Methodism has no better thing to tell. The Methodists in the state thus invaded are, to-day, two hundred thousand.

Walker, always at the front, then went to the Indians up the Mississippi, and, in 1830, was let loose upon Chicago. The town was laid out that year. He had no difficulty there beyond what is common in the day of small things. He gathered a class of ten and, making Beggs the first in charge, had his first Quarterly meeting in 1832. The first church in Chicago was built in 1834 and, in fifty years, there were fifty of Methodist branches. Evanston, now the greatest center of the Church in the West, was in

Walker's range, but positively not then in existence. Walker died in 1835. He needs no eulogy.

James Axley, a product of these times in the West, was, like Walker, a child of nature. He was "a hunter of Kentucky." His gift for preaching was moderate, but his humor, like that of Abraham Lincoln, captivated the western mind. It was keen, tender and timely, and came from a sober face, dark and rugged, under a wide-rimmed hat and heavy brows, so that it seemed to flash from the clouds.

A newly-elected Bishop met him. "How are you, Brother Axley?" "Who are you?"

"My name is Thomas A. Morris." Eying him from head to foot, "Upon my word, I think they were hard pushed for Bishop timber

when they got hold of you." "That is just what I myself thought." "Why, you look too young for a Bishop." "As to that, I am old enough to know more and do better." Bishop quickly loved the plain-speaking man, loved him for his wit and for the toils and moving dangers he had passed. He fought bravely against whiskey, for the cheapness of corn made Bourbon the pest and woe of his region. After he located and became a farmer in Tennessee,



PETER CARTWRIGHT.

Walker was, like
r." His
of Abra-
t. tender
d, under

he steadily testified that house and harvest needed no help from whisky, and that abundant corn could be raised in fields untrodden by a slave. He and Cartwright were kindred of spirit in faith and courage.

At a camp-meeting, Cartwright was preaching while Axley was quelling a rough gang that threatened to whip him. "If you want to fight, let us go outside the camp." All went. "I don't go into a fight until I pray." He knelt, and before his prayer was done they gave up the fight and melted into decorum. Before the meeting closed, several of the gang were converted. Axley urged temperance in Church legislation until he got the General Conference to his mind.

Peter Cartwright came in childhood from Virginia to Kentucky. His father was a soldier of the Revolution; his mother had early become a Methodist. When, at nine, he first heard a preacher, at the old Kentucky home, he remembered that his mother shouted for joy. A class was formed to which she walked four miles and back every week, and soon, Peter, her only son, came home from a dancing party, with an aroused conscience, to bow with her in prayer. He came into the Church in 1801. Walker, the hero of St. Louis, gave him license in 1802, and seventy years later he left his missionary work in Illinois to lie down and die in peace. Axley now came into the Church, and Walker, Cartwright and Axley were as kindred as three clover leaves.

Cartwright, like them, understood frontier life, and could meet violence on its own ground, for in bodily strength few were his equals. A volume of his exploits might be given. In 1805, a mob, led by two champions with loaded whips, came in to break up the preaching. From the stand, he called on two magistrates to arrest the leaders, but these called it "impossible." He came down and offered to do it. The mob came upon him. He laid the leaders one after another on the ground. Their champion then reached

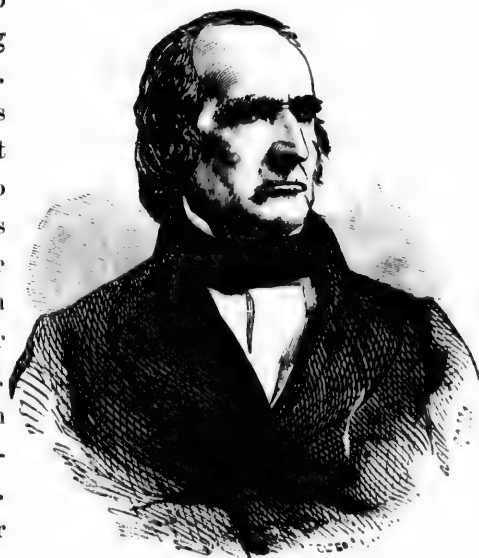
him and made three passes to knock him down. "I could not resist the temptation. I felled him to the earth." So went the work bravely on. The mob fled, but Cartwright and his friends collared thirty, among them a magistrate, kept them in a tent and, the next morning, they were fined to the limit of the law, the magistrate being also cashiered of his office. The affair was on Sunday morning and it threw a cloud over the meeting. Not a preacher could find his tongue. "Let me preach," said Cartwright. "I feel a clear conscience; we have done right." "Do," said the Elder, "no other man can." He called on all to come out, and his text that evening was, "The gates of hell shall not prevail." The power of God came down, three hundred fell, and mourners were all over the ground. Two hundred professed religion and the victory was complete.

As Wesley said of an English preacher: "For such times God makes such men." Many now living well remember Cartwright, not tall, rude of speech, but full of wisdom, harsh of feature, and such a head of hair! Were its flush and mighty locks *ever* combed? He sat in twelve General Conferences, and for forty-five sessions of his Annual Conference he was present at the first roll-call. He was fifty years a Presiding Elder, and, in his long life, was never six months away from work.

The solitude of old age! "I have no father, no mother, no brother, no sister living; I have outlived every member of the class I joined in 1801, every member of my Conference in 1804, nearly every member of the first General Conference, to which I was elected in 1816, all my early Bishops, all my Presiding Elders, and hundreds and thousands of my contemporary ministers and members; and I still linger on mortal shores. Why I live, God only knows." For three generations he was one of the notables in Methodism.

A layman was now raised up in the West who was long

an honor to Methodism and to the nation. John M'Lean, born in New Jersey, was a student of law in Cincinnati and settled for legal practice in Lebanon, Ohio. He was skeptical, but he went to hear, at a private house, John Collins, one of those able men whom we have hardly space to portray. The preacher, at first sight, took the young lawyer upon his heart in prayer. As he uttered the word "eternity," its full meaning came upon his hearer's soul, who could think of nothing but its vast importance. M'Lean followed Collins to another appointment to learn what he must do to be saved. Collins asked him to read the New Testament fifteen minutes daily, until their next interview. Later, they agreed to be in prayer at sunset, wherever they should be. This union of prayer was soon followed by M'Lean's conversion.



JOHN M'LEAN, LL. D.

He filled with honor many of the highest offices.

When he was on the Bench of the Supreme Court of the United States, his negro valet, as his master dismissed him for the evening, seemed sad and thoughtful. "What is the matter, my boy?" "O massa! I's such a sinner." The Judge laid by his papers and began to talk to the servant about the Saviour. Soon both were weeping; they knelt, and the Judge prayed and taught the man to pray, nor did they rise until the latter was clear in a

sense of pardoned sin. Such was M'Lean in every place, through a long and high-placed life.

The men that came up as preachers in the West sometimes showed powers that the world was obliged to acknowledge. Henry B. Bascom entered the ministry in Ohio in 1813. Ten years later, by the influence of Henry Clay, his warm admirer, he was chosen Chaplain to Congress and his fame began. In all the great cities he drew throngs of spell-bound hearers. He afterwards spent some years in educational work, and received from various colleges the highest honors paid to genius and learning. He was in General Conference at the division of the Church and was, in 1849, elected a Bishop of the Church South. In the end of July, 1850, he preached in St. Louis a sermon of two hours, a most eloquent effort, but his last.



REV. HENRY B. BASCOM, D. D.

The Fifth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.

Within two months he died. At Albany, New York, in 1844, where the highest of the state heard him in a throng which no house could hold, an eminent critic, who stood in the rain through a long discourse, said: "He swept us through ranges of the highest thought and feeling with a force quite irresistible, giving us the sensation that children have when swung by a strong hand from one high point to another. We saw in him the full majesty

of sacred eloquence and some who cared little for preaching bent forward in admiration of his oratory."

Thomas A. Morris, a man of far simpler mold, but of large and valuable service, became a preacher in 1814, having been converted under the labors of David Young. After twenty years of travel, he was made editor of the *Western Christian Advocate*, then started at Cincinnati. In 1836 he was elected, the twelfth

in order, Bishop of the Church. After the death of Bishop Waugh, in 1858, Bishop Morris was senior Bishop until his own death, in 1874.

In 1818, John P. Durbin, whose age marches with the century, entered the ministry. His grandfather had, before his coming into the Church, said to him: "Are you not concerned about preaching the Gospel?" and it startled him. In his second year, he went to northwest Ohio on a



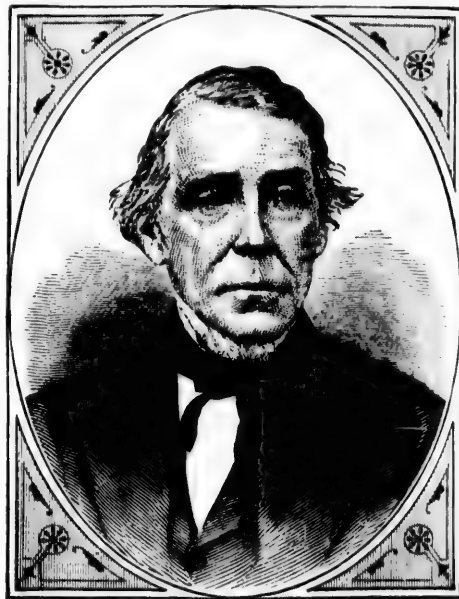
REV. THOMAS A. MORRIS, D. D.

The Twelfth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

two hundred mile circuit, and there he began study. After preaching, he sat down in the one room that served all purposes for a frontier family and went, with pen in hand, through Clarke's Commentaries and Wesley's and Fletcher's works. Inch by inch he came upward. At the instance of Collord, long printer to the Book Concern, he began English Grammar, studying as he rode on his circuit. Then Dr. Ruter set him upon Latin and

Greek, and soon, being at Hamilton, Ohio, he spent a few days of each week at the Miami University, twelve miles away. He copied off his grammars and hung them before him on pasteboard for reference. His industry was his genius and it was with him, "per ardua ad astra," steep climbing to the stars. Soon, by introduction from Doctor Ruter and Governor (afterwards President) Harrison, he matriculated at the Cincinnati College, being stationed in the city, and obtained the regular degree of A. M. He was, in 1831, Chaplain of the United States Senate. After a brief term as editor of the *New York Advocate*, he was for ten years President of Dickinson College.

In 1850, he was chosen missionary secretary, and in that office the rest of his life was spent. All the foreign missions except Liberia were started under his guidance, and he saw the income of the



REV. JOHN PRICE DURBIN, D. D.

society go from one hundred thousand dollars to seven hundred thousand dollars. He died in 1876. His eloquence—that is, his thrills—was spontaneous. Not even he himself knew what was coming. In his manner as speaker he was a perfect gentleman, and his discourses always agreeable and instructive, and often overpowering.

Now came the invasion of Louisiana, the last of the kind which

this Story will rehearse. In 1805, Asbury had despatched E. W. Bowman to reconnoiter those far-off regions, and the explorer tells his own adventures. He found New Orleans beyond a perilous wilderness. No Americans, only French and Spaniards, had settlements below Baton Rouge. In the city there were but few, and they were "beasts of men." On Sunday, he found the Capitol locked, but he preached to a few Frenchmen and drunken sailors. So it was the next Sunday, and he preached to a dozen in the street. Application to the officers availed nothing. They cursed all Methodists: "He is a Methodist; lock him out!" was growled in the streets. One said, "The Methodists are a dangerous people and ought to be discouraged." One more Sunday he preached to a few stragglers in the street.

Sunday in New Orleans has not changed in a hundred years—"public balls, trade and sales, wagons running and drums beating." He could get no house, and his money was nearly gone, and he was three hundred miles from an adviser. "To leave my station without Mr. Asbury's direction was like death to me, and, to stay here, I could do nothing." Hearing of Americans, two hundred miles to the west and northwest, he shook the dust from his feet and started. He went fifty miles up the river, and as far down a river that breaks out of the Mississippi. Then he crossed lakes, and went up the west side of the "O'Tash," eighty miles, at length reaching the Opelousas country. He found a Catholic church, where the priest danced and played cards after mass, kept a race-horse, and swore as hard as the hardest.

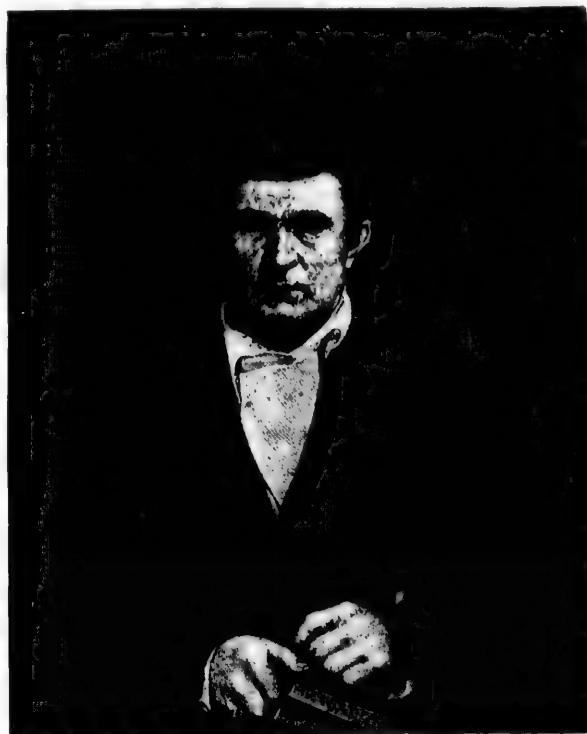
Twenty miles farther, he found an American settlement. They were untaught as the Indians. "Some of them, after I had preached to them, asked me what I meant by the fall of man, and when it was that he fell? I have to teach them to sing, and, in fact, to do everything that is like the worship of God." They thought it doing him a great favor, if they came to the meetings.

Thirty miles farther, he came to another settlement, all in the same pitiable ignorance as the others. "But I get as many of them together as I can, and preach Jesus Christ to them. O my God, have mercy on the souls of this people!" He was in a land of swamps and bayous, sometimes wet from morning to night in swimming them. "My horse's legs are now skinned and rough to his hocks, and I have the rheumatism in all my joints." Vice was rampant, and Sunday was given to frolicking and gambling. In all Bowman's sufferings he was not cast down. "While my body is chilled with cold and wet with water, my soul is filled with heavenly fire." Here was his toil and suffering, and not his rest. He kept this ground two years, and then welcomed reinforcements. In 1807, Asbury sent Jacob Young to the remote Southwest. He started on "a fine Arabian horse," with five preachers who were to travel the "Mississippi district." They went through the long wilderness from Nashville to Natchez, camping out and taking the frontier hardships, until, at Fort Gibson, they met Bowman, with Blackman and Lesley, preachers in Mississippi, now about returning.

Young had two years among the lowest people of the whole frontier, many of them criminals and refugees. Axley was now here, and who but Lorenzo Dow! This strange man seems omnipresent. Axley cut and hewed pine timbers, borrowed a yoke of oxen, and hauled them, made a raising-bee and covered the house with shingles of his own making. He built a pulpit, cut doors and windows, bought floor boards with money raised to get him new clothes, and soon had seats. He then invited the people to come and hear him preach, and they crowded to hear. Reading the rules, he offered, if they would conform to these, to take them into the Church, but not otherwise. Eighteen joined the first day. This first Methodist building in Louisiana was named "Axley Chapel" by a citizen who said that, in building it, Axley had "so

behaved that neither man nor devil could find fault with him." This was on the Wichita circuit.

When Axley came back to Mississippi, which he had left as a full, fine-looking man, he was shrunken and miserable ; his clothes were worn-out, and so were his spirits, for he could not talk with-



WILLIAM WINANS, D. D.

out weeping. He soon had new clothes, lively spirits, and the condition due to a victor in a hard-won field.

The greatest of the Methodists of the Southwest now appears. William Winans, born in 1788, near Braddock's Grave, Pa., was left, at two years, an orphan. His gifted mother taught him to

read well two books, the Bible and the Pilgrim's Progress. At eighteen, he had his only schooling in thirteen days and a half.

The two books had formed and filled his mind. In 1808, he preached on the Limestone circuit, Kentucky, and the next year on the Vincennes, Indiana. Then we find him in the Southwest, the right man for the region, and here he for forty-five years employed his wonderful energies of mind and body. His personal appearance was striking. In his later years he became feeble, yet, when he could hardly sit upon a saddle, he would preach with wonderful power. "His spirit glowed like some eternal flame upon the altar of a ruined temple. In 1844, he was for the ninth time a delegate to the General Conference. In the Separation of that year he took a lively interest, being himself a slave-holder. He was then thin and weather-beaten, negligent of dress, his collar, without stock or cravat, slouching about his neck. In this shagbark exterior was a mind of strange energy, grasping and handling the most difficult of subjects, and uttering itself in a rhetoric equal to that of our best writers. He died in 1857, but his influence in his region has outlived the storms of war.

We have noticed the coming of Methodism into Mississippi. Nolley's work was not yet done. He labored there during the war, following the new settlers and reclaiming them from barbarism. One day he saw fresh wagon tracks and overtook a settler just placing his family on his intended homestead. "Another Methodist preacher! I left Virginia for Georgia to get clear of them. There they got my wife and daughter, and I came here, and here is one before my wagon is unloaded!"

"My friend, if you go to heaven, you'll find Methodist preachers there; if you go to hell, I'm afraid you'll find some there, and you see how it is on earth, so you had better make terms with us and be at peace." Nolley, in 1814, was in Louisiana, on Bowman's trail. He was rudely treated. A planter drove him from his fire.

Others took him to the bayou to duck him, when a stout negress rescued him with a hoe and took him back in triumph.

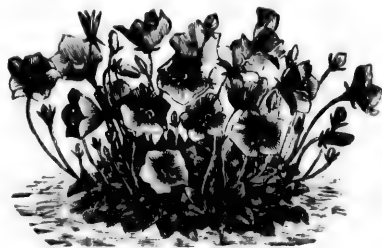
He came to Conference and was re-appointed to the same field. In the end, November, on a cold, dreary day, he parted from Griffin, his nearest comrade. The next day he went on, and at night reached an Indian village, but he had to cross a raging creek or stay with the Indians. An Indian showed him the way, but after crossing he was thrown from his horse, which swam back to the Indian on the other bank. Nolley left all with his guide, and set out to walk two miles to a house for shelter. Wet and weary, he went a mile through the woods and lay down to die. His work was done. His muddy knees and some marks in the soft ground showed how he had commended his soul to God, and then, composing himself, with one hand on his breast and the other at his side, had quietly passed away. So a traveler the next day found him. His body was taken to the nearest house, and on Sunday was buried. His grave seems to have been left "to heaven's sweet rain" for forty years; it is now visited in "the fenceless old field" of Catahoula, as that of a martyr in the ministry of patience, faith and love.

A marked event now opened the way of this great, growing Methodism of the West to a work among the Indians, and finally to the Missionary Society of the Church. John Stewart was a drunken negro in Marietta, Ohio, and, in sullen remorse and despair of life as worth living, he was on his way to the river to drown himself, when he caught the voice of a preacher. He went to the church door, and gained new ideas of hope, and life, and duty. In a week he was a converted man. With a new heart to do good, he determined to give to evangelizing the Indians the life now rescued and made clean. With Bible and hymn book, for he could read and sing, he started for the Indians to the Northwest. His singing was a pleasant introduction, often calming the fiercer sav-

ages, and his attitude of prayer was treated with reverence. Among the Wyandottes he found an interpreter, Jonathan Pointer, a negro captured, when a youth, in Virginia.

Stewart's first congregation was one woman, his second, two aged Indians, Big Tree and Mary; but soon the little band of Wyandottes came under his influence. Interest in the effort grew rapidly, and Jane Trimble was its valuable patron. Some of the Wyandottes carried the tidings to their kindred, near Malden, in Canada. Two Indian preachers went there, Peter Jones, John Sunday, and others were raised up, and soon thousands were there receiving instruction. In the states there are, to-day, about seven thousand Indian Methodists, more than half the number being in the Indian Territory.

White helpers went to Stewart, and Harriet Stubbs, sister of Mrs. M'Lea, gave herself to the task of teaching them. She seemed to them an angel from heaven, and they gave her a name—pretty redbird. She, in teaching the Indian girls, made them of her own temper and feeling. Big Tree, the second hearer, was the first convert, and soon four other chiefs joined him. Of these, two, Between-the-logs and Mononeue, became preachers in their own style, eloquent and effective. Three years after this lonely crusade of John Stewart, the Missionary Society was formed to take the Indian missions into the general care of the Church and to go beyond these, and abroad in the earth.



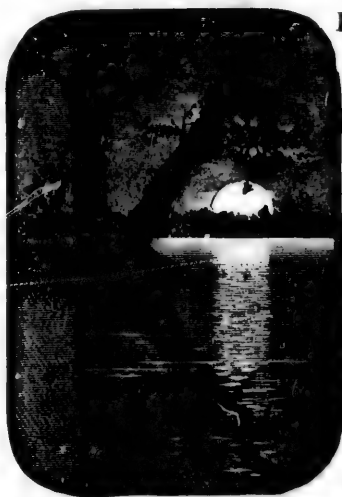
verence.
Pointer,

nd, two
band of
ort grew
e of the
alden, in
s, John
ds were
y, about
nber be-

sister of
m. She
r a name
ade them
rer, was
Of these,
in their
s lonely
rmed to
urch and

CHAPTER XV.

Legislation and Usage.



INDLY turn from tracing the spread of the Church over the nation to a rehearsal of its structure and management. We shall see what means were taken to prevent all straggling and disorganization. In 1820, half of the members of the Church were living beyond the Alleghanies. A much larger proportion is found there to-day, the center of Methodism being now a little west of Cincinnati, rather beyond the center of national population. The center of influence and character was still at Baltimore. If the General Conference, which was a gathering of all the Conferences, were held in the East, the convenience of access would cause the eastern preachers greatly to outnumber all others. Thus, of one hundred and twenty-nine at the opening in 1808, half, or sixty-three, were from the two central Conferences, the Baltimore and the Philadelphia. Some of the remoter Conferences already appeared by delegates, for a plan of doing so had, in the year before, been sent around to the Annual Conferences and they seemed to think it would be at once adopted. So it was, after much debate and even being once defeated.

The General Conference was to be composed of delegates, not

more than one for every five, or less than one for every seven members of each Annual Conference. Thus thirty-seven eight or nine could send but seven delegates. This body, so composed, had full powers to make all rules and regulations for the Church. The limit of its action was fixed by certain "Restrictive Rules." It could not change the Articles of Religion, the Ratio of Representation nor the General Rules. It could not abolish the Itinerancy, the General Superintendency, or the Right of Appeal, by preacher or member, nor could it divert the income of the Book Concern or the Chartered Fund margin to anything but the relief of preachers and their families. These Restrictive Rules can be changed by two-thirds of the General Conference at the joint recommendation of all the Annual Conferences. They, with the Articles of Religion and the General Rules, form our Church Constitution. In 1832, the Articles of Religion were made absolutely unchangeable; the other Restrictive Rules may now be changed by three-fourths of the Annual Conferences and two-thirds of the General Conference. The General Superintendency by Bishops is unchangeable. From time to time changes in all other respects have been discussed, yet almost nothing has been changed. The ratio of representation has been made to agree with the growth of the Church to prevent an unwieldy magnitude of the General Conference, and it is now one for forty-five and one for a remnant of thirty. Laymen become members of it—two for each Conference. Beyond that, few serious changes have taken place.

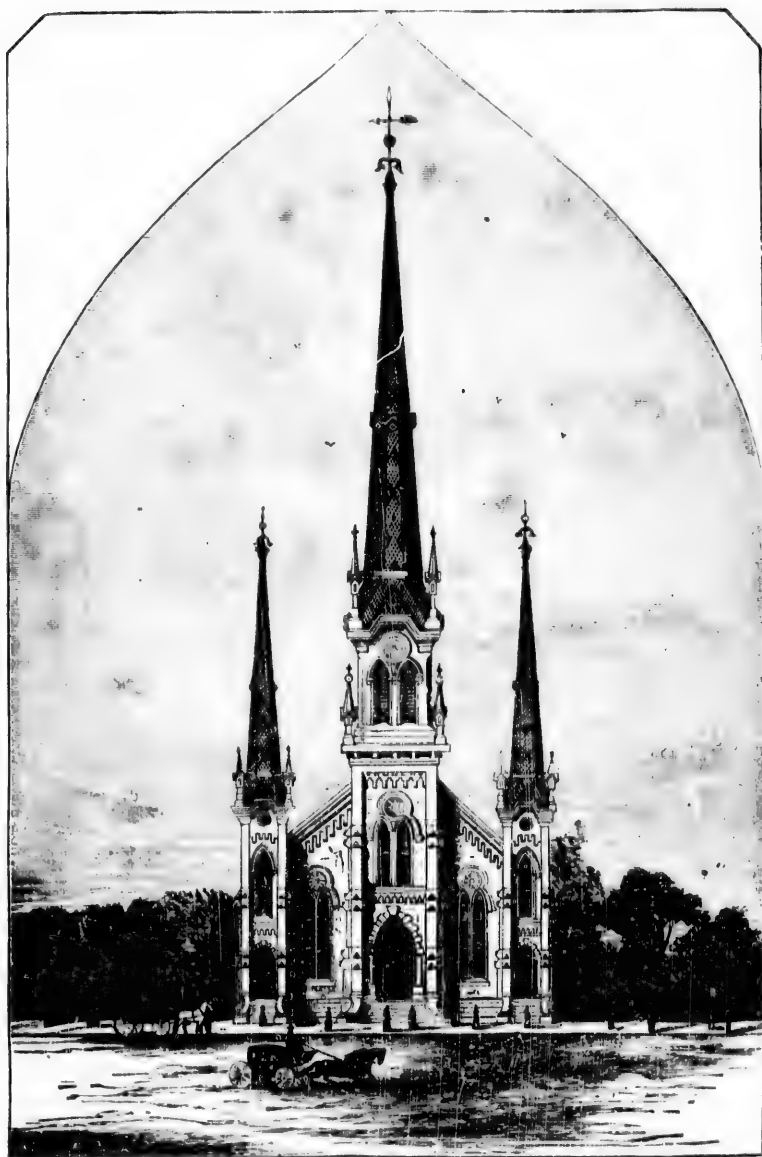
Many years before this session (1791), Coke had made proposals to Bishop White, of Philadelphia, for a union of the Methodist Episcopal with the Protestant Episcopal. It was an inquiry as to the possibility of the thing, and was personal and confidential. About this time, it came upon the house tops and to Coke's damage. He explained the matter, that he had in his plan carefully secured the independence of his own Church and that his hope had been to

enlarge the Methodist field of action. His approaches were not successful, and he was now glad they were not. "I do not now believe such a junction desirable." Warmest greetings were exchanged with the British Conference, each assuring the other that there was "no separation but the great Atlantic."

Whatcoat had just died (1806) and Asbury alone was Bishop. As there were now seven Conferences, it was proposed to elect one for each and make him local—as Bishop Taylor is now in Africa. However, McKendree alone was elected. For the first time, an arrangement was made to circulate tracts and the Book Concern was to print a thousand dollars' worth for free distribution. A thousand copies of the Discipline for South Carolina were ordered to be printed, with the omission of everything relating to slavery, that ugly question which was to have so many vexatious returns.

The glorious feature of this General Conference, as of most others, was its preaching. On Sunday there were five sermons, on week-days three or four, with many "an awful time of the power and presence of God." The most impressive sermon of all was by McKendree, quite fully reported by Bangs. The man, the fourth Bishop soon, was a brown backwoodsman, roughly dressed, with red flannel shirt painfully visible between vest and pantaloons. He began, awkwardly stammering, and Bangs fairly grieved for the honor of the Conference. The speaker warmed up to his work, his voice rang out, and the Holy Ghost was with the Word. Men fell as if shot, and Bangs felt his own heart melting and his strength giving way. He thought he saw a halo of glory around the preacher's head. McKendree had shown great administrative talent, and this sermon decided his election over the noble and generous Lee. Even then there was—to use that western dialect—no lack of Bishop timber. McKendree served in his high office twenty-seven years, dying at Nashville in 1835.

The first General Conference of delegates met in John Street



NEW MCKENDREE M. E. CHURCH, SOUTH, NASHVILLE, TENN.

church, New York, May 1, 1812. Ninety men were members. The New England Conference alone provided substitutes for its absentees, a usage at once adopted, and now every Conference elects two "reserves" to fill possible vacancies.

McKendree delivered an Episcopal address, or message, a usage still maintained, setting forth officially the state of the Church. He reported that, in seventeen states, the Canadas and the territories, he found about one hundred and ninety thousand members, with seven hundred traveling, and two thousand local preachers. The suggestions of his address were duly considered by the Conference. Axley, always strenuous, was defeated in his effort to make the manufacture, sale or use of whisky a bar to membership, but he secured a remonstrance and admonition against them, as also some notice of his other "burden," slavery.



ENOCH GEORGE.

Fifth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

After two days' debate, the election of Presiding Elders by the Conferences, instead of their appointment by the Bishop, was defeated by three votes. It came up in every General Conference until 1828.

In 1816, the General Conference counted one hundred and six members. A course of study was now prepared for ministerial candidates, and committees to examine them were to be appointed

in each Conference by the Bishop. At this session, Enoch George and Robert R. Roberts, the fifth and sixth Bishops, were elected.

A resolution was passed against "pews," which we saw introduced into New England. There was also some border to be adjusted between the preachers in Canada and Wesleyan missionaries from Nova Scotia. The Canadians preferred the American Church, and so jurisdiction over the Canadas was for the present retained. Axley, ever strenuous, tried in vain to get action on the distilling and retailing of whisky—that familiar term includes all intoxicants. In slavery, he did a little better. The committee sorrowfully reported that "the evil appears to be past remedy," and so, indeed, to human eye, it long seemed. Still progress was made. No slave-holder, whose state law allowed emancipation and the slave's after freedom, could hold office in the Church.

Henceforward, the course of the Story is amid growth and development upon the ground already gained, and few modifications of usage have occurred. On the whole, the most important has been the introduction of laymen to the councils of the Church. In America, it is usually called Lay Delegation. To appreciate the movement, we must go back almost fifty years before the time when that feature of economy was developed in the M. E. Church.

It is curious to notice how freedom affects the atmosphere of this continent. The people who first became inhabitants here, those, at least, who most gave it character, were come to the country for freedom's sake, to be rid of the oppressive, or, if not oppressive, the narrow policies of nations in the old world. All who came later, in whatever temper they may have come, inhaled the same air and, in breathing it, received the same temper.

Some, coming later, have been of a restless, lawless and malicious style, and have, in our day, provoked riot and disorder.

Still it is matter for grateful recognition that even the violent and dangerous have soon calmed down into peace and order. Strange, indeed, it is that the worst elements in European populations have soon ceased to give us trouble here. After a little, they have, except a few desperadoes, learned to unite freedom with loyalty and find reasonable range for activity inside of law. This freedom has fed the energies of the people and inspired them to subdue the continent, and, with all its evils, is a blessing. "The best cure for the evils which liberty produces is liberty." Men learn by results what fruit comes of lawlessness, and the wise and just "remnant" come to moderate and control the half-thinking and even vicious "majority."

This peculiarity of our American society accounts for the entire difference between Wesleyanism in England and Methodism in America. The English are on a land marked by social orders fixed for now a thousand years and more. When they came into Britain they brought earls, and thegns, and freemen, and thralls, and these early social orders have not wholly vanished. "Slaves cannot breathe in England," but even in the most humble there is a general contentment with the social order. The spirit of reverence for the clergy, the result of the Church being a part of the state, and clad with temporal authority as well as with spiritual control, is distinct and universal, even among Dissenters. It was thus very easy and natural for the affairs of the Wesleyan Connection to be under ministerial control.

We have seen how Wesleyanism began in the person of Wesley himself. The preachers were for fifty years his helpers, his employés, doing such work as he assigned them. The converts freely joined the societies, and the injunction which all accepted was "not to mend our Rules, but keep them."

The control of Wesley's successors over the interests of the Connection was of course natural and logical. Yet eminent laymen

were soon coming into the societies, and before long there came to be need of such talent as they were known to possess.

Jabez Bunting, who had such perception of the needs of Wesleyanism in the changes that time was bringing, first urged the admission of laymen to service in the missionary committee, making it consist of twenty-four clergymen and as many laymen. Gradually this method of composition was extended to all the committees dealing with funds. The Annuitant and Book Room Funds are now the only ones purely ministerial. Committees of this mixed membership meet before the session of the Conferences, both English and Irish, and review all expenditures for the previous year, with estimates for the coming year. So beneficial was the working of this experiment that the time plainly drew near for the farther entrance of laymen into the counsels of the Conference. Both wisdom and piety seemed promoted by their presence.

In 1875, the Conference resolved that "the time is approaching when a comprehensive plan should be devised for some direct and adequate representation of the laity, in the transactions of the business of the Conference, in consistency with the recognized principles of our economy and the principles of the Poll Deed." This last is that Deed of Declaration by which one hundred clergymen, duly elected, form the legal successors of Mr. Wesley. During the next year, legal counsel was taken as to what part of the management of affairs must be held to belong to the Legal Hundred. A satisfactory report was made and the business was divided in a very natural way. It is not needed here to give the division in all its items. When the Conference sits, as composed of ministers only, its attention is given to matters affecting only the pastoral or ministerial supervision of the Connection. Only the management of the Book Room is given to ministers alone, as growing out of their supervision of the connectional literature. When the ministers have concluded their work the laymen join them, and the

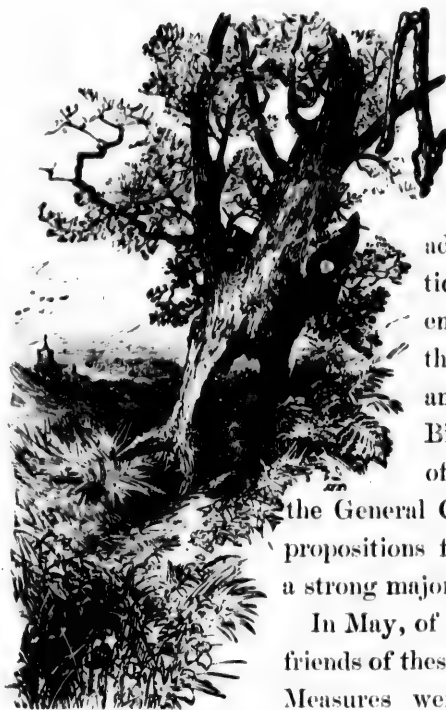
Conference thus formed is twice the size of our House of Representatives, more imposing than the House of Commons and almost as large, for the plan at first was that it should consist of two hundred and forty laymen and as many ministers. This Conference finds work enough to do in managing all the remaining interests of a great and growing Church. Of the lay representatives, one-eighth are by this mixed Conference elected from all parts of the Kingdom. The rest are elected by the combined votes of ministers and laymen in the district meetings. It will be noted that in Methodism "layman" is held to mean "any member of the Church who is not a member of an Annual Conference."

Lay representation in the Methodist Episcopal Church has a more eventful history. It was preceded by a serious division of the Church. Our economy had from the first put all legislative power in the hands of the itinerancy, and the appointments were made by the Bishop after consultation with Presiding Elders of his own selection. This had come from the fact that the very entrance of Methodism into this country had been of the nature of an invasion, peaceful and beneficent, but much like a military entrance and occupation. Its military likeness of organization and operation had given it great efficiency. The large majority of the preachers liked the system and worked under it in perfect harmony. Some found it too "patriarchal"—that is, despotic—for their tastes. Not that they complained of tyranny actually experienced, but they urged that, should the system at any time come to be managed by tyrannous hands, its facilities for oppression were alarming.

In 1820, an effort was made, not for the first time, to have the Presiding Elders elected by the Conferences. From this grew the Methodist Protestant Church. As Lay Delegation did not for fifty years become a fact in the Old Church, it seems better here to give the Story of the Methodist Church.

CHAPTER XVI.

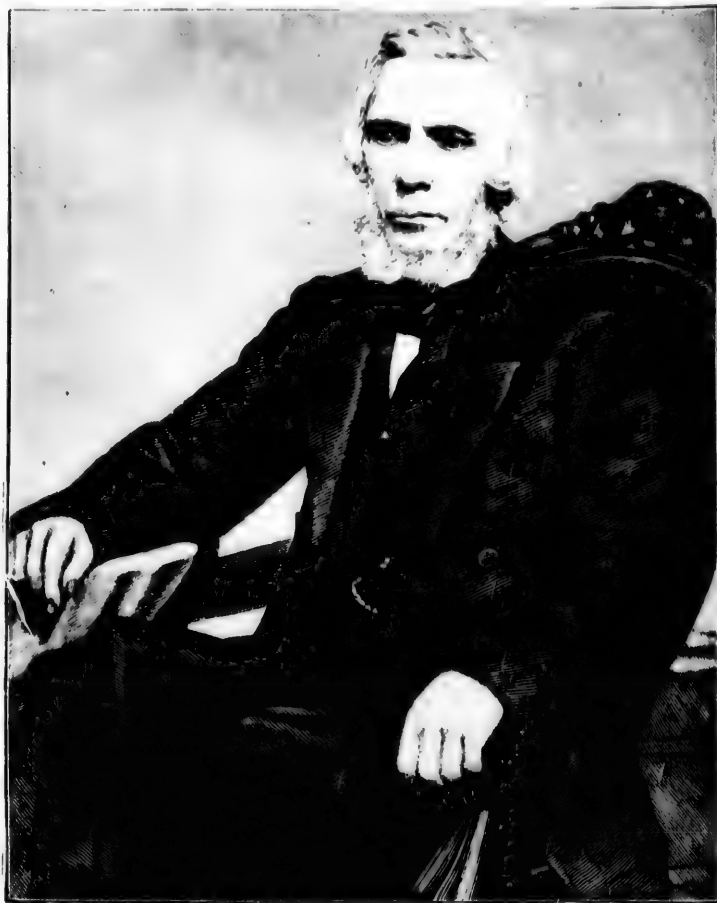
The Methodist Protestant Church.



AT the close of the General Conference of 1820, William S. Stockton, a leading layman in Trenton, N. J., began to publish *The Wesleyan Repository*, in advocacy of the representation of the laity in the Conferences, with a modification of the office of Presiding Elder and the abolition of that of Bishop. Petitions in behalf of these objects were sent to the General Conference of 1824, but all propositions for change were rejected by a strong majority.

In May, of that year, a meeting of the friends of these changes was in Baltimore. Measures were taken to publish *The Mutual Rights*—i. e., of ministry and members within the M. E. Church. Unions began to be formed within the Church, to promulgate the ideas above named. Articles in the *Mutual Rights*, which had absorbed the *Repository*, created warm feeling, and, as societies of unions went on forming, members were suspended or expelled, not for their ideas, but false and injurious

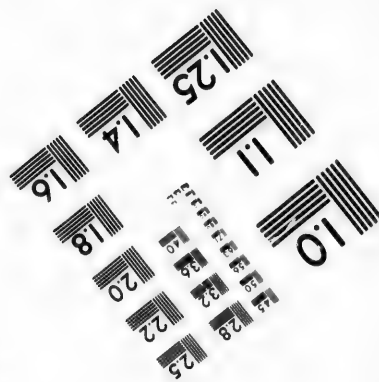
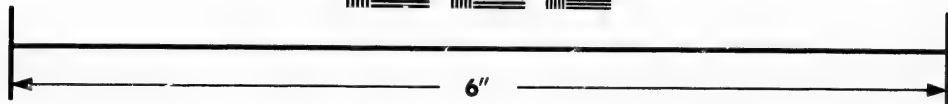
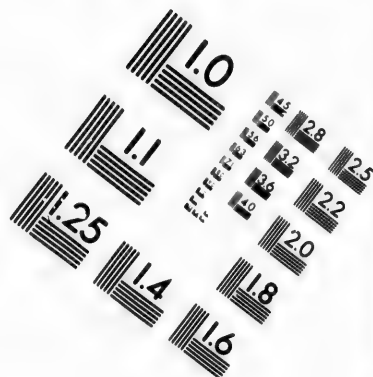
statements and for sowing discord. All appeals resulted in confirmation of sentence. One preacher, D. B. Dorsey, of the Baltimore Conference, was arraigned for such cause, though he



REV. THOMAS HEWLINGS STOCKTON, D. D.

An Eminent Minister of the Methodist Protestant Church.

and his friends claimed the exact point at issue was the right to organize at all for the promotion of reform. The expulsion of a number in Baltimore, on charges above named, was followed by



Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



cries of "persecution" for difference of opinion on Church government, and soon matters were moving more rapidly.

About fourteen preachers and two hundred members now, in the beginning of 1828, formed a society of "Associate Methodist Reformers." Toward the end of the year, sixty delegates from all parts of the country, meeting in convention at Baltimore, set forth their grievances to the General Conference of the following year.

This body offered to restore all expelled or suspended persons to the Church, on condition that the *Mutual Rights* be discontinued and the unions within the Church be dissolved. This offer was rejected and the controversy went on growing and spreading. At a General Convention held in Baltimore, in the same year, 1828, Nicholas Snethen, the powerful opponent of O'Kelly, was president, and Stockton, who eight years earlier had begun *The Wesleyan Repository*, was secretary.

It was decided not to abandon the prosecution of an object which they considered of vital importance to the future welfare of the Church. Articles of association were framed, and a provisional organization, as "Associated Methodist Churches," was formed. Committees to draft a Constitution and Discipline, and to compile a Hymn Book, were appointed, and in two years the Convention was to meet again.

This second Convention, of 1830, contained fifty-seven ministers and as many laymen. They represented eighty ministers and about five thousand members.

The title of "Methodist Protestant Church" was adopted; a declaration of principles was made and provisions for regulating and controlling the Church were adopted.

Some things from the Mother Church were retained. The Articles of Religion and the General Rules were retained in full, together with the same routine of meetings and other means of

grace. The division of the territory into districts, circuits and stations was after the old style. The Ritual was retained, only that the Lord's Supper is not consecrated and the order of deacons was many years after, 1874, abolished.

Other things were changed. The offices of Bishop and Presiding Elder were abolished. Each district was to hold an Annual Conference composed of all its ordained ministers, electing annually its own presiding officer. The appointments of the preachers are made by committees of their own Conference. The General Conference, meeting once in seven years, is composed of ministers and laymen in equal numbers, one of each being chosen from each thousand of members. If any district has less than that number of members, it still has the two representatives. Office and suffrage are limited to white males in full connection and over twenty-one years of age.

No minister or member can be expelled for disseminating opinions, unless they be contrary to the plain Scripture. Classes elect annually their leaders, but, in failure of election, the pastor nominates and the class elect. In all this, the Methodist Protestants considered themselves not as seceding, but as expelled and as having by necessity formed the new Church for themselves and their children. Many ministers, who had warmly advocated reform, did not, when the crisis came, care to cross the Rubicon; so the new organization, being scant of preachers, made large use of local preachers, and its affairs were conducted with great energy. Soon an official organ was started, *The Methodist Protestant*, which has been published continuously to this time. A Book Concern was established.

A Superannuated Fund Society was chartered, whose investments are now over sixty thousand dollars. Educational efforts were made and seminaries and colleges designed. In 1834, the date of the first General Conference, there were fourteen Annual

Conferences, with five hundred preachers and twenty-seven thousand members. Soon another paper was started in the West, which finally became *The Methodist Recorder*, still published at Pittsburgh, *The Methodist Protestant* being published at Baltimore.

In 1846, the irrepressible conflict of slavery being then rife, the General Conference remanded the control of the subject to the Annual Conferences, declaring that they should make their own regulations covering the matter. There were then thirty-two Annual Conferences with some sixty thousand members. The General Conference now met every four years and at its next session, in 1850, the Madison College, at Uniontown, Penn., came into its possession. Within ten years the grim and restless Slavery Question entered. The college was in a free state, but with a southern faculty. The time was stormy and soon the college was suspended and another opened at Lynchburgh, Va. A missionary society was formed at Pittsburgh in 1854.

We noticed that the right of voting and office-holding had been given to white males only. In 1857, a Convention of the Churches North and West was held at Cincinnati. They agreed not to attend the General Conference, coming in 1860, at Lynchburgh. They prepared for it a memorial, setting forth that, unless the word "white" were stricken from the Constitution and slave-holding and slave-trading be made a bar to membership North and South, they would secede. Of course they seceded, taking with them about half the entire Church. There was no complaint or discontent apart from the demand just indicated. In the order of events, slavery soon disappeared. In 1862, a Convention was held by which a General Conference was appointed to meet, in 1866, at Pittsburgh. Before it met, slave-holding had ceased to be a "bar" to anything. This Conference adopted the name of "The Methodist Church." An effort was made to gather

in the Wesleyans and other smaller Methodist bodies, but, from opposition to secret societies on the part of the Wesleyans and from other reasons, the effort was not successful.

In 1871, there being no reason for longer separation, negotiations for reunion began on the part of the Methodist Church. In 1877, a Convention of each Church met, in Baltimore, and after a careful discussion a basis of union was fixed. The Conventions, on a pleasant day in May, filed from the churches where they had met to the corner of Lombard and Fremont streets, and thence walked arm in arm to Starr Church. The next day the Methodist Church ceased to exist, being re-absorbed by the Methodist Protestant Church after a separation of twenty years. It had gathered seven hundred and fifty-eight preachers of both classes, and fifty-eight thousand members. It had a Book Concern in Pittsburgh and a college at Adrian, Mich.

Meanwhile, the Protestant Church had suffered severely by the war. The paper at Baltimore lost more than half its circulation. The Secretary of War allowed it, on account of its strictly neutral character, to be forwarded to the southern lines by way of Fortress Monroe, under a flag of truce, but was not sent beyond those lines and it soon ceased to be forwarded.

At the General Conference in Georgetown, 1862, the southern Conferences were unable to attend, and, before the war was over, the southern churches were burned or ruinously neglected.

At the same place, in 1862, another General Conference was held with quite a full representation. At this Conference, a resolution was passed of acquiescence in the state of the country, and acknowledging the existing government as the true and lawful ruling power of this nation, and advising prayers for its welfare, "that we may lead quiet and peaceable lives, in all godliness and honesty."

The M. E. Church South had now adopted the scheme of the

M. P. Church for lay representation, and there were grounds of sympathy between the two bodies, partly from having both alike suffered severely from the war. In 1867, Bishop McTyeire, of the Church South, communicated, through the Rev. Dr. Deems, overtures from the General Conference of his own Church, looking to a union of the two bodies and proposing the appointment from each of commissioners to consummate such union. A Convention was called to consider the matter, and to this came commissioners from the Church South who proposed the union aforesaid. After careful examination, there were found fifteen points of difference between the two Churches. The commissioners had been appointed, not to adjust differences, but simply to receive into their Church the M. P. Church as a body. In this way the scheme failed and no farther action was ever taken, though many ministers and Churches afterwards seceded and joined the Church South.

In 1870, Doctors Eddy and Lanahan, from the Methodist Episcopal Church, visited the General Conference in Baltimore, bearing fraternal greetings, and asking, in view of sameness of doctrine and of historic memories, if there could not be a closer bond of union. It was agreed that there be interchange of delegates, avoidance of irritating controversy and coöperation in missionary work. Delegates from the Church South were treated with like courtesy.

At the General Conference of 1874, legislation was asked on the sale and use of whisky. To this it was answered that the settled policy of the Church was not to legislate on moral and political subjects. That belongs to the local organizations. Since the union with the Methodist Church, in 1877, the name and policy of the Methodist Protestant Church remain the same. It has a Book Concern in Baltimore, and a paper, *The Methodist Protestant*, and one in Pittsburgh, with *The Methodist Recorder*. At West-

minster, Md., a college was founded, in 1867, which provides for a certain amount of theological study. There is a college at Yadkin, N. C., and at Bowdon, Ga., besides that at Adrian, Mich., which came to it from the Methodist Church.

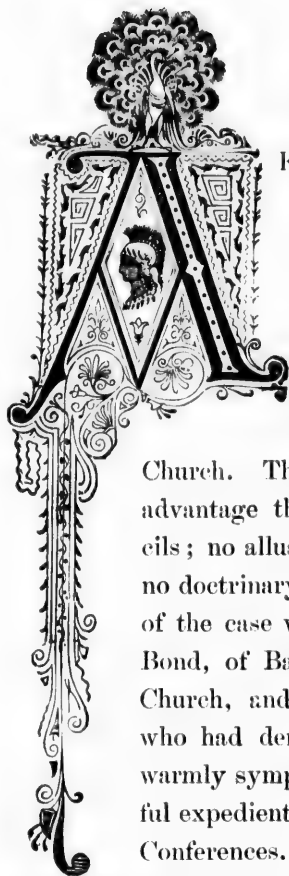
At this present time, the Methodist Protestant Church reports fifteen hundred traveling, and a thousand local, preachers, with one hundred and thirty thousand members. Its position in the land and among other Churches is excellent. If, for reasons that appear in this outline, it has not the magnitude that some other Methodist bodies have reached, it is none the less respectable. In some happy day, when all Methodism shall be a unit, it will blend and bless its kindred.



FIRST MEETING-HOUSE IN OHIO.

CHAPTER XV.

Lay Delegation and the Pacific Coast.



FTER the organization of the Methodist Protestant Church the question of lay representation in the Methodist Episcopal Church was hardly named for twenty years. Just before the General Conference met, in 1852, a Convention of laymen was held in Philadelphia to devise a mode of bringing it once more before the Church. The ground of such action was the profit and advantage thereby to be gained in the Church councils; no allusion was made to any abstract rights, and no doctrinary argument was used. This presentation of the case was wise and fortunate. Dr. Thomas E. Bond, of Baltimore, one of the ablest men in the Church, and a formidable opponent of the radicals, who had demanded such representation as a right, warmly sympathized with them, regarding it as a useful expedient, and advocating as a help to the Annual Conferences.

In 1852, the petitions of the laymen were denied, and at the next General Conference, in 1856, they were disregarded. In 1860, such progress had been made that a vote, both lay and ministerial, was ordered to be taken upon the measure within two years. This vote was not favorable, but the laymen who led the movement were irrepressible.

A journal of high character, *The Methodist*, was started to advocate the cause, and *Zion's Herald*, of Boston, and the *North-western Advocate*, of Chicago, declared in its favor. In 1863, a large Convention of laymen was held in New York, and, in 1864, another was held in Philadelphia at the same time with the session of the General Conference, so as to present at once a petition. The same process of convention and petition was repeated at Chicago in 1868. At this last date, a lay and ministerial vote was ordered and provision was made that, if the vote proved favorable, delegates should be chosen so as to take their seats at the General Conference of 1872. Very favorable was the vote, the laity voting for the measure two to one, and more than three-fourths of the ministerial vote being in the affirmative. The new order was introduced at Brooklyn in 1872, and laymen took their seats with powers equal to those of the ministerial delegates. Two laymen are chosen from each Annual Conference, unless the Conference has but one ministerial delegate, in which case there is but one lay delegate. The lay delegates are chosen at the session of the Annual Conference next preceding that of a General Conference. Each circuit or station chooses a delegate to the Electoral Conference, as it is called, and this body chooses the delegates to the General Conference.

The next interesting event, in order of time, as our Story goes, is the entrance of Methodism upon the Pacific coast.

The Flathead Indians of Oregon had heard from traders of some "great book" which gave the white man his superior power and character. Four of them started upon the long journey to the East to learn the truth of the account, and to see if they could get the benefit of the book. They were four months in passage from Oregon to St. Louis. Making known their errand to General Clarke, of the Lewis and Clarke expedition, they called out great interest among Christian people and went back, two of them

having died at St. Louis, assured that a knowledge of the Book should soon be given them by living teachers.

There was, at that time, attending school at Wilbraham, under Dr. Fisk, a Canadian, Jason Lee, preparing to give his life to missionary work among the Indians of Canada, in the employ of the British Wesleyan Missionary Society. To such work he was well fitted. He was strong, prudent, clear of head and courageous in enterprise. Dr. Fisk heard of the errand of the Flat-heads and was at once sure that Lee was their man.

Lee did not wait for a second call. He started at once, taking from St. Louis the trail of the Fur Company and spending the summer of 1834 in his journey to the Columbia. The site chosen for his mission was on the Willamette, twelve miles below the present city of Salem. Here he labored two years and made a very hopeful beginning. In 1838, he returned to the East and devoted a year to securing aid for his mission. Then, with a large company of settlers, as well as missionaries, he went back to Oregon by way of Cape Horn. The effort was in good time, not only for the good of the Indians, but quite as much for that of the whites.

The splendid region was now rapidly filling with settlers, and soon Lee had the "Oregon Manual Labor School," near Salem, and a large attendance of Indian children. He had selected this place at the request of the Hudson's Bay Fur Company, they wishing him to be outside of British territory, which they then claimed to be bounded by the Columbia river. The other missionaries formed centers of settlements.

In 1842, steps were taken to form a territorial government. The whites numbered only two hundred and forty, but by the energy of the missionaries and the timely aid of their Presbyterian brethren the authorities were aroused to the importance of saving Oregon to the United States.

The American claim to the region rested on the Louisiana purchase from France, which was held to go as far north as $54^{\circ} 40'$. The British claim rested on discovery, on occupation of Vancouver, and on the sale of Astoria to the Hudson's Bay Company by Astor's agent. At length, in 1846, an agreement was made, fixing at 49° north latitude. It is understood that the missionaries saved the region to the United States. They certainly "preempted a vast region to Methodism."

In 1848, the Oregon and California Mission Conference was established, embracing within its limits the entire Pacific slope, and William Roberts was put in charge of it. He had already been two years in the country, had explored California and founded a Church at San Francisco, a little town then half Spanish.

The region embraced in Roberts' charge now contains five states and six or seven Conferences. He served in the Northwest fully thirty years, making for himself a record most creditable for energy, prudence and fidelity. He then settled in Portland in the heart of the land for the benefit of which he had labored. Meanwhile, the Manual Labor School has become, by change of property and place, the Willamette University at Salem.

In 1849, a man of singular skill in the management of Indians, J. H. Wilbur, came into Oregon. The fond and reverent title of "Father" he has worn among them for a life-time. In Oregon, to-day, the Methodists far outnumber any other denomination.

Closely connected with the coming of Methodism into Oregon is its coming into California. Soon after Roberts had formed a Church in San Francisco, gold was discovered, and a rush from the East, such as the world had not seen since the Crusades, began. If ever "emigration tends to barbarism," it surely did in those days. Gains, expenditures and wastes were enormous. The miners grew wild and the state of society was alarming. It was time for heroic exertion. Not a day was lost. The Roman

Catholics had thirty-one "Missions" before Roberts had, in 1847, formed the first Protestant organization in California, that at San Francisco, a society of six persons.

In 1848, Isaac Owen and William Taylor, now Bishop of Africa, were sent out. Taylor is said to have bought, before starting, a church and to have had it shipped from Baltimore to San Francisco.

The next spring, Roberts had the timber for a church split out and shayed in Oregon (there was no saw-mill between the North Pole and the Isthmus) and came down with his timber. Houses of any kind were then few: the fast-coming throngs of gold-seekers were living in tents. A lot was taken on Powell street, and on it began the erection of the first Protestant church in California, and there to-day stands the fitly-named First Methodist Episcopal Church, the third church building erected on the same site.



FIRST M. E. CHURCH, SAN FRANCISCO.

The third church building erected on the same site.

September 21, 1849, Taylor arrived, and the little company gave him a hearty greeting. Mr. Owen came overland and began preaching, under a tree in Grass Valley, on the same day when Taylor began his ministry in San Francisco. Owen reached Sacramento about the middle of October, and to that place Taylor's Baltimore church was shipped, becoming the second Protestant edifice in the land. It arrived

ad, in 1817,
that at San

Bishop of
ght, before
Baltimore to



FRANCISCO.
on the same site.

eting. Mr.
ree in Grass
stry in San
le of Octo-
as shipped,
It arrived

before Owen, and a lot had been taken, in which he preached under a tree. Pointing to the lumber, he said: "We will occupy our new church next Sunday," and so he did.

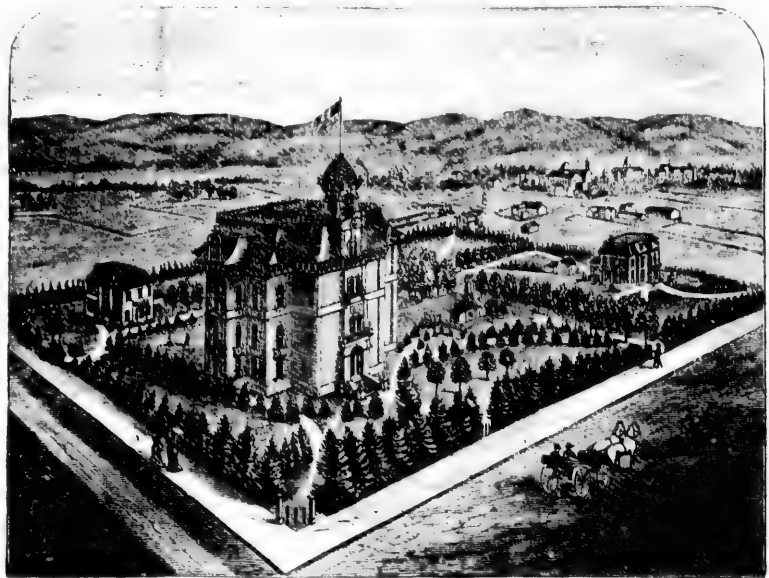
The church at San Francisco was now dedicated, but what church ever held William Taylor? He went to the rudest, most crowded corners, for his "parish" meant every place that he could reach, and to the mines and villages. Like the early missionary at Malinesbury, like so many in the great Methodist movement, his voice was his church bell. It rang out far and clear "The Royal Proclamation," publishing to every creature the glad tidings of salvation. Wesley never had two preachers more active than Owen and Taylor.

Religion seemed to take on an energy equal to Mammon's, which is saying much, at least for those times. Men began to preach who had never before felt, or heeded, their call. Laymen in the mining camps formed societies and conducted the meetings. Those familiar with such a state of society as hunger for gold produces on a frontier can understand how salutary were these gracious efforts.

The next year came helpers, the Revs. Simonds, Bannister and Briggs. Bannister inaugurated the educational work by opening a school at San José. In the following year, the University of the Pacific was chartered at Santa Clara, and Bannister was in charge of it. Other preachers arrived, and, in 1852, California and Oregon formed separate Annual Conferences. California, itself, has since been divided, the southern part of the state having become populous. Both Conferences contain about fifteen thousand members. There is a Book Depository with a well-sustained advocate. The University of southern California has just entered upon its career at Los Angeles. Methodism has the credit of having saved the state to freedom and of having mitigated the barbarism of its rudest period. For a long time it was

equal to all other Protestant denominations together. It grappled promptly with the Chinese Question, and it is natural to connect its Chinese work there with its own planting and training on the coast.

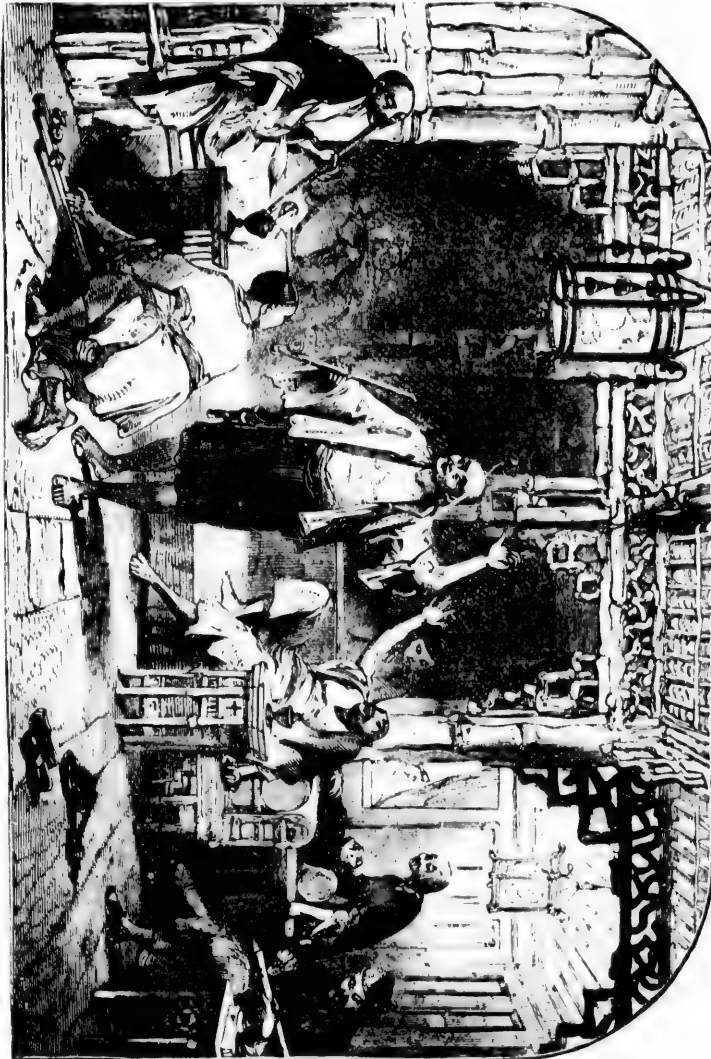
Chinese laborers and traders were early drawn to California, and an overfull home-land could easily spare as many as could get footing in the new country. They brought with them their



UNIVERSITY OF THE PACIFIC.

virtues of industry, quietude and thrift, and found abundant employment in a great variety of callings—from mining to household service and the laundry. They of course brought with them their heathenism and its train of vices. Now the heathen were not only at our doors, but positively entering them. The feelings of other Churches were aroused, and Christian efforts in the behalf of these strangers were begun.

In 1868, Otis Gibson, who had been for ten years missionary at Fah Chau, China, was transferred to California. In two years



CHINESE OPIUM SMOKERS.

he had succeeded in so awaking among the Christian people of the coast a sense of duty to these heathen in their midst that money

was given and schools, both Sunday and evening, were organized. Soon a good mission-house was built on Washington street. Two of its stories are for school-rooms and a chapel. The third story is the asylum, managed for the benefit of females. It is a valuable property and stands like an oasis of life and verdure to cheer and save a poor, weary, much-abused race. Its present value is thirty thousand dollars.

It is often happening that tourists, at San Francisco, visit China Town merely to see how wretched heathen can be in their vices, their darkness and despair, and the most morbid hankering for misery can there be gratified. It is better for the taste and for the heart to visit the Mission. There one will find the morn rising bright and hopeful.

At this date, 1887, the missionary, the Rev.

T. J. Masters, is a man long in China in the service of the English Wesleyan Society, and knowing well the dialect of the emigrants, and able to carry on the wise and skillful work which Dr. Gibson, by failing health, has been obliged to drop. He has Mrs. Masters and Mrs. Walker as assistants, with four teachers and six native helpers. There are seventy members of the Church and three hundred scholars in the schools.

The Japanese have this year a separate mission. They have not



REV. OTIS GIBSON, D. D.

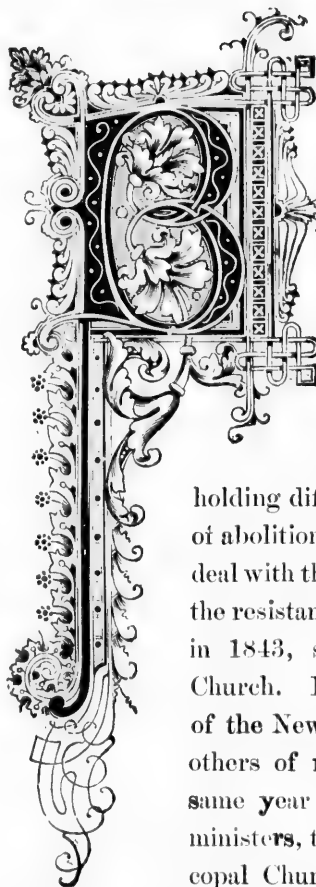
quite wished to be identified with the Chinese, and they have this year raised a sum of money for procuring a house of their own. The Rev. M. C. Harris, an ardent lover of the Japanese, among whom he has for fifteen years been laboring, an able man, and a specially-gifted singer, by which, with a fine personal appearance, he was very efficient as evangelist in Japan, has taken charge of the Japanese work. Thus Methodism has no reproach of not caring for the heathen within our door. A similar work is in progress at Portland, Oregon, and at Seattle, Tacoma and elsewhere. At Denver, and in nearly every town where Chinese abound, something is doing for their welfare.



FUJISAN, FROM A VILLAGE ON THE TOKAIDO.

CHAPTER XVIII.

The Methodist Episcopal Church South.



BEFORE the most serious division that has ever occurred in American Methodism, the separation of the Church South, a secession had taken place for a reason precisely opposite to that which caused the latter. In 1833, the American Antislavery Society was formed, and the flame of abolition sentiment began to blaze.

The best men of the Church were holding different views, both as to the expediency of abolition and the competency of the Church to deal with the matter. The efforts of one class and the resistance of the other caused controversy and, in 1843, several ministers withdrew from the Church. Foremost of these was Orange Scott, of the New England Conference; with him were others of marked ability and position. In the same year they formed an organization of thirty ministers, twenty being from the Methodist Episcopal Church, representing about six thousand members. In the system adopted, the Churches were Congregational in policy. The Annual Conference is composed of all ordained traveling ministers and of one layman from each society.

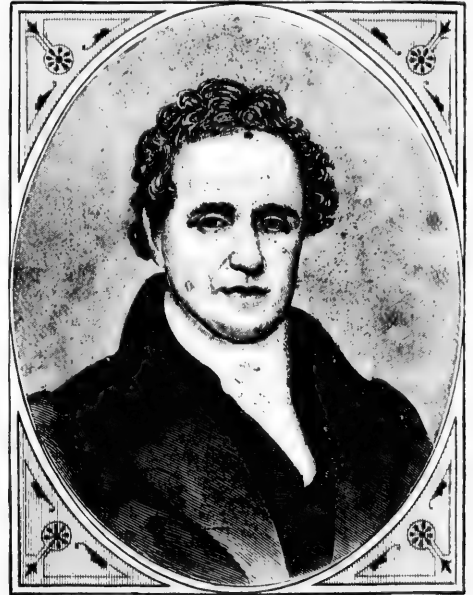
There is a stationing committee, of which the president of the Conference (which elects him annually) is chairman. There is a General Conference, composed of one minister and one layman for every five hundred members.

Among the things forbidden in the terms of membership is not only holding, buying or selling slaves, but even claiming that it is right to do so, the only instance in Methodism of one's opinion becoming a condition of membership. Also, "We will on no account tolerate our ministers and members holding connection with secret, oath-bound societies."

The growth of the body has been slow, and after thirty years—i. e., in 1874, it was no larger than in 1844, having about eighteen thousand members. Some of its ablest leaders, when slavery had been destroyed by the war, saw no reason for longer absence from the Church of their youth. Scott had already died, trusting that "my old friends in the Methodist Episcopal Church will remember me with kindness, sympathy and love." Lee, Matlack, Prindle, as did near a hundred other ministers and thousands of members, came back to the Mother Church. The Wesleyan Connection had a large interest in Adrian College, and in Knox College, Wheaton, Ill., both of which they lost. They have now about three hundred traveling preachers, and as many local, with about twenty-five thousand members.

This movement was in the opposite direction from that which resulted in the formation of the Church South. The story of the latter is longer, more eventful and more serious. The efforts of the Methodist Episcopal Church against slavery have already been noted as we have passed along. We ought to notice that, in 1808, the Discipline was made to forbid "the buying or selling of men, women or children, with an intention to enslave them." This was considered to refer to the African Slave Trade (which was, two years later, declared by Congress to be felonious) and not to the

transfer of those already in slavery. As years went on, the Baltimore Conference, being on the border between free and slave states, and having territory in both, became a bulwark, an earnest opposer of slavery in the Church. Thus it refused ordination to local preachers who held slaves. Farther south, where slaves could not be freed within the state, ministers and members alike were holding slaves. At the time of the secession of the Wesleyan body, just named, the air was becoming highly charged with the electricity that, twenty years later, burst into thunder, smoke and flame. In the Baltimore Conference, the Rev. F. A. Harding had been suspended from the ministry for not freeing slaves belonging to his wife. The General Conference of 1844 confirmed the action of the Baltimore Conference, in the face of Maryland and Disciplinary law.



REV. JAMES OSGOOD ANDREW, D. D.

*The Ninth Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and
Second Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church South.*

It thus became clear that the prevailing temper of this General Conference was antislavery.

James Osgood Andrew, the ninth Bishop, had become connected with slavery. There was a girl bequeathed him by a lady, and she refused freedom; a boy, left to his daughter by her mother, whom he could not free in Georgia; also slaves legally his, but now secured to his second wife, who had owned them before her

marriage, and these could not by law be freed in Georgia. Neither the Bishop nor Harding had ever bought or sold a slave. The precise form of objection to the relation of the Bishop to his slaves was that it made him unacceptable to some Conferences, and that a Bishop ought to be acceptable everywhere.

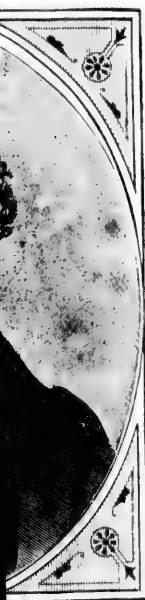
The Bishops, as a body, desired no action, as they could arrange to give Bishop Andrew service in the South, where he was acceptable. The result was that a resolution was passed by one hundred and eleven votes to sixty-nine, declaring that the Bishop's connection with slavery would embarrass and in some places prevent, the exercise of his office as itinerant general superintendent, and that "It is the sense of this General Conference that he desist from the exercise of his office so long as this impediment remains." The affirmative vote was wholly northern; the negative almost wholly southern.

A Declaration was at once made by the southern delegates to the effect that this virtual suspension of Bishop Andrew, under no charge of violation of law, will produce in the South "a state of things rendering the continuance of the jurisdiction of this General Conference over Conferences there inconsistent with the success of the ministry in the South." There was, of course, from the minority a full protest against the above resolution.

Thus Bishop Andrew could not preside in the northern Conferences and, if the southern acquiesced in his suspension, Methodism could not prosper in their region. Access to the plantations would be refused and hundreds of thousands of negroes be deprived of Gospel service.

In truth, no human power could avert the coming separation. Bishop Andrew was "not its cause, but only its occasion." He said: "If I could secure the peace of the Church by resigning, I would gladly do it." He was in the front of the tidal wave, but it would have rolled all the same without him. There could be

n, the Balti-
e and slave
t, an earnest
ordination to
where slaves
members alike



W, D. D.
opal Church, and
al Church South.

this General

ome connect-
y a lady, and
her mother,
ally his, but
a before her

no compromise, and it remained to do peacefully the inevitable—*i. e.*, to separate.

It was at best an awkward thing to do. A plan was at once formed by which southern territory was kept from entrance by northern preachers, and all vested properties were to be divided according to the ratio of preachers in the two bodies. One hardly cares to read the items. This plan was unanimously accepted by the South.

In May, 1845, a Convention was held at Louisville. Bishops Soule, Andrew and Morris were present. The Church South was formed, and its first General Conference was called for May, 1846, at Petersburg, Va. Bishops Soule and Andrew were asked to become the Bishops of the new Church; the latter entered its service at once, the former did so in the following year. At the first General Conference, William Capers and Robert Paine were made Bishops, and all arrangements needful to the working of a Church were completed. Lovick Pierce was chosen to present to the next General Conference of the M. E. Church the Christian and brotherly greetings of the new Church. "We will still be brethren beloved."

The next General Conference of the M. E. Church was of temper different from the last. It gave Lovick Pierce no official recognition; it repudiated the Plan of Separation. Pierce's last words were that the next advance must come from the North, but friendly overtures could be renewed by the northern Church at any time.

The Church South brought suit in the Supreme Court of the United States to recover the property conceded in the Plan of Separation. The decision was that neither of the existing Churches could claim to be the original Church; that the Church South had not seceded, that it was simply a territorial convenience without change of doctrine or usage, and that the northern Church was

precisely the same. The Court therefore ordered an equitable division of all properties, seeing that in its view the separation was by agreement of both parties and the properties had been created and held by both before separation. Thus the affair was consummated.

The Church South had a rich endowment of the true spirit of Methodism. As we have seen, the early preachers found on its territory their most heroic field, and in general their most gratifying success. Its living preachers had more of preaching gifts than their brethren of the North. There was every prospect of steady growth in all the Church interests. Nor has the prospect proved vain and delusive; yet the Church South has, in fact, had a hard road to travel. Almost as soon as it had come into working order came the wide and ruinous war. In 1844, the number of communicants was four hundred and fifty thousand. In 1860, there were seven hundred and fifty-seven thousand two hundred and five, of whom more than one-fourth were colored. In 1872, the number was six hundred and fifty-four thousand one hundred and fifty-nine, and of these less than one in two hundred were colored. This came of the fact that the colored people had chosen to join other Methodist Churches, usually those of their own people. One of these Churches is the colored M. E. Church in America. Before the war, we see that more than two hundred thousand colored people were in the Church South. These were chiefly slaves who were in many states not allowed to hold meetings by themselves. As soon as the war was over, and they were free, they chose to be in societies by themselves. Some went into the African and Zion, others into "de ole John Wesley Church"—i. e., the Methodist Episcopal, of which they had kept the tradition, and which at once began to introduce schools and Churches among them. The leaders of the Church South thought it wiser, for such as remained with them, to form separate Churches.

In 1870, the General Conference of the Church South directed its Bishops to organize a new Church and to ordain for it Bishops when it had elected them. The above-named Church was organized at Nashville in 1874. It has five Bishops, six hundred and thirty-eight traveling, and about as many local, preachers and a hundred and twenty-five thousand members. The formation of such a Church accounts for the failure of the Church South to show a rapid increase of numbers. It perfectly agrees in doctrine and discipline with the Church from which it is taken. Its organ is the *Christian Index*, published at Louisville, and it has some institutions of learning.

The trouble of the M. E. Church and of the Church South has usually been along the border. Many societies in Virginia, Kentucky and Missouri, all along the boundary, had minorities opposed to going to the Church South. These minorities sought Church relations with the North. In some cases, as at St. Louis, a society of the M. E. Church was organized soon after the separation. In Missouri, the two Churches have each three Conferences; the M. E. Church counting about fifty thousand members, and the Church South a much larger number. St. Louis was a test place. When, in 1845, Bishop Morris was solicited to organize a Conference in Missouri as against the Missouri Conference of the Church South, he declined to do it. He held that he was bound by the Plan of Separation not to enter the state to organize a Missouri Conference, while the Church South already had a Conference of the same name and on the same territory. As we said, the General Conference of 1848 repudiated the Plan (rightly or wrongly), at the petition of less than three thousand members along the border.

It could not be otherwise than that the people of two Churches like these M. E. Churches should be prominent in the war. They had for membership the numbers, strength and activity of

the nation. In the North, the M. E. Church was first of all to send to President Lincoln assurances of loyal support, and first of all to congratulate President Johnson at its successful close. During the war no other Church had so many soldiers in the service, and Bishop Simpson was often called to give advice and encouragement. Lincoln called it well nigh the National Church.

In the South, the record of the other Church was of the same quality. As Lincoln said of the northern Church, so Davis might have said of the southern: "It sent more soldiers to the field and more nurses to the hospitals than any other religious body."

As the war fared on, the armies of the North came into possession of cities of military importance and in such the clergy were forbidden to pray for the success of the Confederacy. General Butler in New Orleans proclaimed that such acts would be treated by martial law, as "firing the southern heart" and encouraging the Confederates to prolong the war. Of course many Churches were closed and some of these belonged to the Church South. Stanton, Secretary of War, ordered that in the Department of the Southwest all Churches belonging to the M. E. Church South be placed at the disposal of Bishop Ames, of the M. E. Church, on the ground of the advantage coming to the nation from such loyal sentiments as his appointees would inculcate, and all commanders were to give to such appointees "courtesy, assistance and protection."

So came the northern Church again into the South. J. P. Newman, a preacher of great eloquence and culture, was put in charge of the Carondelet Street Church, one of the finest in all the South, and "northern" worship was there held by a large and intelligent congregation. This was a painful sight to southern Methodists. Military use of churches was no new thing, but this military possession of their property by the northern preachers was more bitter than anything else that the war had brought them.

Yet without such occupation the houses would have been empty. The sense of invasion and the days of sourness left by the war led to many an outrage upon northern preachers and teachers who, holding that peace had opened all the country for settlement, came to labor for southern populations. Ruffianism took for its special victims the representatives of the M. E. Church, and, though there is no occasion to charge these to the influence of the Church South, they seemed to put far away the day of harmony.

It will be remembered that Lovick Pierce had said (and properly) that the Church South could never renew the offer of fraternal relations, but would at any time cordially entertain such an offer. In spite of the separation, in spite of the war and its sequels, there was among the best men of both Churches not only pride of a common ancestry and a love of their common faith and order, but also a sincere desire that fraternity, if not union, should be established before those who had seen and been part of the separation and the estrangement should pass from this world.

The advance was made by the Bishops of the Methodist Episcopal Church to those of the Church South. In April, 1869, the former held a meeting at Meadville, Pa., and felt themselves justified by action of the General Conference at Chicago the year before (providing for the treatment of any other Methodist Church that might desire union with them) in making overture of intercourse looking to reunion. Bishops Janes and Simpson conveyed this overture to the Bishops of the Church South, who met in May, 1869. To this the latter made a fair reply, alluding, among other things, to the work of the northern missionaries and agents in the South as tending "to disintegrate and absorb our societies."

In 1870, Bishop Janes and Dr. (now Bishop) Harris visited the General Conference of the Church South at Memphis. They were courteously received. The Church South felt that fraternity must be looked for where it was lost, and suggested that a recognition

of the original Plan of Separation, which was the basis of the Church South, and which we saw repudiated by the Northern Church, would be a true and proper beginning.

The Methodist Episcopal General Conference of 1872 appointed Drs. Hunt and Fowler and Gen. Fisk to bear Christian greetings to that of the Church South, to be held, in 1874, at Louisville. These men were warmly received. A similar delegation was appointed by the Church South. That same Lovick Pierce, now venerable with years (he died four years after, at ninety-five), who had, in 1848, said that last word in sorrow, not in anger, Dr. Duncan of Virginia, and Chancellor Garland of Vanderbilt University, were made delegates on a like errand to the Methodist Episcopal General Conference, in 1876, at Baltimore. Five commissioners were also appointed to meet a similar commission from the North to fix a Plan of Harmony and Peace.

It was in 1876, the centenary of national life, that the reconciliation was made a fact. The twelfth of May in that year is a day to remember. In a vast gathering over which Bishop James presided, Dr. Duncan and Chancellor Garland were introduced to the General Conference. A letter from Dr. Pierce, who had fallen sick on his journey, was first read. He protested against the current phrase, "two Methodisms." "There is but one Episcopal Methodism, and you and we make it up." Dr. Duncan then gave a memorable address. To him fraternity was to be an end of strife, an exchange of discord for harmony, when, walking in the light, as Christ is in the light, men have fellowship one with another, and cease from petty strifes and bitter words. Then Chancellor Garland spoke briefly and the Conference was moved to tears of very gladness. The Rubicon was repassed.

In August of the same year, the joint commission already spoken of met at Cape May. There were five in each committee, men well versed in the matters to be discussed, men of clear head and

Christian temper. It was stated by the southern committee that they could treat only on the basis of the ancient Plan of Separation, to which the northern committee made no objection. It was also declared that each Church has its origin in the Methodist Episcopal Church organized in 1784, and is a lineal representative of the same. Rules were then framed for the settlement of ownership of all Church properties, transfers of titles and the like. So happy were these Rules, which we need not here give, and so just and generous the temper in which they were applied, that in every case of titles to property in New Orleans and elsewhere the final vote was put on record as unanimous. The proceedings of this Cape May Commission were published in full, and as these were final, and also approved by the highest authority of each Church, they are of great and abiding value. "Ephraim shall no longer vex Judah nor shall Judah any longer envy Ephraim."

The relation of the Church South to the colored people of its region is peculiar and interesting. It is pardonable, seeing our Story is to give our colored brethren as well as others an easy, accurate and readable view of Methodism, here to rehearse what the Church has done for them. We shall see that it has done for them more than all other agencies together.

When Mr. Wesley was on his return from Georgia to England, he gave much time to teaching two negro lads on shipboard. This was the beginning of a work of love and help to their race, which his followers have well continued to this day. In 1758, he received at Wandsworth, in England, his first African convert, a slave woman, whose master, Gilbert, became a local preacher. These introduced Methodism at Antigua.

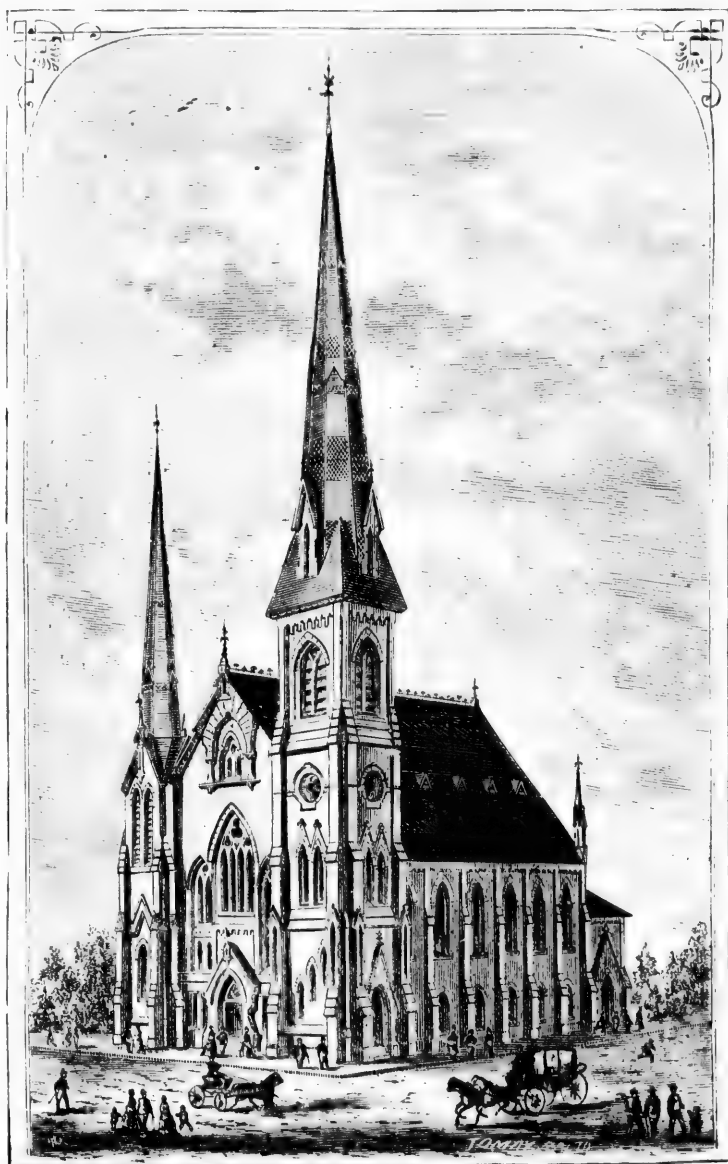
The colored race had come to this country in the second voyage of the Mayflower, nearly a hundred and fifty years in advance of Methodism. In that time they had ceased to be heathen and had come into a condition of emptiness and expectancy. The Method-

mittee that
of Separation.
It was
odist Episcopalian
representative of
t of ownership
like. So
and so just
at in every
are the final
ings of this
these were
ch Church,
d no longer

le of its re-
g our Story
y, accurate
the Church
them more

o England,
ard. This
race, which
he received
rt, a slave
er. These

ond voyage
advance of
en and had
he Method-



WESLEY MONUMENTAL CHURCH, SAVANNAH, GEORGIA.

ist preachers published precisely the glad tidings for which their souls were yearning. The Gospel was offered to them as freely as to their masters, and they were formed into classes and had every privilege of Christian care and training. The sons of their masters often became preachers, the masters often class leaders. The negroes in some societies soon outnumbered the whites, and of their own people arose preachers and exhorters. Of these we noted the true and faithful labors of Henry Evans, who had founded in Wilmington the Fourth Street Church, before he went to Fayetteville to found in the same manner the Evans Chapel.

In the towns, and along the coast as far south as Georgia, the colored population was in a religious way fairly prosperous. Not so on the rice and cotton lands farther down. Early in this century these regions were filled with Africans from slave-ships, rude heathen given to fetish worship and all superstition. Their numbers grew rapidly and their descendants kept the usages of Congo and Guinea. Here was a mission field and a hard one. The planters were not often Methodists, if Christians at all. They lived on their plantations in winter only. The malaria of the plantations told upon the whites.

Bishop Andrew and Dr. (afterward Bishop) Capers took hold in earnest of this plantation work. Capers prepared catechisms and gave his own efforts to conciliating the planters and planning the work. The enterprise was constantly enlarging by new settlements and new plantations. After the separation the Church South spent a million of dollars in twenty years, to say nothing of wasted health and untimely loss of men.

The result of all this was most gratifying. Religion worked a reform in morals wherever the missionary came with his preaching, his Sunday-schools and his personal exhortations. Polygamy and the other vices of barbarism, with theft, and other vices of civilization, disappeared, and peace, order and honesty took their

place. Preachers were raised up who (whatever the statute-book might say) could read well and preach well. There was many an Uncle Tom, devout and faithful, among the hardships of plantation life.

The piety of the slaves proved equal to the severe trials of the war. They might have risen and wasted the plantations with sword and flame, as their fierce heathen countrymen had done in some of the West India islands. The leaven of Christianity had worked among them and they had learned to labor and to wait, though they intensely longed for freedom. Thus the South reaped the harvest of benefit which the Methodist missionary had been sowing.

At the end of the war, the Church South was in poverty and prostration. It was as if a cyclone had swept its territory. Churches had to be rebuilt and refurnished, all benevolent enterprises had to be newly undertaken, and the negro work had to be dropped. The various African bodies from the North came forward to prosecute it, and the Church South, as we have seen, gave churches and organization to the colored people of its own body—forming the colored Methodist Episcopal Church in America.

Yet the religious needs of the freedmen (and of the poor whites) after the war were immense. Masses were needing fitness for their new, free life. They were sometimes as helpless as children, and often wild, self-indulgent and improvident. But they had an admirable record with both the contending parties. They had so behaved as to reduce the horrors of war, and both North and South felt kindly and grateful towards them. Never had a people of slaves so conducted themselves in a crisis so terrible.

It was, then, only just that the various Christian bodies of the North should promptly come to the relief of a needy and worthy people, and so they all have done. In this work the best minds of southern men have agreed. There have been broad, political

differences, but a Republican colored Congressman has given of his salary to help his old master's family and a Democratic Governor of Georgia has endeared himself to colored congregations by his religious labors. Two colored Methodists have with dignity and sound wisdom served in the Senate of the United States.

The work of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the South will be elsewhere told.

It is not out of place to pause here and wonder at the divisions of Methodisms in the South. Among the colored people the case is amusing, or it would be so, if it were not lamentable. There are for them organizations enough to distract the brain—five in all, three for themselves and two of whites, with whom they may connect themselves. They call, in their way, the African M. E. Church "de mudder Chu'ch"; the A. M. E. Zion Church "de halleluyee Chu'ch," and the colored M. E. Church in America "de Chu'ch set up by de white foke." A more undesirable state of things for the freedmen of a village or a scantily-peopled rural district can hardly be imagined. Union would be strength, respectability and efficiency.

And why could not the two Methodist Churches of the whites also unite? They are so identical in doctrine and usage, in everything, that a stranger does not know in which he is worshipping. They are one in lineage and interest. As it now is, only name and recent memories keep them apart. Soon these memories will vanish with the survivors of the generation that held them, and then there will be a name and nothing more. Can the shadow of a name be always a barrier to a union so desirable? The border of two such Churches in the present infirmity of human nature is ragged and full of annoyance. Each Church has full respect for the other. In union there is no call for surrender, only for adjustment.

Twelve years ago there were five bodies of Methodists in Can-

ada. Now there is but one Methodism from the Bermudas to the Pacific. Happy would it be, were such the fact in the United States! One Methodism, like the banyan tree of India, might cover the continent, and millions rest in peace beneath its fragrant shade.

The Church South has shown great energy in its educational work. The second Mrs. Vanderbilt upon coming to New York joined the Church of the Strangers, an independent church, which



VANDERBILT UNIVERSITY, NASHVILLE, TENN.

had been founded by Rev. Dr. Charles F. Deems, equally distinguished as preacher and writer, thus Mr. Vanderbilt became his parishioner. Mrs. Vanderbilt and Dr. Deems had been Southern Methodists. His devotion to his wife, and his love for Dr. Deems, led Mr. Vanderbilt to liberal measures.

In 1872, the Church South had founded at Nashville its Central University, to be its seat of learning for all coming time. To this Mr. Vanderbilt gave a million of dollars, thus putting it at once

in a highly-effective condition. It has four departments—of Theology, Law, Medicine and Philosophy, the latter including Science and Literature, and is amply furnished with University appliances



CORNELIUS VANDERBILT.

and resources. Its site includes seventy-five acres just east of the city, and its buildings cost four hundred thousand dollars. L. C. Garland, LL. D., has been Chancellor from the beginning.

—of The-
ing Science
appliances

Besides this, the Church South has over thirty colleges of less or greater degree, some of which have recovered from the ruinous effects of the war. There are also other schools and academies.

The Church South has foreign missions in China, Mexico, Brazil and Germany. It has beyond its original slave territory Conferences in California, Oregon, Colorado, Kansas and Illinois. These came on the track of emigration from its old home. As yet, it has gained little beyond this emigrated membership. One of its own authorities states that all the North and half the South—i. e., including the negroes, prefer the Methodist Episcopal Church.

At the end of 1884, the Church South had as follows: Traveling preachers, four thousand and forty-five; local, five thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine; members, eight hundred and seventy-seven thousand two hundred and ninety-nine. It has now fully a million of members. If by disasters, for which this generation is not responsible, it has suffered heavy loss, it is repairing the loss by the true Gospel means, by labor and sacrifice.

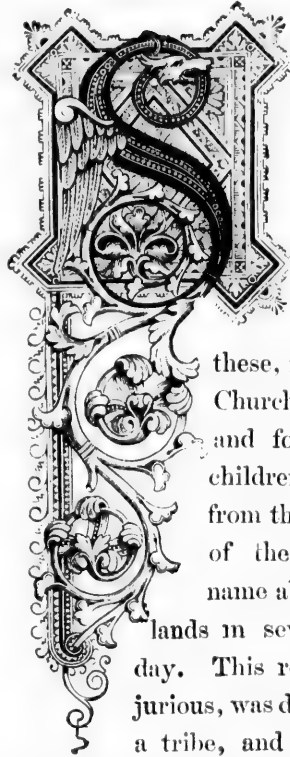
Such laymen as Governor Colquitt, of Georgia, who, in the press of public care, still finds time to labor in the Sunday-schools of his colored citizens, such clergymen as Dr. Haygood, who takes into his heart the needs and possibilities of his "Brother in Black," and a galaxy of men and women of like mind and effort, show that the Church appreciates its calling and makes its history of to-day sublime. Perhaps—probably by the movement of heart that, like the earth's internal changes, must at length affect the surface—the "South" will yet vanish from its name.



east of the
rs. L. C.
ing.

CHAPTER XIX.

Methodism among the Indians and Mormons.



SAVED from suicide by turning to hear a sermon (as we have noted), John Stewart began among the Wyandottes of Ohio the missionary work of the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1832, the Wyandottes sold their lands to the general government and went to Kansas. They were seven hundred in all, of these, nearly half were members of the Mission Church. There were fifteen native class leaders and four local preachers. They had seventy children in school, and had banished whisky from their little nation. Settling at the junction of the Kansas and the Missouri, where their name abides, they became citizens and held their lands in severalty. Not many seem to be there to-day. This removal, which even among whites is injurious, was disastrous. The Wyandottes are no longer a tribe, and there is no mission, but they were the first to feel the benefits of the Methodist missionary efforts in this country (unless we count all Methodist efforts as missionary) and they found in these a blessing.

In 1822, Capers, afterward Bishop, spent eight months in Georgia, persuading the people and collecting means for a mission

to the Creeks. These were about **twenty-four thousand**, living partly in Georgia and Alabama. He gained the good-will of McIntosh, a half-breed and leader of the tribe, and, a council being held, the mission was allowed. "Asbury Mission" was begun, though Big Warrior, an influential chief, and the government agent, made vigorous opposition. A wise and patient teacher, aided by his wife, opened a school and inaugurated the second Methodist mission. The school was very successful. One boy, beginning with his alphabet, in three months read the New Testament. Children were learning to pray, and the prospect was very cheering.

Preaching was opposed by the agent and by wicked whites. McIntosh did all he could for it, and a few sermons under his protection had a large hearing, but soon preaching had to be suspended. Calhoun, Secretary of War, then ordered the agent to give "decided countenance and support to the Methodist mission." Crowell obeyed, but there were obstructions. Soon, however, there were conversions, some of them very affecting, and, in 1829, there were twenty-four Christian Indians and twice as many blacks—also a few whites—in membership. Even this success was gratifying when one thinks of the troubles that hindered it. During this period came the hard measure of removal of the Creeks to the Indian Territory—a measure provoking jealousy and anger, in which McIntosh, the chief patron of the mission, lost his life. After the removal, better times came on and the good seed bore its harvest in a condition of Churches, schools and the like that entitles the Creeks to be counted a civilized tribe.

Among the Cherokees the pious work fared better. This princely tribe held ten million acres of the best land of Georgia. They were comparatively wealthy and civilized when Methodism reached them, and the American Board had for five years maintained a successful mission.

In 1822, Riley, a Cherokee, invited Neeley, a preacher near by, to preach at his house, and before six months there was a class of thirty-three, Riley being leader. In December of that year, being appointed missionary, he opened there a school of twenty-five, and in this and in his meetings conversions occurred. Before the year was out, the heavenly grace was amply shown. At a camp-meeting, thirty-one were converted, and at the close of the meeting thirty came to the altar and begged to be told how they could like these be happy in the favor of the Great Spirit. The meeting was resumed and a wealthy Indian offered to spend his last dollar in maintaining it.

Never did such results come so cheaply. The whole cost of the mission was two hundred dollars, and, at the end of the year, there were one hundred and eight members and many children were reading the Testament. Coody, an Indian a hundred miles away, became an exhorter and his house became a religious center.

In 1826, George Guess, an Indian, invented an alphabet, an event of curious interest to students of the Science of Language. It represented their speech by seventy-six characters, each giving a syllable. The help which it gave to the Gospel was very great. Soon among their seventeen thousand people were eight hundred and fifty-five members, seventeen preachers and five schools. There were law, government and a weekly newspaper. Then came a series of events at which every patriot must blush. A clergyman, an agent of the government, began to urge their removal beyond the Mississippi. The struggle was long and ruinous. Some of the missionaries were brutally punished for their sympathy with an injured people. At length, in 1841, the Cherokees were driven out at the point of the bayonet. Under missionary guidance they transferred themselves fairly to their new home, and there have prospered.

United with the Chickasaws, they number about twenty-five

thousand and are in the best shape of all our Indian people. They have good laws and government, schools and school-houses, Churches and church buildings. Their helpers outside of their own number are from the Church South and the American Board.

The American Board had priority of the Methodists in missions among the Choctaws also. Of these there were twenty thousand in Mississippi. William Winans, himself the chief of Mississippi Methodism, began work among them in 1826, but with little result. At length, under Talley, in 1828, at a camp-meeting, a break occurred. Four chiefs, among others, were converted, and soon Lafore, the head chief, and six other chiefs followed.

In 1830, whisky and heathenism were banished: all the chiefs but four were Christians, and four thousand members were enrolled out of a population of twenty thousand. Then comes the sad story of their removal. Talley did them good and faithful service in saving them from moral damage by the transfer. In their new home they have thriven and are now making good progress in the arts of civilization. Their failure to have a George Guess to invent them an alphabet may have been a blessing, for they have taken up the English for their speech and, one may say, are Indians no longer, unless in complexion and feature. Fifty years of religious labor have made them no more aliens and foreigners, but fellow-citizens. Their outside help is from the Church South—i. e., their Methodist help, and the same Church has missions to the Seminoles and other tribes of the territory. In all it has nearly ten thousand members.

In one corner of the territory, among the Poncas and Pawnees, and other tribal remnants, the Methodist Episcopal Church has seven small missions, counting one hundred and sixty members, and about seven hundred attendants on worship. These are "wild Indians." Mrs. Gaddis, their self-sacrificing friend, says: "I saw men and women kneel to idols (stuffed skins of wild geese) and

offer their garments in sacrifice, while their tears and cries were terrible. And this within seventy-five miles of the Kansas line, while we explore Africa to find heathen!" She now, 1887, is cheered with success.

The Six Nations, once so powerful through the center of the state of New York, have been visited by Methodism. The Mohawks,



BAPTISM BY TORCH LIGHT AMONG THE INDIANS.

after the Revolution in which, under Brandt, they had aided the British, retired after the war to Canada. Colonel Brandt, a graduate of Dartmouth, was not a Christian, but his daughter, Mrs. Kerr, was a believer, and patriotic in her desires for Christianity among her people. In 1807, two of her people were baptized, one being Mrs. Jones, whose son became the greatest of Indian preachers.

In 1822, Alvin Torrey was sent from the Genesee Conference to visit these Mohawks. At this time, young Seth Crawford, living with them, was moved to learn their speech and give his labor for their welfare. In his meetings, in 1823, a revival broke out like a flame, and twenty were converted in the little settlement, and the work spread to others. Soon, Peter Jones, called a Mohawk, a Chippeway or a Mississamngah, as the tribes were now blending, now twenty-one, began to speak with trembling and brevity, but with power. He was stately to look upon, and afterwards an English lady of fortune accepted him as her husband. The young evangelist found fierce opposition from the heathen, the vile whites, and the traders with their whisky, but he soon had one hundred and fifty believers. When the Indians, in 1825, received their government annuities, he and his brethren tented by themselves, and, in place of a drunken frolic, spent their time in instruction and prayer.

The other Indians gathered around, and crowds of whites came to look on. Jones was educated, and he would in preaching change to English, and thus many whites were converted, and so the good work prospered. At length, an island in Bay Quinte, like Holy Island, on the northwest of England, became Christian headquarters, and soon a larger island was occupied. New preachers were raised up and new missionaries came. When, in 1828, the Methodism of Canada parted in peace from that of the states, two thousand adults and four hundred children were in the care of the Church. All the Indian missions in Canada have continued to prosper.

The Oneidas, living in central New York, were, fifty years ago, sadly demoralized. Kirtland, their noble friend, and Scanade, their greatest chief, were dead, and the entrance of such population as followed the opening of the Erie canal was a disaster.

Daniel Adams, a Christian Indian from Canada, came to labor

eries were
ansas line.
, 1887, is
of the state
Mohawks,



aided the
t, a grad-
ter, Mrs.
ristianity
baptized,
of Indian

with them. He saw more than one hundred converted, and eighty children gathered into school. Some of the converts went to the Onondagas near by, and soon three chiefs, with others, were there converted.

In 1831, and soon after, most of these Indians went to Green Bay, Wis., the missionaries following on their track. In their old homes about half are Christians, and these have tidy houses and fair-looking farms. The Pagans are still barbarous.

We told how four Flathead chiefs had heard from some trapper of a Book that would teach them how to worship God and how they came to St. Louis to get it. Of the Indians in their region now, the Yakimas are the happiest. In 1869, General Grant being President, and wishing to bring the Indians under kindly influences, and, if possible, to limit the long list of fraud and abuse, gave the nomination of the Indian agents to various religious bodies. It was just and wise to put the wards of the nation in the care of their best benefactors, and in some cases the President's aim was fully reached. The Reservation happiest of all has been that of the Yakimas in Washington Territory. Of these, there are three thousand, on eight hundred thousand acres of excellent land. More than five hundred are members of the Church, and in ten years they have given to its benevolent causes two thousand two hundred and forty-five dollars. Besides "Father" J. H. Wilbur, there are five native preachers, and they have two comfortable churches. Whisky is almost unknown. About one in ten can read and write, and there is a good supply of competent mechanics, while good and well-stocked farms abound.

Rev. J. L. Burchard was made agent at Round Valley, California, and, of less than twelve hundred population, nine hundred were in two years converted, and proved their change by clothing, housekeeping and industry, such as befitted their new life.

What the Lees had done in Oregon, how, among other things,

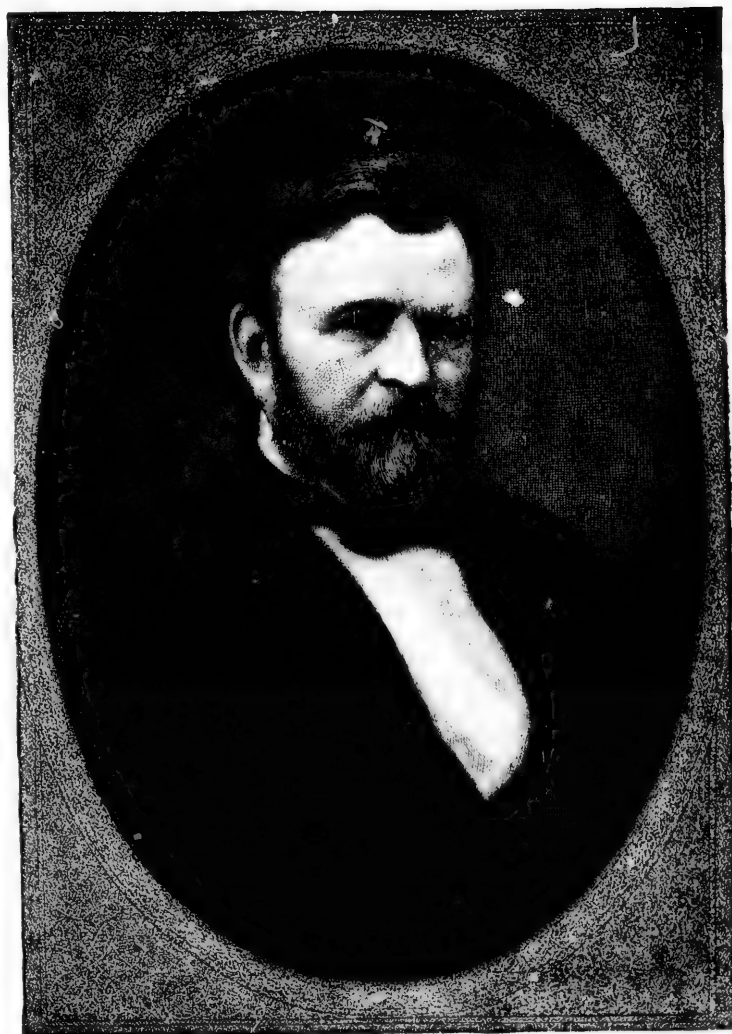
and eighty
went to the
were there

to Green

In their
dy houses

ne trapper
and how
their region
rant being
influences,
, gave the
odies. It
the care of
s aim was
een that of
e are three
lent land.
and in ten
asand two
L. Wilbur,
omfortable
n ten can
t mechan-

y, Califor-
e hundred
t clothing.
fe.
er things.



GENERAL U. S. GRANT.

they drew emigration from the states and saved Oregon to the nation, has already been told.

Closely related to the Indian work for difficulty and for its appalling necessity has been that among the Mormons of Utah. There stands in good repair at Kirtland, Ohio, a little south of the Lake Shore Railroad, the majestic temple first built by the Mormons. It is empty and unused. From it the builders went to Illinois, to Missouri, and at last to Utah. Here they hoped to

be left to their own ways. They were not out of the world. It became necessary to send there a military force to maintain United States law, and with the army Christians began to enter. Especially, at the completion of the Pacific Road, in 1869, when travel was streaming westward, and "Gentiles were stopping in



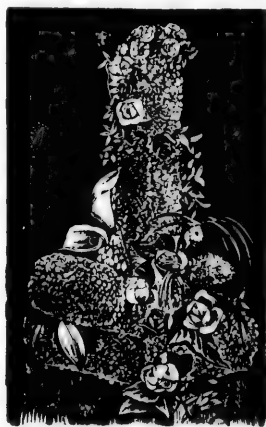
METHODIST CHURCH, SALT LAKE CITY.

the Mormon towns," the time for Methodism seemed to have come. Bishop Kingsley, in that year, preached in the Mormon Temple the first Methodist sermon in Utah. The next year, Rev. Lewis Hartsough, being Bible distributor along the railroad, preached in Utah, made Wahsatch its first regular appointment and, exploring other towns, found some scattered Methodists.

In 1870, Rev. G. M. Pierce began the mission at Salt Lake City and twelve formed the first class. The first church was built at Corinne in 1870. A noble edifice was soon reared at the capital, and there is now in its basement and a building near by the

Salt Lake Seminary, the nucleus of the coming college. Schools are sustained in fourteen towns, with over one thousand pupils. Of these, fully half are of Mormon parentage. The schools are opened with Scripture, singing and prayer, and thus, if in no other way, the Mormon youth are reached. Utah is credited with being in a bad way. One Methodist Bishop calls it "a black land," another says it is "harder than China." There is no public school, and the only hope of redeeming the fair and fertile region from its immorality and ignorance lies in these schools.

Methodism has its missions among the remnants of tribes at St. Regis and Gowanda, N. Y., and at various points in Michigan. At Fort Peck, Idaho, is a thriving school, and at Nooksachk, far up Puget Sound, is a mission looking into Alaska. It will be found that Methodism has done its part, since, in 1789, three Indians were returned as members of a class, in rescuing from heathenism and destruction the poor natives of our land. The precise number in its membership to-day cannot be ascertained, but it may be twelve thousand, or about one in twenty of the Indians of to-day.



gon to the
l for its ap-
s of Utah.
le south of
uilt by the
ilders went
ey hoped to
own ways.
t out of the
came neces-
nd there a
e to main-
States law,
the army
s began to
pecially, at
tion of the
in 1869.
as stream-
and "Gen-
stopping in
have come.
Temple the
Lewis Hart-
preached in
d, exploring

Salt Lake
h was built
at the cap-
near by the

CHAPTER XX.

Methodism in Africa.



OW we come to the Dark Continent. The first Methodist mission in foreign lands was in Africa. Liberia, on the west coast, came, from a sense of duty, into the possession of the United States. In 1819, Congress passed an Act directing the President to establish, in Africa, an agency where Africans, recaptured from slavers, could be taken, supported and protected, until they should be able in some way to care for themselves. Two years later, Lieutenant Stockton, of the U. S. Navy, purchased of native chiefs certain lands in the name of the United States, and these were put in the management of the Colonization Society. The lands, called Liberia, from their intended service to liberty, extend five hundred miles along the coast and back from it fifty to two hundred miles.

The country is counted unhealthy on the coast, though stout William Taylor, Methodist Bishop of Africa, declares it as healthy as Newark, N. J. There is in all the world no soil more productive. All tropical growths abound, and coffee, sugar-cane and the like can be grown to great profit. There are over one million natives, active and decent above the average of Africans. On the high plains inland there is room for people of enterprise. The

timber is majestic, the palms are of themselves a source of wealth, and iron is found so pure as to be used by the native blacksmith without reduction. To this land of hope and freedom were sent five thousand seven hundred and twenty-two recaptured Africans, and of emigrants, whose expenses were paid by the Colonization Society, fifteen thousand seven hundred and eighty-eight, of whom three thousand seven hundred and ninety went since our war.

Could ten thousand of our best black people be sent there, they would find home and happiness, room for all their energies and encouragement to every enterprise.

Among these natives and emigrants are various missions, as Presbyterian, Episcopalian, Lutheran and Baptist.

In 1824, the General Conference was able to take its first look across the sea and declare that it was expedient to send missionaries to Africa whenever the funds of the Missionary Society would justify the measure. The declaration waited six years before it was put into execution.

In 1831, Melville B. Cox, of Maine, volunteered as missionary to Africa. "I thirst to be on my way," said he. "I know I cannot live long in Africa, but I hope to live long enough to get there, and, if God please that my bones lie in an African grave, I shall have established such a bond between Africa and the Church as shall not be broken till Africa be redeemed." To a student of the Wesleyan University, where he was visiting, he said: "If I die in Africa, you must come over and write my epitaph." "I will, but what shall I write?" "Write, 'let a thousand fall before Africa is given up.'"

Arriving in March, 1833, he at once organized from pious emigrants some Methodist Churches and prepared to establish an academy at Monrovia, the capital. He soon held under the ever-green palms the first camp-meeting ever known in Africa. In five months, this heroic man, fit to lead a mortal enterprise, fell by

African fever. The same year five followed him, of whom only one, Sophronia Farrington, served for a year.

John Seys, born in the West Indies and fitted to life in the tropics, then joined the mission and was identified with its interests in Africa and America for nearly forty years. Liberia under him took definite form and character. He was not of Cox's flaming temper, who "saw Liberia rise up before him as a cloud out of heaven." He was a calm, plain, hard-working man.

Miss Farrington now left. She had remained to hold the place alone and her experience was very singular. She was sick with fever, which on the fourth day ran so high that mortification was taking place and all hope of recovery was abandoned. "I was alone. I thought, 'Is there not some one here to sympathize with me?' At once Jesus seemed to stand by my side and showed me that it was not His will that I should die at this time and that I should remain for the mission's sake. I said: 'Then, Lord, remove the disease.' Sudden as a flash of lightning the fever and pain all left me and I was well.

" 'If half the strings of life should break,
God can our flesh restore.'

"The doctor said mine was the greatest cure he had ever wrought, to which I made him no reply. Eight missionaries were now dead, and Mr. Spaulding, our superintendent, was to sail on the following Tuesday for America. He was calculating to take me with him and to give up the mission. But I said: 'No; I can never see this mission abandoned. I can die here, but I will never return until the mission is established.' But he said: 'The Board will probably cut you off if you do not go.' I said, 'I will stay and trust in the Lord.'"

She staid, and was the only white person on the coast to welcome Mr. Seys on his arrival. He says: "We were soon at the house and in the presence of the solitary remnant of the former

mission band, Miss Farrington, on whose visage the pestilence had left its traces, and who was at the time enjoying a little, but short, respite from its grasp. I, as a new-comer, gazed on one who had braved all dangers for Christ's sake, had seen others die, but had not feared herself to die, standing her ground amid the peltings of the storm. Never will I forget my emotions as I first took the hand of, and was welcomed to Africa by, the only representative of the Methodist Episcopal mission in that country, and that representative a delicate, frail, emaciated woman."

This young woman was not below the very highest evangelists in the calendar of Methodism. She had won souls at home, and now, that she was the first young lady ever sent by Methodists to a foreign field, she gained converts from the emigrants on the passage. Her very skill in painting and drawing drew savages to admire and hear her. In her self-consuming zeal, she wished to "offer her soul upon the altar of her God for the salvation of Africa."

After another year she returned to America and, as Mrs. George Cone, residing at Utica, N. Y., she lived a long, useful and honorable life.

Mr. Seys proved to be the man needed in Africa. He was born in Santa Cruz, had there begun his ministry, but he had lived many years in Trinidad, within ten degrees of the equator, where the climate and temperature are not unlike those of Liberia.

Thus reared and acclimated, it had come into his mind, until it destroyed his peace, whether he ought not to offer himself to fill the place of Cox in Africa. He had come North and was serving the Onocida Indians when these thoughts began, and others who knew him were also thinking of his fitness and possible call to this work.

Bishop Hedding addressed him on the matter. Seys read the letter to his wife and her prompt answer was: "I am willing

to accompany my husband wherever God and the Church see fit to send him." There was no hesitation. While he was preparing to start, Spaulding arrived and told what havoc death had made, of which we were just telling. Bishop Hedding, dreading to continue such sacrifice, offered to release Seys from the appointment. The hero would not be released from a post to which he was sure God called him. Neither the Church nor himself was disappointed. He writes: "My own health has been excellent since my arrival. This climate appears thus far to be quite congenial to my constitution and, in fact, I seem to breathe my native air."

In his first year two hundred souls were converted. There were now with him in the mission thirteen preachers and six teachers, himself being the only white, and there was enough for them all to do. A call came from every direction. Seys wrote: "I wept in the fulness of my soul at the remembrance of our Lord's words: 'The harvest truly is plenteous, but the laborers are few.'" This year, 1834, ten thousand pagans came of their own desire into the care of the colony, drawn by a desire of instruction, and feeling that in the colony was something of peace and strength unknown to themselves. Seys at this was glad of heart and wished to go out among those who so came to him. The Conda country, under a king, "Boatswain," a man of generous mind, whose domain fringed upon Liberia, opened a wide and welcome door. Several of his generals, with a train of two hundred, came in native pomp and escorted to their country a teacher, Moses Jacobs, and both he and they rejoiced upon the occasion. Seys was happy in his work. "Scarcely a happier soul than I could anywhere be found."

Going now back to America for his family, so as to settle in Liberia for his life work, he took with him a Krooman, Hughes. The Kroos are the handsomest people in Africa, as fine in their

own style as the best Circassians. Hughes appeared at Seys' meetings and was the "sensation." Poor fellow! Some negroes in Maryland told him, as he was going to Washington, that he would be sold for a slave. "His heart was broken; crazed his brain; at once his eye grew wild!" He became insane and never

recovered. One day, after his return to Liberia, he started with his dog for the Kroo country, and was never again seen. Mrs. Seys now went out, and for the first time illness came upon the family and a son died of the fever.

The Liberia Annual Conference was now formed. Seys could not rest in the work of the colony. The Dark Continent had for him the same **fascination, the**



ANN WILKINS.

same imperious call of duty, that it was soon having for Livingstone, that it now has for William Taylor. He returned to the United States to plead for men and means to enter among the millions in the regions beyond, and he did not plead in vain.

On his return he took out two persons who were helpers indeed. S. M. E. Goheen was a physician whose training and talents made easy to him in this country the path to place and wealth in his

profession. All this he gave up, and took like a true philanthropist the perils and poverty of Africa, and for years fulfilled his calling there. He, with Seys and Burton, constituted the three white men who only were able to do effective work in Liberia.

This year, 1836, Mrs. Ann Wilkins was converted at a camp-meeting at Sing Sing, N. Y. After an address at the meeting by Seys, she sent to Dr. Bangs, then Missionary Secretary, this note: "A sister who has a little money at command gives that little cheerfully, and is willing to give her life as a teacher if she is wanted." She was able to serve twenty years in Africa. She opened a school in Caldwell; then she was with Mr. Burton in the academy at Monrovia and finally at Millsburg. In every place she has a record of zeal and success in well-doing. At one time every pupil but the youngest in her school was converted. Some of her scholars were children of native chiefs, and her influence over them is felt in the interior to this day. In 1857, she came home, worn-out, to die. She was greeted by the Christians of New York as one ought to be who had not counted home or life dear unto herself, but had left all to follow duty in a far-off, weary land. This year, 1886, on the removal of her remains to another grave, her memory was renewed and thanks were given for the work she was able to do, and for the bright example she left for Christian workers.

There were now four hundred and twenty-one members in the colony, with seventeen missionaries, ten teachers and a physician. A journal, *Africa's Luminary*, was printed and a building begun at Monrovia, a fine one, for an academy, a coming college or university. There were a saw-mill and a sugar-mill, adjuncts of a manual labor school.

In 1839, at Heddington, a settlement named from the Bishop, there came a shower of reviving grace. The missionary wrote to Seys: "Come up and see God convert the heathen! Do not stop to change your clothes, to eat or drink or sleep; salute no man

by the way. Come quick!" It was a wonderful work. Tom, a native king, with thirty-five came to Christ in one day. Tom said: "The debely gone long, long way from his town, and, s'pose he come back, he pray God for kill him one time." Meetings of natives were held every day, and the divine mercy and power were shown as at Pentecost, as in Ohio, as everywhere on earth. Zoda, a famous Queah chief, tall and kingly of bearing, came to build him a town near Hedddington. A preacher went to the new town and Zoda came to listen. After a sermon, Zoda rose and went down to kneel, pray and wrestle at the altar. He fell prostrate, but when he arose he was a changed man. He called his town Robertsville in honor of a Methodist Bishop. This season when Ethiopia did so stretch out her hands unto God was, of course, one of fierce opposition, but the converts were steadfast in their new life. They said, "First time I get religion I love God true, but this time I love Him pass first time." So they grew in knowledge and love.

Trouble now came on. From 1839 to 1844, the Governor of the colony was one Buchanan, who felt it his pleasure and calling to destroy the mission out of the colony. He was such a man as is mysteriously set to try the patience and faith of the saints, and to dishearten all philanthropy. He blighted at once the mission and the colony in a way gratifying only to the adversary of all good. Of the matter we give but an outline. The supplies of the mission, being for the public good, were by law exempt from customs. The missionaries were in no sense traders, though they had paid for some labor in goods sent for the use of the mission, and this purely for the comfort of their employés and not for profit.

To trade without license was punishable by a fine of forty-five dollars upon every employé, and by confiscation of the goods. All enemies of the mission, the Governor and all traders joined to

enforce the tax, and Buchanan made such statement of the case to the Colonization Society as to get their decision in his favor.



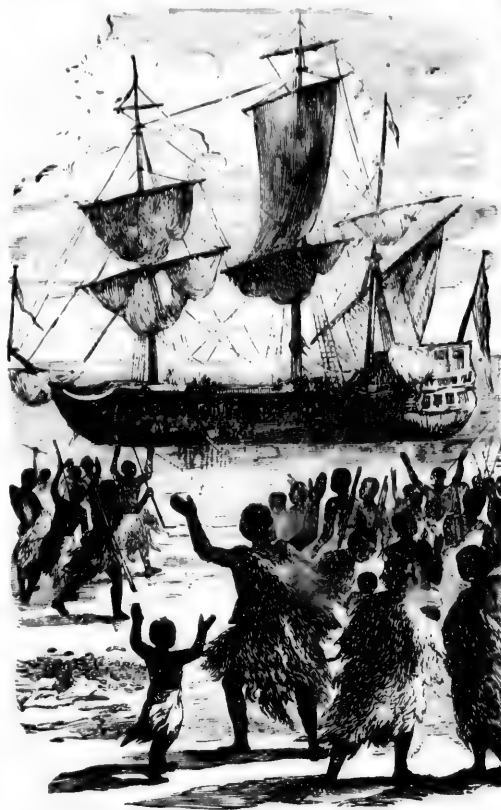
PRESIDENT ROBERTS' HOUSE, MONROVIA.

The suit to recover taxes was tried before the Governor, who was also plaintiff, and ruled out every exception that Seys raised!

of the case
his favor.

As a legal trial, it was a farce, but Seys so truly and effectively explained to the jury the work of the mission that ten of them voted for him and two for the hopeful Governor. The case was discontinued. Seys had often paid his bills in promissory notes,

as good as gold, and these, like our checks and drafts, were apt to pass through several hands before payment. He was charged with meddling with the currency and from designs of treason and ambition! To this was added the trilling charge that meetings for public sympathy with Seys were held in the academy, really the only place suitable for any public meetings. All this was annoying, and Seys cited eight distinct and serious forms of outrage which the missionaries had endured.



A SLAVE SHIP.

But the Governor ruled the Colonization Society, and the Missionary Board had to recall its servants, and the glory of the mission went under a cloud. There were in its membership one hundred and fifty natives and eight hundred and fifty colonists, with six hundred children in the schools. The cloud was not

ernor, who
Seys raised!

night. Buchanan came to America to rasp the Society into absolute exclusion of the missionaries.

In a manner that we need not trace, he passed out of history. A good and noble man, Roberts, who, coming to Liberia, in 1825, had been there reared and had seen all with his own eyes, was elected by the people as Governor. He had been sixteen years a Methodist. He was afterwards, 1848, the first President of the Republic of Liberia and, as a statesman, has won the approval of all nations.

A new temper now ruled. Seys went back and Roberts gave him a cordial welcome, while the people shouted for gladness. He began with skill and activity to restore the damages of the last five years.

One of his early efforts was a tour into the goodly land of streams and forests back from the coasts. Zoda had fallen away from the faith, but Tom was true, and when Seys preached to his people Tom led a group of them forward for prayers, and twenty were converted at the visit. In every place the natives were anxious for the Gospel. At Grupau, one hundred and fifty miles inland, a council of "Kings" was held, and a document expressive of their wishes was formally signed. A score began at once to seek Christ. The names of Bishops were freely given to these hopeful places. Tom's town was Robertsville; King Guzzam's was Mount Andrew; Boto's was Morrisburg, and we find a promising African, William Capers, and the like.

The region was thus preëmpted for Methodism. Seys was delighted with the evident resources of the country, and with the possible future of its people. He was now well-worn, and Mrs. Seys was in failing health. It was his duty to give the work to other hands, and he came back to this country. Twelve years later, 1858, he came back as agent of the Society that had, in 1839, forced his removal from Liberia, and ten years after that he was

U. S. Minister to the land of his toil and suffering. Thus the working period of a long life was given to Africa.

J. B. Benham was his successor. At the arrival of Benham, came also a slaver, the *Pons*, just captured by a U. S. man-of-war, with nine hundred slaves on board. This was the last-known instance of slave-trade horrors, and it was high time that the crime be blotted out of human evils. These wretched victims were put into the care of the mission. The case was made known in the United States, and ample means for the effort were furnished. Never in all the history of the Gospel did its grace come suddenly in contact with such depth of misery, and it was equal to the need. In a year, half of those poor creatures (they were Congo boys between ten and twenty, only forty-seven being girls) could read, and were converted, and the religious history of some was most touching. The dreary tale of death or departure runs on. Laura Brush came, in 1846, and did years of good service, but most were driven from the field.

In 1851, Francis Burns, who had come out with Seys on his first voyage, was put in charge, and Mr. Home, the last white missionary, took charge of the academy, remaining five years.

Bishop Scott, in 1852, was the first of our Bishops to visit Africa. He spent three months in visiting, preaching, correcting and encouraging. It touched him to see how the prominent young natives, after conversion, found so scant means of culture, and he proposed that they be taken into the families of the preachers. The native towns were transient, and some of the best converts were already far away towards the center of the continent—gone, but not lost, for traces of their influence could be found.

In 1856, Miss Staunton, a young white lady who was aiding Mrs. Wilkins, died at Cape Palmas, the first unmarried lady to fall in missionary service in a foreign land. Six unmarried white

ladies were sent to Liberia, of whom Mrs. Wilkins did the longest service, and Miss Margaret Kilpatrick, 1854-1864, the next.

The Bishops could not easily or safely visit Liberia, though, being now a Conference of over twenty preachers, it needed their supervision. The young preachers could not come to America to be ordained. A constitutional change was now made in the Discipline, by which a missionary Bishop could be created for a specified foreign mission.

Francis Burns, whose view was that Liberia was a mission, was chosen and ordained in 1858, and the next year he presided at the session. He at once began the interior work, and acted wisely and vigorously until his death in 1863. J. W. Roberts succeeded, at whose death, in 1875, the members had come to be two thousand three hundred, the largest number yet reported.

In 1876, Bishop Gilbert Haven met the Conference. His visit was comforting and inspiring, the Conference being at Monrovia, where the Legislature was in session. He found his people only moderately prosperous, but rather better off than their neighbors. The preachers were elderly men; he was anxious to have young laborers brought in, and to have an aggressive work upon the interior. He was well cared for, and his letters give lively and hopeful views of the region, yet it is possible that his death was hastened by his journey. "A pillar of ice where my backbone should be," with alternations of "fierce equatorial fire," reminded him of his Liberian experiences.

In 1877, an exploring party started to find mission stations in the interior. At Vonzuah they found, with surprise, Mohammedan missionaries within twelve miles of Monrovia! These had come from a college at Musardie, two hundred and fifty miles away, while Christ's messengers had not yet gone fifty miles. They were, however, cheered to find students from Liberian schools, and the people little inclined to Mohammedanism. At

the Condo capital they begged for missionaries, and even children got into the visitors' laps, and asked these to come and teach them. The King of the Condoes said he himself would attend the school, and he agreed, in writing, to "protect, sustain and encourage any missionaries or mission schools." This region back of Liberia is cool, beautiful and healthful.

Bishop Haven was sure that white men could there work to advantage, and at his call fifty young men offered themselves. He appointed to this interior work Rev. Messrs. Osgood and Bovard, and to the Seminary Rev. Mr. Kellogg. These went in 1878. They found a charming climate and everything conducive to health and activity. The King of Boporo did not keep his contract, but they easily got better places, and had no idea of stopping until their work should reach to the heart of the continent at the head waters of the Niger. Mr. Kellogg entered with equal zeal upon his educational work.

No missionaries are now sent to Liberia, and the progress of the work is but moderate for lack of laborers. The men last named have since returned. Yet there are now twenty-seven hundred in the society, and about as many scholars in Sunday-school.

In 1858, William Taylor, who, the year before, had been made missionary Bishop of Africa, a man of faith, strength and courage, gathered a company of his like and started for Central Africa to occupy the Congo Free State and other places. Some of the company were farmers and mechanics; some had families of children. They go as "Pauline" missionaries, on a plan of self-support. The expense of their going was paid by friends in sympathy with the movement. Some valuable African properties have been bought in the same way. It is proposed to raise in the fertile soil abundant provisions, then such products as will tell in commerce, then to build schools and churches. This is to show the natives

how Christians live, work and do business. Meanwhile, the work of evangelizing will go on. The theory is that Christianity is not to come as a suppliant and an adventurer. It is to stride in by daylight, as a conqueror comes, not by force, but by assurance of faith, come to stay, and that by command of its Almighty Founder, and to draw the people to itself and to demand their grateful service and support. This magnificent scheme has begun well. The company have had a year of good health, as good as at home. One family of six children reports only a week's illness of the youngest, two and a half years old, who is since fat and playful. The Bishop works seven hours a day in the sun, nor does any one thus far complain. They will in time have ample crops. Soon it will be proved whether white men can or cannot thrive in Africa. Should the result be favorable, Methodism will at once take its due share of the task of regenerating the continent now opening its resources and its needs to the Church and the world.



MOSQUE OF ST. SOPHIA AT CONSTANTINOPLE, TURKEY.

the work
is not to
by day-
e of faith,
nder, and
ul service
ell. The
at home.
ess of the
l playful.
es any one
os. Soon
in Africa.
e take its
w opening

HOBOH, CHINA, ON THE YU-ER MIN



CHAPTER XIX.

Methodism in China and Japan.



MONG the veteran students of the Wesleyan University are many who will recall its Missionary Lyceum. There, in 1835, was discussed in several meetings this question: "What country now presents the most promising field for missionary exertions?" "China," was the decision, and three students, Telf, Kidder and Wentworth,

since eminent in the Church, prepared an address urging attention to that country.

Dr. Fisk, that year, urged its claims before the Missionary Society. It was not until, in 1844, the unjust opium war with England compelled China to open five sea-ports to the world that steps for a mission were actually taken. J. D. Collins, a young man of Michigan, offered to Bishop Janes to go as a common sailor, working his passage to China, if he might only be appointed. He, with M. C. White, who had medical training, and Mrs. White, left Boston, April 15, 1847. They were the first Methodist missionaries to the East, the first to

round the Cape of Good Hope. They went to Foochow ("Happy Region"), because it was the only port destitute of Protestant service. A missionary of the American Board had actually arrived just before them. On the voyage they learned from a passenger something of the language. The city had half a million people. It is now twice as large, and the mart of a province of twenty-five millions. September 6, 1847, the day of their landing here, is the epoch of Methodism in China, and these three were the forerunners of five thousand in society with twice as many adherents.

The little company found shelter in a house of the American Board until they secured a home on the Middle Island in the river Min. This connects with the shore by a "Big Bridge," "Bridge of Ten Thousand Ages," a quarter of a mile long. Two miles from the stream is Foochow, distinguishable only by its walls from the crowded country round it. Here they had a decent home, but looking from a height upon five hundred villages of a thousand people each, not one knowing the Saviour's name, they cried: "Who is sufficient for these things?" They studied the language and relieved some sick people and gave away some tracts, pleasing the people by their manner. Soon they got a pleasant home, and in the year they were fairly planted. They could not yet get into the city.

In 1848, a school of eight boys was opened and R. S. Maclay soon coming, Mrs. Maclay began, with ten girls, a school which became very interesting. The first Sunday-school in China was held March 4, 1848. "It was a sight to gladden the angels." Most of the children came half an hour too early, and it was not easy to keep them quiet. A Chinese doxology was sung to Old Hundred. The Lord's Prayer was read in Chinese, and explained, and all knelt while it was said in English. The second of Matthew was read and explained, and the little Chinese boys were

asked how they understood it, and they seemed much interested. After an hour and a half, all was closed with singing and the Lord's Prayer. A little room by the street was obtained for a chapel. It might hold fifty, but the wayside hearers were many, as the Chinese love discourse, and stop to hear for a moment what is being said. One day, a fine-looking, well-spoken man offered the missionaries his services on salary to master and present their themes for them. He was a talker by profession.

The first church building, a solid one, was built in 1855, outside the walls, but on a main street, with a cupola and a bell, that almost gave the Church's name, "Ching Sing Tong," Church of the True God, carved where all could read it. Soon another was built in another place convenient for foreigners, its Chinese part being called "Tien Ang," Heavenly Rest.

Mr. Collins was obliged to come home for health, and on his way he planned at San Francisco the present Chinese mission there. His place was filled by Rev. (afterwards Bishop) Wiley and others. Soon, from various reasons, chiefly the great Taiping rebellion, Mr. and Mrs. Wiley were alone. Soon, Mrs. Wiley died, and her husband, from grief and debility, returned home. Messrs. Maclay (returning), Gibson and Wentworth then came, and the work went on. Mrs. Maclay and Mrs. Gibson had a fine school of thirty, and soon the Misses Woolston came and took it for permanent service.

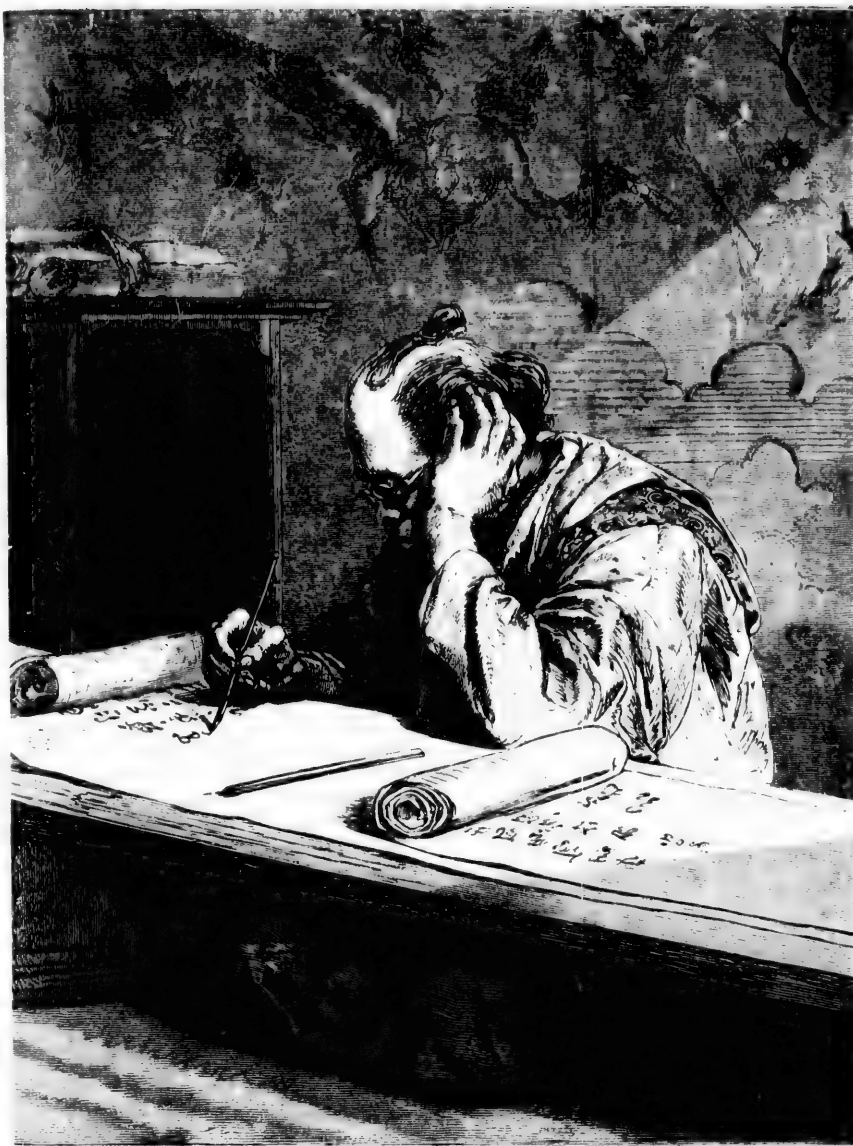
The first convert was baptized on July 14, 1857, Ting Ang, a tradesman of forty-seven. He had been hearing the Gospel, had cleared his house of idols, and begun secret and family prayer. His family, a large one, was in agreement with him. The missionaries visited him, and for the first time offered prayer in a Chinese house in the great city. His baptism and entrance to the Church, and partaking of the Lord's Supper, made a memorable day.

interested.
ing and the
ained for a
were many,
oment what
man offered
resent their

a 1855, out-
d a bell, that
church of the
another was
Chinese part

ad on his way
ission there.
o Wiley and
t Taiping re-
Wiley died,
ne. Messrs.
ame, and the
a fine school
d took it for

Ting Ang, a
e Gospel, had
amily prayer.
n. The mis-
l prayer in a
ntrance to the
e a memorable



A CHINESE SCRIBE.

The Chinese use a separate character for every word and idea. Their language contains about fifty thousand characters, of which some thirty-three thousand are in actual use.

Previous to this a little boy had died in the faith, privately taught by Dr. Wiley, and a young man, a true believer, had sailed for New York. In a year, 1858, a complete Methodist Episcopal Church was organized.



陳永高

HU FO MI

The next blessing Methodism gave to China was the Foundling Hospital. Thousands of female children have there been yearly cast away. This was to save the lives of the little unfortunates. Meanwhile, the family of the first convert embraced the faith. He has passed to heaven, but his children are Christians, and

, privately
liever, had
Methodist

ASHLEY WOOD and "Fruit of the Loom" in Adams St. School



e Foundling
been yearly
nfortunates,
d the faith.
istians, and

Bishop Harris, in 1873, learned the ritual in Chinese to baptize his grandson, the son of a native preacher.

The first itinerant raised up in China was Hu Po Mi, who became pastor (1859) at a place fifteen miles from Foochow.

After his conversion, he had visited at this place some friends dear to him, and told them "what a dear Saviour he had found." Soon he took Dr. Maclay to visit them, and a meeting was held at their home, tea being, meanwhile, served to each comer as he entered. All listened, and the result was the conversion of nine in this one (the Li) family. Such success gave alarm, but the natives found that both law and public policy protected the missionaries; so milder means were tried. The heathen Lis thought that, at Maclay's coming, the spirit guardians of their house ran away. They went to the mountain behind their house and begged these to come back, and it seemed as if the spirits would do so, when another Christian meeting finished the business. A famous enchanter was employed, but the pale, shivering phantoms that had for ages ruled the house of Li now fled forever. The morn was rising. The enchanter and two more Lis now forsook the older gods that had so forsaken them and became earnest and true Christians.

The number of workers was now, 1859, doubled. S. L. Baldwin and Mrs. Baldwin, and C. R. Martin and Mrs. Martin, came to Foochow. It is sweet to say how, on their voyage, Mr. Peet of the American Board cheered their hearts and helped in learning Chinese, and that, reaching Shanghai at midnight, the missionaries of the Church South gave them greeting prompt and warm, and introduced them to their peculiar work, to Chinese communion. In a far land how good it is for Christians in unity! And they always do.

Two sisters, Misses Woolston, now came to enter upon the education of Chinese girls. Mr. Gibson's school for boys was

succeeding; that of Mrs. Maclay and Mrs. Gibson for girls had done fairly. The natives were afraid of such a novelty, and for eight days one little girl came alone. After ten months there had been fifteen, three being small-footed—i. e., of higher family. The need of such a school was forcibly set forth by Dr. Wentworth to the Methodist women of America. The case of Chinese girls was hard indeed. Half of them were put to death on the



THE FIRST CHINESE MINISTERS.

day they were born. To most of the others was set a life of slavery, with all the ill that heathenism puts upon women. Besides this appeal to general humanity, it was shown that the female foundlings would soon fill a school, would usually be converted, would have culture for social position, would be wives of preachers and Christian men, and establish in China homes, rich in domestic peace and virtue, "the only bliss that has survived the fall."

The appeal did its work, and the school is now, for thirty years, one of the good things of Foochow.

Hu Sung Eng, "Mary Mertlett Irving," was the first convert among its pupils. She was a daughter of that good family that furnished the first native preacher. She is now the wife of a preacher, with bright, Christian children about her, the third Christian generation of her house, proving that Christianity is not to die out in the Flowery Kingdom. In 1860, "Father" Hu was the first convert to die, and he proved, on that side of the world, Wesley's comfortable words, "Our people die well." He left, beside Mary Irving, six sons, four adult members and two lads at school.

The next years went on successfully. Chapels were built, native preachers came up, and tracts and Scripture translations were multiplied. The government opened the country to missionaries, and agreed to protect them. Mr. Sites went to a place farther into the land, and at last a missionary, with chapel and school on his own premises, was allowed within the walls of Foochow. This last victory cost something. A mob destroyed the new church, and the house of Martin, the missionary. He rebuilt it, but in the week before it was dedicated he was taken with cholera, and went suddenly to the house not made with hands. His last words were: "It pays to be a Christian."

In 1865, Bishop Thomson came to cheer and guide the work. Other Bishops have visited the mission. It has now six districts, with a hundred native preachers, and three thousand members, contributing liberally to all Church interests, and as well established in Christianity as any people.

It will be noted that here Bishop Wiley began his labors. Thirty-three years later, sick and weary, he sailed up the river, and, as he saw where he had first lived, he said: "Home, my old

irty years,

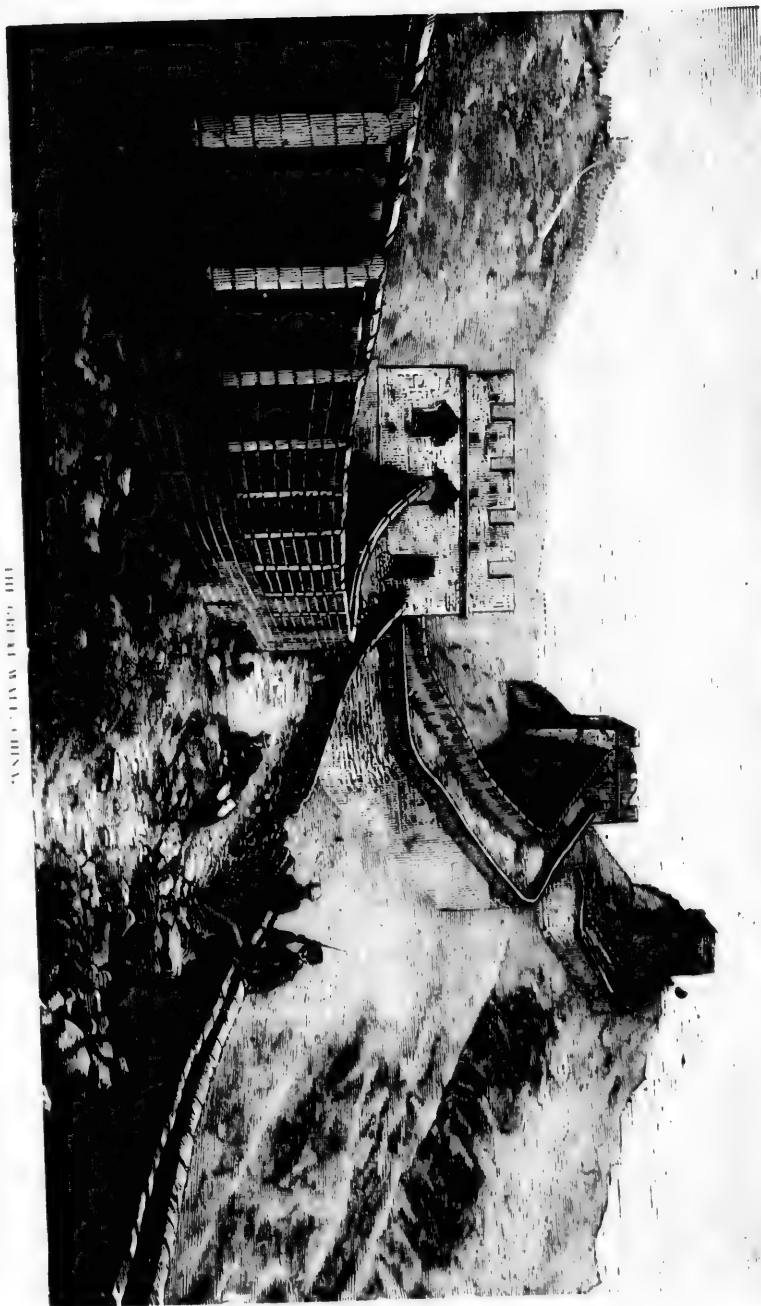
erst convert
family that
e wife of a
. the third
ristianity is
"Father"
hat side of
die well."
embers and

e built, na-
translations
ntry to mis-
s went to a
with chapel
in the walls
A mob de-
he mission-
s dedicated
house not
ys to be a

e the work.
ix districts,
l members,
well estab-

his labors.
o the river,
me, my old

THE GREAT WALL OF CHINA



home!" There he died, on the same spot where, thirty-two years before, at the same hour, day and month, Mrs. Wiley also had died. Service was had in that Church of Heavenly Rest, whose name was now so fitting, and native preachers bore the body of their dear "Hwaila Kangtok," in a coffin which their own hands had lined and pillowed, to rest by that of Mrs. Wiley, among the olives and pines, the longans and guavas of the Foochow cemetery.

This year (1886), a whole village of five hundred near Foochow, with one impulse, threw away their gods, and asked to become a Methodist Church. They said their gods could do nothing. Of these, many will become true converts.

The whole of China was now open to missionaries. Kiu Kiang, a great city far up the great river Yang-tse, at the mouth of which is Nankin, was next entered. It is the capital of a province that has a population equal to one-third of the United States, and around a beautiful lake, Po Yang, are other large cities. Here, in 1868, was planted the Central China Mission. The commerce of the noble river is immense, and lines of steamers run far into the interior. The best monument of Methodism in this vast region is the hospital at Nankin, the gift of Mrs. Philander Smith, of Oak Park (Chicago). It was last year, 1886, opened, with accommodations for eighty patients, besides a chapel, and dwellings for physicians. In one thing it is above reproach of sectarianism, for at its opening there was not a Methodist in the great city, and only two Christians, Presbyterians. Surely, it is meant for mankind! It is the talk and wonder of the region, drawing more notice than the far-famed Pagoda of Poreelain. One of its specialties is the cure of the opium habit. R. C. Beebee, the builder and physician in charge, is devout and skillful, and of great executive ability, and Mrs. Beebee, of high education and medical

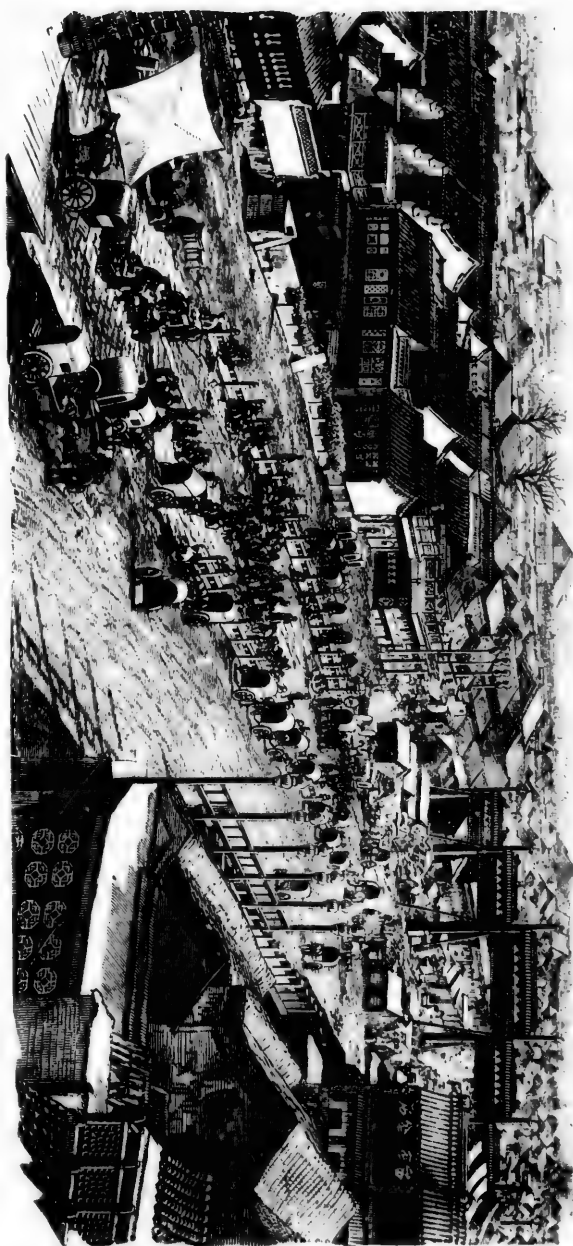
, thirty-two
Mrs. Wiley
of Heavenly
achers bore
coffin which
that of Mrs.
d guavas of

d near Foo-
nd asked to
ds could do
g.

maries. Kiu
-tse, at the
s the capital
-third of the
ng, are other
entral China
mmense, and

best monu-
d at Nankin.
(Chicago). It
s for eighty
ysicians. In
at its open-
nd only two
r mankind!
more notice
s specialties
builder and
great execu-
and medical

VIEW OF PEKING, CHINA



lineage, is a valuable helper. The tongue of reproach, native or foreign, is silent in the presence of such an institution.

Pekin, the capital, a city of two millions, on a vast, fertile plain girt with mountains rich in minerals, and the best of coal on the surface within thirty miles of the town, is the greatest mission field on earth. To this, Messrs. Wheeler and Lowry came in 1869. The missionaries of the American Board were already there to give them a hearty welcome. They found a queer city, or rather four cities, on a space three-fourths as large as New York island. These are the Chinese City, the Tartar City, the Imperial City, the Forbidden City. This last is occupied by the Emperor and his court. As its name implies, no foreigner enters it, though the French and English soldiers have "looted" the summer palace. The climate is that of Philadelphia.

Here, some time was needed to learn the Mandarin, the dialect of the capital, and to find premises for chapel and home. Just inside of a city gate was a mansion where a chancellor of the Empire had lived with twenty-seven wives, and servants in proportion. This was secured, and was ample for the present need. The Woman's Foreign Missionary Society has now a home and hospital near by. On June 5, 1869, the first public service by Methodists was held in the Chinese capital. Forty natives and a few foreigners were present.

To-day all is hopeful, though it is the day of small things. There are five hundred members, and these have paid seventy-five cents this year for the missionary cause, being above "the million line." The W. F. M. Society has treated one thousand five hundred at its dispensary, and made four hundred and ninety-eight visits, so that Methodism in Peking follows Wesley's London rule, "to do all possible good to the bodies as well as the souls of men," follows the pattern of One greater than Wesley.

It would not be Wesleyan to limit religious work to stations.

Both missionaries and native preachers have gone, usually, on horseback with saddle-bags, sometimes for a six weeks' tour, from the east, where the great wall touches the sea, to the sacred mountains on the west, and hundreds of miles north and south to



THE PRESENT MIRADO OF JAPAN

preach and scatter tracts. The results have been salutary. Persistent efforts have been successfully made for self-support. The charge of being hired and fed by "foreign rice" hurt the native preachers, and many of them resolved to take no more money

from abroad. Their resolution cost them something, but, as their leader said, "I am glad I did it!" Their faith, courage and manliness have been found equal to it.

A mission has lately been started in West China, in which the medical work of the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society is prominent and successful.

Methodism has thus, in thirty years, done well in China. The Church South has also done faithful work there, chiefly in the region of Shanghai, where Bishop Wilson is now visiting. The Wesleyans have a mission now long flourishing at Canton, and other Methodist bodies have stations at Ningpo and Tientsin. There are, in all, over twenty thousand Chinese converts in the various Methodist societies. The abuse of Chinese in America is just now causing blind retaliation upon missionaries in West China, but this will be brief.

Japan is so near China that its Methodism may here be told. The entrance was in 1872; the progress has been most rapid. Dr. Maclay, coming from China, took charge of the work, and his helpers were Messrs. Harris, Soper and Davison. Bishop Harris, with many visitors, was present at the formal organization at Yokohama, August 8, 1873. This city had, since the opening of Japan to the world, in 1853, come into existence as the great center of foreign intercourse, and here were to be the headquarters of the mission.

Tokio, the capital, eighteen miles away, will, however, be its natural center. Other cities were at once occupied. The first real estate was bought at Nagasaki, an important sea-port, by Mr. Davison. It was notable that this is in poetry and legend the sacred region of Japan, where the gods once lived in the form of men, and thus the first foot-hold of Methodism was in the Japanese Holy Land. Mr. Harris was sent to Hakodati, the only place in the island of Yesso open to foreigners, and here, January,

1874, he preached the first Protestant sermon ever given on the island.

It was now an interesting time in Japanese history. The Mikado had come out of ages of seclusion, and the present one was making a wise and energetic administration felt in all his land. The world was surprised to find here a vigorous and intelligent people suddenly entering into the list of nations. The stirring world came in like a tide, and the Emperor and his people welcomed the arts and ideas of the West. Several branches of the Church saw the opportunity and the pressing duty to bring in Christianity at such a crisis. There was a boundless hunger for hearing the Gospel, and this has grown by what it has fed upon, until it is probable that, in ten years, Japan will rank as a Christian nation. Dr. Maclay looked about and was convinced that the work was already beyond the working force of the mission. He urged its increase and welcomed all Christian laborers.

The first year was spent in gaining foot-hold and the language. Preaching in Japanese began in the summer of 1874, the congregation being four, but soon growing to fifty. Here in Yokohama, in October, the first converts, Mr. and Mrs. Kichi, were baptized.

Miss Schoonmaker, of the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society, now opened a boarding-school in Tokio, in the only place to be had, half of an idol temple, the priest of which needed money. So the building long served to very contrasting uses, a Christian home and school, and a gloomy shrine of false worship. This year the government gave Mr. Harris in Hakodati a handsome piece of land for mission buildings. At the end of the year, about twenty had been converted.

The next year, besides the preaching, public day-schools were begun, the classes were formed in full Methodistic style, and various buildings were erected.

The next year, 1876, the missions went on prospering. Bishop

Marvin, of the Church South, with Mr. Hendrix, his traveling companion, spent a week in loving and cheering fellowship at Tokio, Yokohama. In the fifth year, Mr. Davison presented to the mission a collection of hymns in Japanese. Of these the M. E. Church of Canada, having a mission in the country, bore half the expense, as it did also in the translation of the Discipline. There had been founded in Yesso, where Harris was laboring, an agricultural college, and of this Col. W. S. Clark, from Massachusetts, was now president. He was an attractive man, gallant and accomplished, and by his quiet instructions many students were brought to Christ. These in turn instructed others, and so Harris was much aided. This was the year of the Satsuma rebellion, a proud and restless people revolting against the Emperor because they had no representation in the government. It cost fifty thousand lives and fifty millions of dollars. After it came the cholera, so that it was a year of disaster.

In 1878, Bishop Wiley visited the missions. These were able to show him, as the result of five years' work, five important and thriving central stations and several out-stations. There were fourteen missionaries and thirty-two native helpers, one boarding and five day-schools, church property worth twenty-five thousand two hundred dollars, translated Discipline, Catechism and Hymns, and three hundred and eighty-one members.

Since that date the buildings at Tokio have been burned and rebuilt. Mrs. Governor Wright, of New York, has built a seminary at Hakodati in place of a school-house there burned with the church (now rebuilt).

At Tokio, in 1879, an institution was opened for ministerial education, to which J. F. Goucher, of Baltimore, gave a fund of ten thousand dollars. Mrs. Smith, who built the Nankin hospital, has here built the Philander Smith Biblical Institute, at the "Ei Wa Gokko," the Tokio University. In the Anglo-Japanese, the

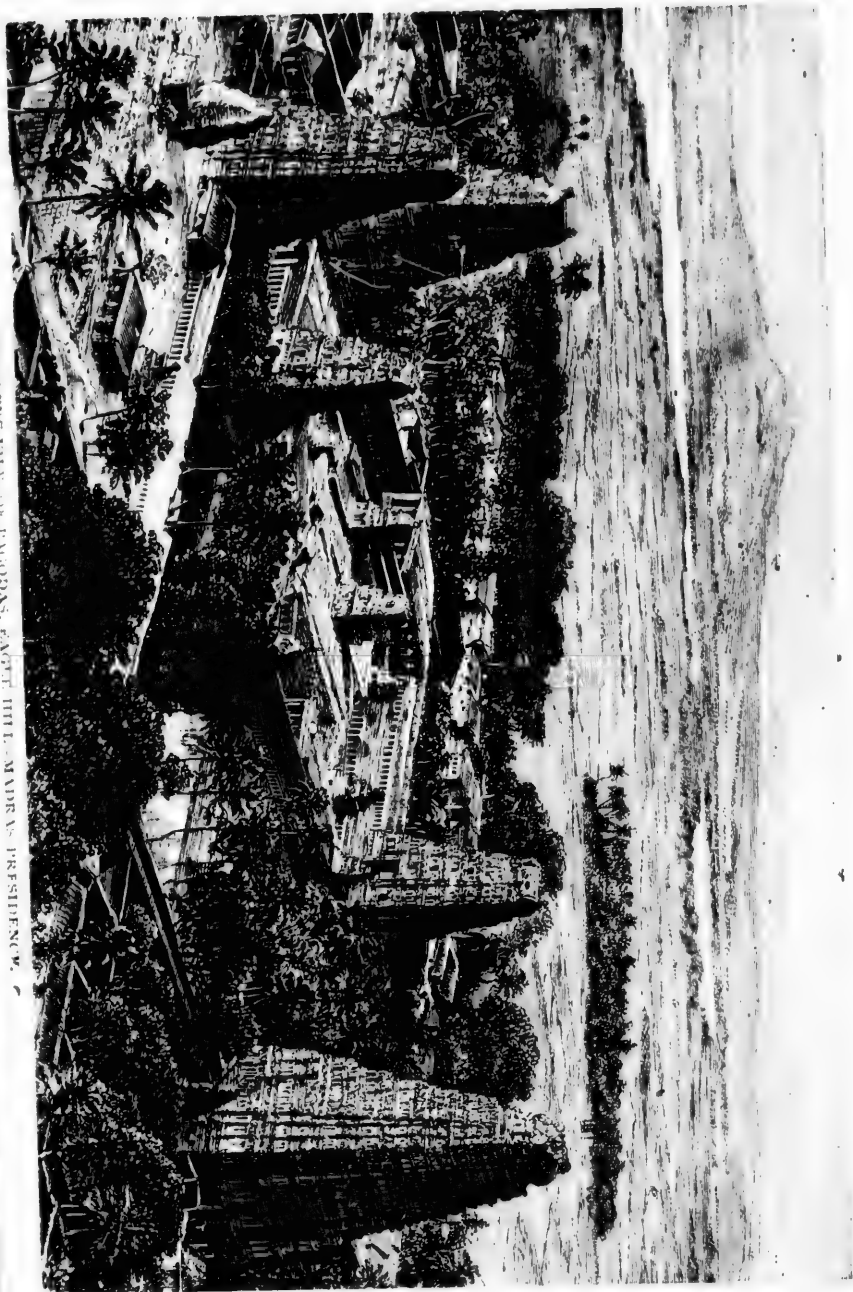
s traveling
 fellowship at
 presented to
 these the M.
 y, bore half
 Discipline.
 laboring, an
 in Massachu-
 , gallant and
 tudents were
 and so Harris
 a rebellion, a
 peror because
 fifty thousand
 he cholera, so

ese were able
 important and
 There were
 one boarding
 -five thousand
 and Hymns.

urned and re-
 ilt a seminary
 rned with the

for ministerial
 gave a fund of
 ankin hospital,
 ute, at the "Ei
 -Japanese, the

ERD: FIVE VIEW OF PAGODA, ERECTED BY L. MADR A. PRESIDENT.



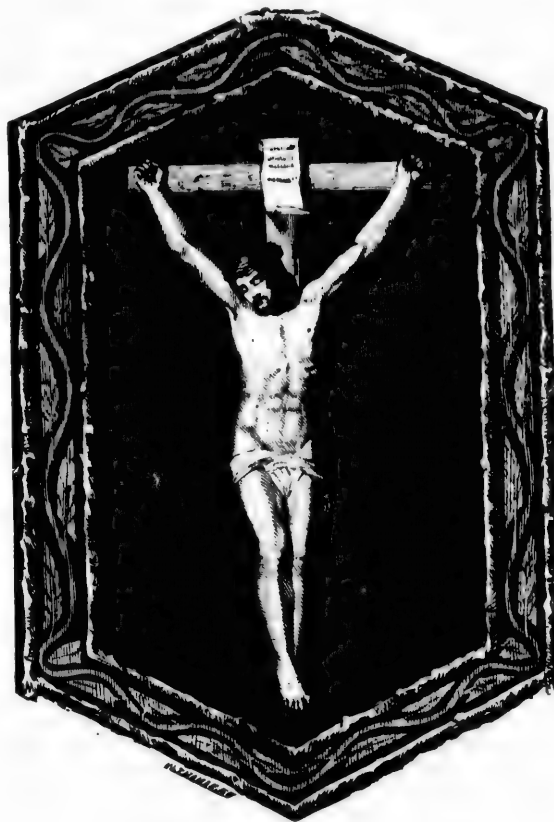
secular part of the same, there were last year one hundred and sixty-eight students. Besides this, there are five schools under the care of the W. F. M. S., and a "Cobleigh Seminary" at Nagasaki. Japan is the most hopeful land of missions. Its people have great capacity, and the converts are true, courageous and clear-headed. These now number about seventeen hundred.

In the year 1886, Mr. Harris, one of the first missionaries, as we have told, came to work for the Japanese in California. He finds eight hundred in and about San Francisco, seventy being baptized Christians. Many of these attend high schools; six are in the Pacific University, and eighteen have just gone to eastern schools. Half are of the gentry class, the rest of the "intelligent middle." They all wish to learn English "as she is spoke," and to return to Japan to promote the welfare of their own people. In six months, though mostly poor, they have given Mr. Harris over one thousand dollars for religious purposes. "I left Japan with regrets. The work there is charming, and moves with power and promise. I am thankful that in my native land I may still labor among the Japanese to whom, thirteen years ago, I dedicated my life." Indeed, he could not find a work nobler or more useful.

Corea, north of Japan and China, has been a hermit among nations, known by hardly more than name. Of late it has had violent internal strifes. In 1885, Appenzeller and Seranton went to explore it. They found it a land of idle men and toiling women, but at Seoul, the capital, they found entrance, and bought lands for future uses. Dr. Seranton's mother takes land in the same spot for the W. F. M. S. Her son entered at once upon his practice of medicine; he was solicited to receive students and, making his own house a dispensary, finds the work growing beyond his ability. Three Corean students have been sent to the school in Tokio.

The King has given his royal sanction to the work. "It is very kind of you to take such interest in Coreans; it would be a good

thing if you were to teach them, and there could be no objection." This meant: "Go ahead, if you can get pupils!" Appenzeller now has pupils, as Seranton has patients, and the fruits will appear. Corea is the land into which Methodism has most recently entered, in which the Gospel was hitherto quite unknown.



CHAPTER XXII.

Methodism in India.



ALF the size of the United States is about the extent of India, which has five times as many people, and these are of twenty-one races, using fifty tongues. Upon such a land there is room for all the labor that Christendom can spare. The East India Company fiercely persisted in excluding all missionaries for one hundred years, and when it was at last obliged to concede their entrance, as by the law of Britain and of nations, it contrived hindrances down to the Sepoy Mutiny, about the time that Methodism entered the country. In 1856, William Butler, an Irish Wesleyan of talent and education, and well acquainted with English affairs, had come to preach in the United States.

In Ireland he had been assistant of James Lynch, who, after thirty years of service as Wesleyan missionary in India, had returned enfeebled to his native land. Butler was thus peculiarly related to a missionary enterprise in India, and his superior personal qualities completed his fitness. He was sent to find the best place and to found a mission, and September 25, 1856, he reached Calcutta. To choose a field in so large a land, where Wesleyans and others were at work before him, was a task delicate towards other missionaries and difficult in itself. "We are to go, not to those who want us, but to those who want us most," is the Wesleyan rule. He wanted to leave none without the Gospel. At last he chose the northwest provinces. His field had on the north the

Himalayas; on the west and south the Ganges, being Rohilcund and Oude. It was about as large as eleven-tenths of Pennsylvania, but with five times as many people, Lucknow having three hundred and fifty thousand. Other missionary societies conceded to that of the M. E. Church the right and duty of evangelizing this district. To occupy it, Butler asked for twenty-five missionaries. The Presbyterians at Allahabad kindly sent him a young native as an interpreter, Joel T. Janiver, afterwards the first native preacher.

In a fortnight after work had begun at Bareilly the mutiny broke out. Dr. Butler, after much urging, fled with his family to Nynce Tal on the mountains. Joel remained to watch the outrages. He saw the head of Maria, the first convert, struck off by the sword of a Sepoy. Emma, the other, escaped and, returning, buried Maria's body under a rose hedge by the mission dwelling. The rage of the mutineers against these was from their having eaten with Christians. The forces of Neil and Havelock soon arrived, but the whole story of the mutiny was dreadful.

On the very day when the mutiny broke out in Bareilly, Messrs. Humphrey and Pierce, with their wives, left Boston for India, and, arriving, they went to Nynce Tal. Parsons, a man five years in the country and fluent in the language, the Hindoostanee, joined the mission, and all began to learn the language and to labor where they were. They went to Bareilly and Moradabad in January, 1859, living in tents. The people first reached were the Sikhs, a loose and straggling race, a few miles out of the cities, who got the idea of bettering themselves by becoming Christians. In spite of this worldly motive, many became true and active Christians. They served well as preachers, teachers, colporteurs and catechists. After a dozen years, four-fifths of the converts were still from these Sikhs. In spite of this primal notion that they were to receive and not give in Christianity, they have so far improved as habit-

ually to give as much as they spent on their former religion. Soon two valuable helpers appeared. One, Azim Ali, was specially of use as a teacher of the language. The other, Fieldbrave, was Eurasian—i. e., European-Asian, of English father and Hindoo mother. He had served as preacher and in state employ, and he now entered and spent some years in the mission. He was a fine speaker and an earnest laborer, so that he was of great use to the work in its feeble days. His son is now a preacher in North India.

It was at four P. M., March 18, 1859, that Dr. Humphrey and Joseph went to the bazaar to unfold the banner of the Cross in the heart of the great city. The people crowded around and heard with reverence and wonder. Both preachers spoke and felt encouraged at what they saw. In the evening they preached before the Rotwalee or police station, the street being well watered, and the chief of police, a young Turk from the Crinaean war, a shrewd and prudent man, standing by them. This man walked home with the preachers, asking if they could not in preaching omit the *name* of Jesus, as that was irritating to Mahomedans. They explained to him why they could not, and he owned the force of their reasons. In July of this year, Humphrey baptized his first convert, Zahur-ul-Kugg, a Mahomedan teacher, now a preacher. This man was for his faith driven from his father, mother, wife and children.

The Methodist was a preaching mission, and American ways seemed happily fitted to India. Perhaps the people were shy of the English as their conquerors. They have habitual gatherings at fairs and festivals, and of these the M. E. missionaries have made good use. Sometimes two millions of people encamp for days at some sacred or habitual place, so that continuous preaching is heard. They live in villages in the country, and at evening, as in their cities, all are at leisure and can listen in the public squares. In the cool season, preachers go with tents from village to village,

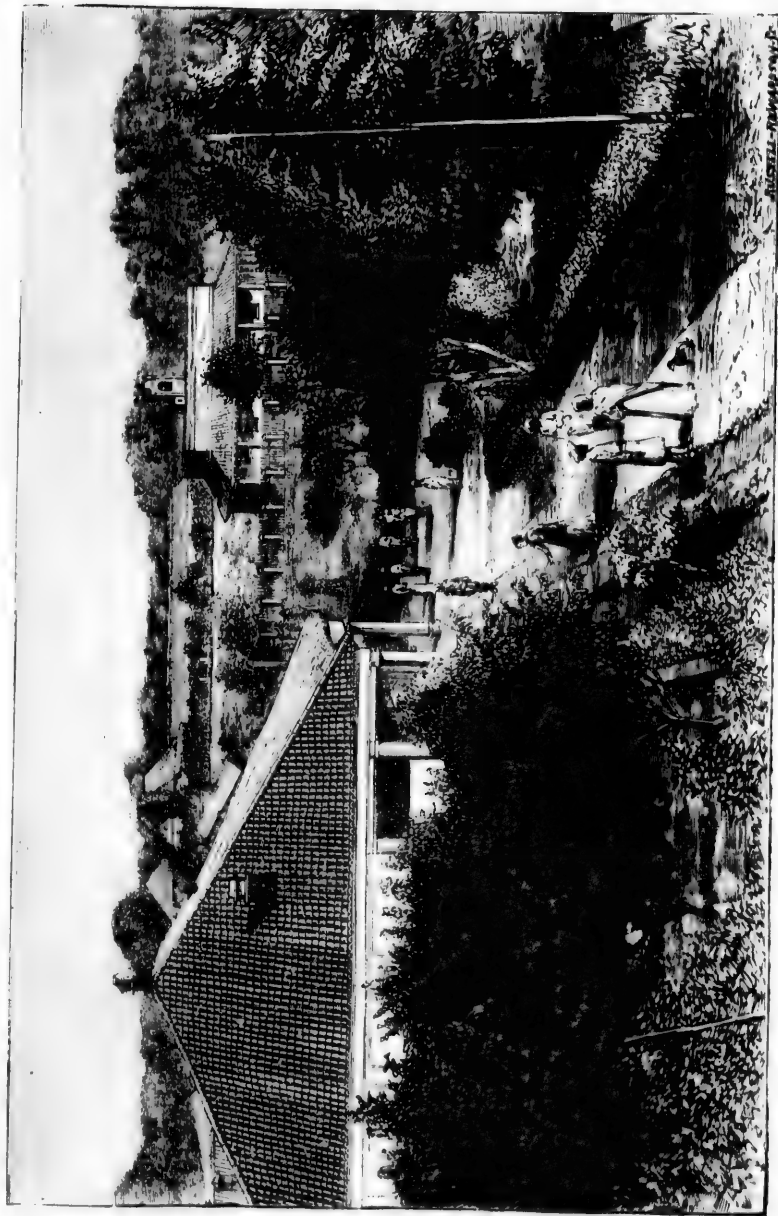
as the preachers went in early Methodism, and so, it is said, the Brahminic teachers had always done. This accounts for a large part of Methodist success in India.

Sir Henry Lawrence, who was with Havelock a great figure in the mutiny, said at his death: "Let a mission be established in Lucknow." It was a great city and a center of a great region, and just then, by its siege and sufferings in the mutiny, its association with the great name of Havelock and Scotch Jennie's "Dinna ye hear it?" when the relieving force was miles away, Lucknow was before the eyes of the world. All roads to other missions passed through this great city.

Montgomery, a noble Christian, commissioner or military Governor, gave the mission a valuable property, confiscated from mutineers, and offered what other sites it might need, for the reason of its being a public benefit. He added from his own purse five hundred dollars. Work began at once. The first comer to the mission was an orphan, a girl of sixteen months; then a boy, who became an exhorter; then a native policeman. In July, 1859, there were thirty converts, forty-nine baptisms, and a dozen serious inquirers.

The next month came from home five missionaries and their wives, with J. M. Thoburn, who, after twenty-five years of "apprenticeship," is now at the head of the India work. Of these, Mr. Downey died soon after arrival, but Mrs. Downey (née Rockwell, from a gay, dashing girl, come to be a devoted, enterprising woman) went on with the work.

The mission was now enlarged, and Bareilly became its center. There was fixed at Shahjehanpore "The World's King's City," an asylum for orphan boys, survivors of the mutiny. One of these, found on an elephant's back after his father had fallen in fight, is to-day a preacher, James Gowan. So did the orphanages strengthen the mission.



MISSION HOUSE AND ORPHANAGE, BAREILLY, INDIA.

A Book Concern, after Methodist type, was started, and now flourishes at Lucknow. In a year, there were fifty-six native Christians in Bareilly. Budrow was then reached, premises purchased, and Mr. and Mrs. Humphrey began work. There was a famine, and the common people (half the people of India never have what *we* call a full meal) were starving. The police picked up children whose parents had died of hunger, and these they instinctively brought to the mission. A girl's orphanage was thus begun.

Here was now brought, from the lowest caste, Chinman Lall. His early training was of the most baleful sort, but he heard the Word, and with deep conviction and much inborn energy he broke away from the ways of his fathers. He studied hard, and completed well a theological course in the school afterwards founded at Bareilly. He then, with Wesley's own zeal, went from village to village, addressing chiefly his own low caste, and with true Wesleyan results. He is now, 1887, in labor and usefulness at Lucknow.

Mahbub Khan, a Mahometan, was teacher in a government school. Seeking for truth (with a mind graciously disturbed, as active heathen minds are apt to be when the Gospel comes near), he read all books of his own faith and grew more restless. He had been told that Christianity was false: he saw that Mohametanism was so. One day he asked a fellow-teacher for a book "to drive away the blues," and got a New Testament left by a missionary. This he took home, read a little, laid it by, and then took it up again. He read the Blessings of Matt. v. and thought them indeed well invented! He read on, and the Sufferings, Matt. xxvii., touched him, and he felt that this must be true, and he accepted it. He meant to be a quiet, prudent Christian, but "his tongue broke out in unknown strains." He began to tell his older pupils what he had found. He could



HOME FOR LADY MISSIONARIES, BAREILLY, INDIA.

but come to the missionary and confess Christ. He expected that his wife would forsake him and his family be broken up. She studied the case and nobly said: "I am your wife and will never leave you." They and their children were baptized, and several of their kindred have followed them. Mahbub showed talents of a high order, and soon became a preacher and at the head of the native ministry.

The missionaries came rapidly on in that most difficult matter, the talking to the people in their own tongue. Still they had queer experiences. If they spoke ardently, they seemed to the average hearer to be "mad about something," and all wondered what it could be. Every little precinct had its local speech or slang, and good, classic words were liable to be misunderstood. The missionaries laughed at their own blunders, and the people, keen as old Athenians, enjoyed them. One was preaching, when a portly pundit—rabbi, doctor—interrupted him several times. The preacher finally turned: "You are no pundit; you are only pindit" (i. e., a fat man). The crowd laughed at the pun, and the pundit was suppressed.

Another trouble was with the child marriages. These take place while the bride is a child of six, eight or ten years. She goes to live in the family of her future husband, and there fares like a slave. If her betrothed die, she, poor thing! is doomed to a servile life, so that the old suttee—widow-burning—was a positive relief. It is believed that the Empress Victoria will call attention to this matter in early legislation. Thus, in a family, the men and boys came to baptism without the girls. The missionaries early refused to baptize men without their families, and now many a household has true Christian usage; but what are they among so many?

Another sore trouble to the converts was from their ancient persuasion that the spirits of the dead need food and drink, and they

who refuse to offer these will, after death, suffer in their own turn thirst and hunger. These offerings to the dead were hard to renounce.

The women of India were like most women in heathen lands, sufferers from heathen usages. Those of high rank suffered most. Since the English have been in the land, native princesses have ruled with energy and success in various domains and yet have



TEACHING IN A ZENANA, INDIA.

never seen their generals or ministers, holding all councils and giving all orders from behind a screen, yet showing by their comprehension and sagacity great ability in affairs. In sickness, the pulse was felt and treatment prescribed in the same way. The life of a high lady was that of a frog in a well. She never went from the *zenana* unless closely veiled, and she saw no man's face but her husband's, and heard no voice but his. Without books, music or society, she led a dismal life.

The zenana—harem—woman's part of the house, was of course shut to missionaries, and only orphans and women of the lowest caste could hear the Gospel. At last, entrance to these family prisons was made by medical missionaries.

India is a land of immense sickness. The people seemed to think that the newly come preachers could heal their diseases, as a part of their sacred calling. Humphrey, one of the first missionaries, was a medical man, and he saw the need of the mission.

Miss Swain, a trained physician, came to his help in 1870, and he needed her, for in the previous year he had had thirty-five

thousand patients at seven dispensaries managed by himself with a growing band of fairly-trained students and helpers. A native prince presented her at Bareilly an estate worth forty thousand dollars, for a medical school and hospital, and on this a noble building has been erected.

Miss Swain made, in 1870, two hundred and fifty visits, and treated at her rooms one thousand two hundred and twenty-five

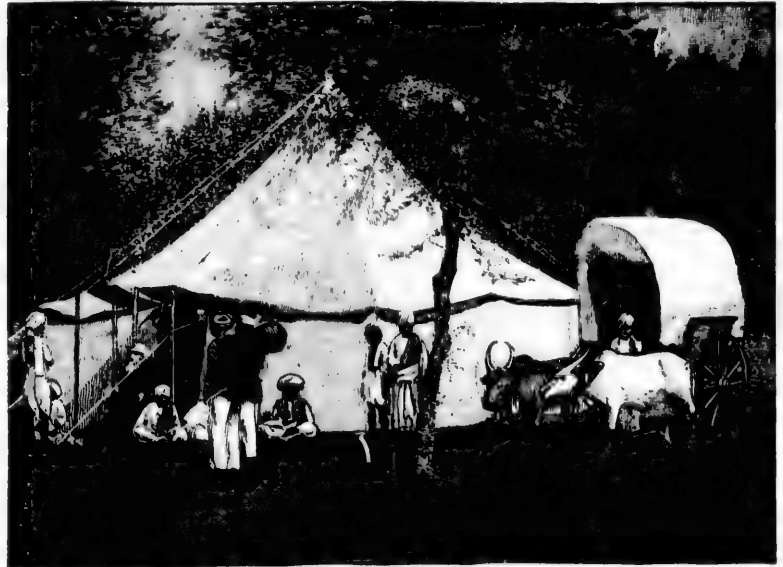
patients. Her school has sent out almost every year a class such as were, by a competent Board, pronounced qualified to practice medicine. The W. F. M. S. has sent out accomplished ladies as physicians. All have been taxed to their utmost by calls for practice. Princes have sent carriages to bring them to their palaces, and the poor have blessed them for healing. Wherever these and their helpers have gone, they have freely carried the Gospel balm for souls, and thus the zenanas have been reached.

Thus at Moradabad, in 1874, Miss Julia Lore opened practice.



CARRIE M. SWAIN.

With two helpers she sat in her dispensary for a week, when a little boy from across the street was brought to be treated. A crowd soon followed and she was called to families. A young Mahometan lady said: "One day I became suddenly ill. Our friends were alarmed and called the 'doctor, Miss Sahib.' I soon recovered and now they are quite willing that you should come to our house." She had never seen a Sahib (i. e., missionary, really



MISSIONARY TENT LIFE, INDIA.

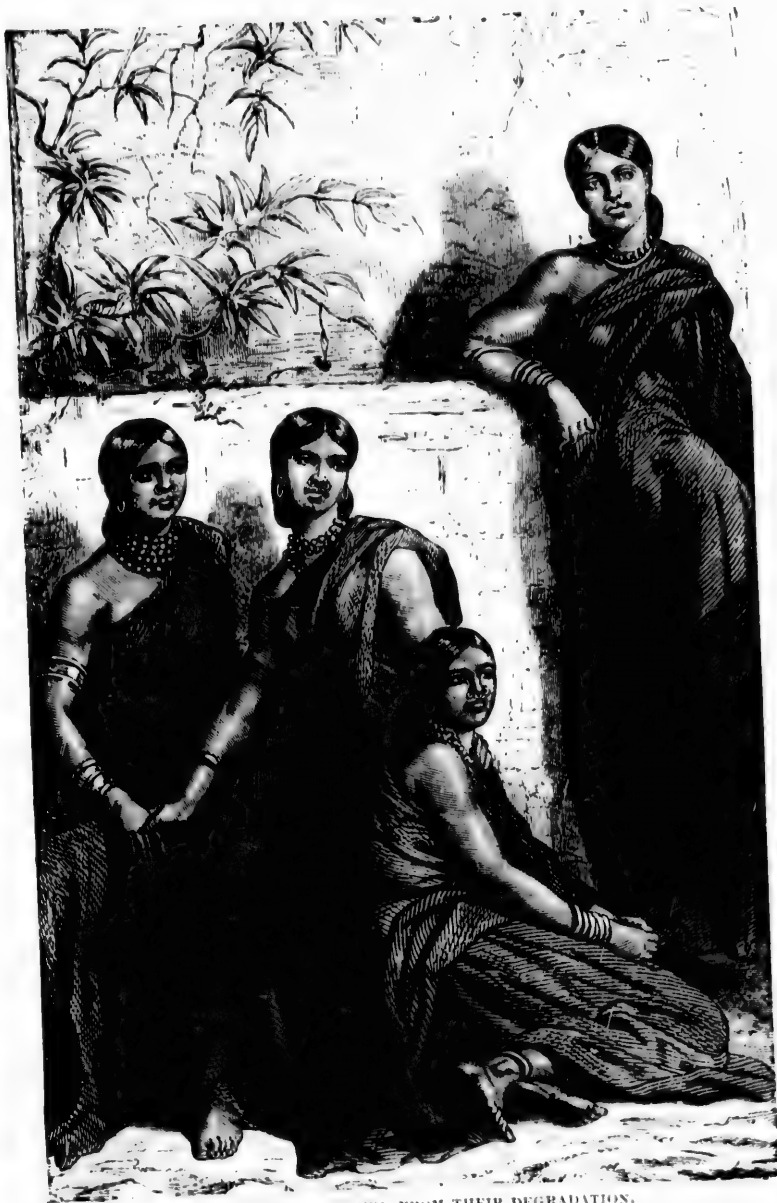
"Your Worship") nor any foreign woman but Miss **Lore**.

In this way "the doctor, Miss Sahib," opened hearts and houses. She was at length welcomed with tender embraces and asked to tell about the "new religion." Elderly women would call her "daughter" and listen tearfully if she would sing a *bhajan*, a Christian hymn to a native tune. Those who were not exactly sick would send for the doctor to beguile in conversation the time that hung upon their hands. They were faithfully told of

, when a
ated. A
A young
ill. Our
I soon
I come to
ry, really



ore.
and houses.
and asked to
uld call her
a *bhajan*, a
not exactly
ersation the
fully told of



HINDU WOMEN RESCUED FROM THEIR DEGRADATION.

Christ and His salvation, and many longed for peace in Him, but profession meant banishment from home.

After the physician followed the Bible reader, with tracts and portions of Scripture, and words of love and experience, and these produced in the zenanas results of which we cannot now speak in detail. There are now in India a vast number, more than one million, of homes where teaching is done, and the zenana school is a great institution. The Gospel is taught in but few, yet the effect of them all is to arouse and guide the women of the land, and the result is sure to be beneficial.

Out of the mission day-schools came slowly the Sunday-school. Parents were greedy of secular education for their children and consented, to obtain this, that there should be some use of Scripture. Soon the Bible was a text-book, and the Catechism, and then came prayer and preaching.

Craven, an experienced Sunday-school worker, came to Lucknow, in 1871, and took charge of the school work. He soon invited all the boys to come to a Sunday-school. Many came and, finding it good, brought their comrades, and the work went on until soon every school in the missions became a Sunday-school. The annual picnics are joyous and effective. The "honor-men," boys and girls, who have had no absence or lost no lesson for the year, ride upon a stately elephant, furnished often by some native nobleman, and the beast's capacity is many times taxed by the numbers of successful scholars. The singing, the sports and the refreshments make the holiday complete. There is a good supply of Sunday-school literature. This year the Sunday-schools of India have about twenty-five thousand scholars.

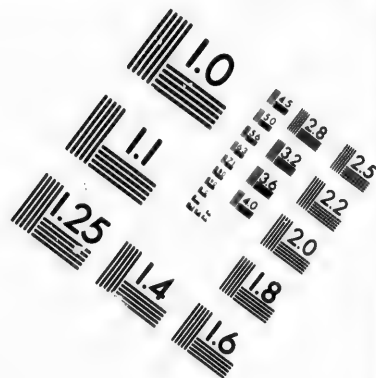
Provision is made for higher education. India had always been a land of schools, such as they were, and, just before our mission was planted, Lord Bentinck, governor-general, had organized a great system, with universities at Calcutta, Madras

and Bombay. Of this, the masses, the poor, got little benefit. Schools, as we have seen, were soon connected with the missions. In 1872, D. W. Thomas, a missionary, gave twenty thousand dollars to found a theological school at Bareilly, for he saw how the young native preachers needed thorough training to cope with Brahminical and Mohammedan teachers, and with the growing mind of young India. Every false and infidel notion of the world was coming, or was liable to come, with the new intellectual life now dawning on the land. To this, Remington, of Ilion, N. Y., added five thousand dollars, and the sum became sixty-five thousand dollars. It is now prosperous, graduating, in 1885, nine, of whom five are good English, as well as vernacular, scholars.

There is a normal school with four graduates. The theological school, all others in India having failed, has shown how the wants of the land may be skillfully met, and other Churches, after thirteen years' watching of its processes, are now establishing their own after its pattern. Of many other excellent Methodist schools in India there is here no need of mention.

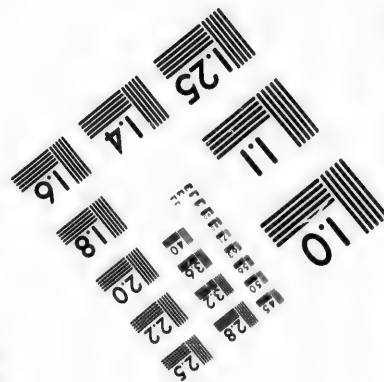
In 1870, that William Taylor whom we saw in California came to India. He had been to Australia by a long road, a year in England, and three years in the regions of Australia and the South Pacific. He had then spent four years in South Africa, where twelve hundred colonists and seven thousand Kaffirs had been brought to Christ under his labors. Thence, by the West Indies and British Guiana, he reached India. The missionaries gave him a hearty welcome. He is a fearless, independent man, who marks out his work, and does it, fond of breaking into new, hard work.

Dr. Thoburn yearned for revival work, for something beyond the routine, for invasion of territory outside of the lines, and he had urged Taylor to come and help them. He came, a giant in



A resolution test chart featuring various patterns of vertical and horizontal lines. The patterns are arranged in a grid-like fashion, with numerical values indicating the resolution level. The values include 1.0, 1.1, 1.25, 1.4, 1.6, 1.8, 2.0, 2.2, 2.5, 2.8, 3.2, 3.6, 4.0, 4.5, and 5.0. Each pattern consists of a set of lines of a specific width and spacing, designed to test the ability of a system to resolve fine details.

6"



**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



bodily strength, silent of habit, majestic in his long, white beard, indifferent to what might be said, with no "if" in his talking. He had come to work in revival, and a week after him the revival came. His meetings were singularly quiet, but powerful. They broke all the slow routine, and brought in life and victory. He was not able, for various reasons, to affect the native masses, but he gave courage and impulse to all workers.

He then went to the larger field of Bombay and South India. He there organized of his converts, at their request, a Church, self-supporting, evangelistic, with no distinction of caste, language or color. The Eurasians, the business men but lost from Christianity, were moved by his appeals and came to his support. Laymen who could preach in various tongues were raised up to help him. Mohammedans, Hindus and Parsees were reached, and the times of refreshing had come. Missionaries came from America, and Churches were formed in South India of men who paid the expenses of all movements and did not wish the Gospel as a charity.

Taylor then went to Calcutta. "The hardest work of my life was here and under the greatest discouragements. A great work of God was what Calcutta least desired and most needed. A more convenient season would never come; so I determined, as the Lord should lead, to win the battle or die at the guns." After months of labor, only fifty-three were gained.

In 1873, Taylor's Churches were brought into the Methodist Connection, having ten preachers and five hundred members. Dr. Thoburn took charge in Calcutta. Taylor then went to Madras, the only remaining great city, and labored six months. Three hundred and forty had been converted, but some of these joined other Churches, but a good society was formed, as was, soon after, the case in other cities of the region. Soon, Taylor went to America, still working in many ways for India.

At length, in 1875, he visited, after eight years' absence, "my

wife and boys" in California, and soon went to South America on another great evangelizing tour after his firmly-held Pauline ideal.

He left in India a record of hearty labor under the greatest of difficulties, and he broke the way through appalling barriers into



GRADUATING CLASS.

new regions where men of his spirit have followed successfully.

In Calcutta, Dr. Thoburn entered at once upon revival work, which can hardly be said to have ceased after ten years of prog-

ress. A church holding two thousand was built and paid for. It is now under the care of J. M. Thoburn, Jr., and is a center of religious power, though its actual growth is not large on account of its constantly feeding other enterprises.

Calcutta is a great sea-port, and the first member of Taylor's Church was captain of a vessel. In 1875, Mr. Oakes, an Eurasian, was led to visit seamen and invite them to the meetings. Soon Christian ladies began to visit for singing and prayer the resorts of sailors, asking them to attend service. Many were gathered in from the dens and dives; captains invited preaching on their ships, and soon a seamen's M. E. Church was organized. The work has been good and salutary. On the church premises are a coffee-room, reading-room, inquiry-room and boarding-rooms,



RAM CHUNDER BOSE.

with residence for the missionary. Sometimes a dozen men are converted at a meeting, and efforts are then made to form praying-bands on their respective ships, so that each, as it goes from port, may be a floating Bethel. The best of men are chosen for the work, at present B. T. Eddy and C. W. Miller.

There is also at Calcutta a thriving native Church where service is in Bengalee.

There is an inebriate asylum, and schools which were made necessary by the fact that existing schools were either ritualistic or Romish. Dr. Thoburn has of late done evangelist work with most excellent results. Last year he was, by a broken leg, unable to serve, and was recuperating in America.

His work has reached to Rangoon in Burmah, where S. P. Long has a Church and a large and laborious field. Singapore, an island fifteen hundred miles from Calcutta, the center of a great and growing trade, has now been occupied, and Mr. W. F. Oldham, who, with Mrs. Oldham, is Eurasian, and of rare talent, has there gathered a society of twenty-five.

Gifted men have arisen in the M. E. Church of India. Dennis Osborne, an Eurasian, and Ram Chunder Bose, a Hindoo, visiting this country at General Conference, have won the highest esteem. Dr. Thoburn affirms that, if Christianity were to die in America, there is enough of Church force and faith in India to take hold and restore it. Last year, 1886, was the most prosperous of all years. In an evangelizing tour in Oude, three villages were wholly converted and baptized, and the South India Conference were calling for twenty-five men to enter immediate service. We must leave ampler details. Enough has been told to show that Methodism is in India, acting its beneficent character fully out, doing its own work, and inspiring its evangelical neighbors to do theirs in love and harmony.

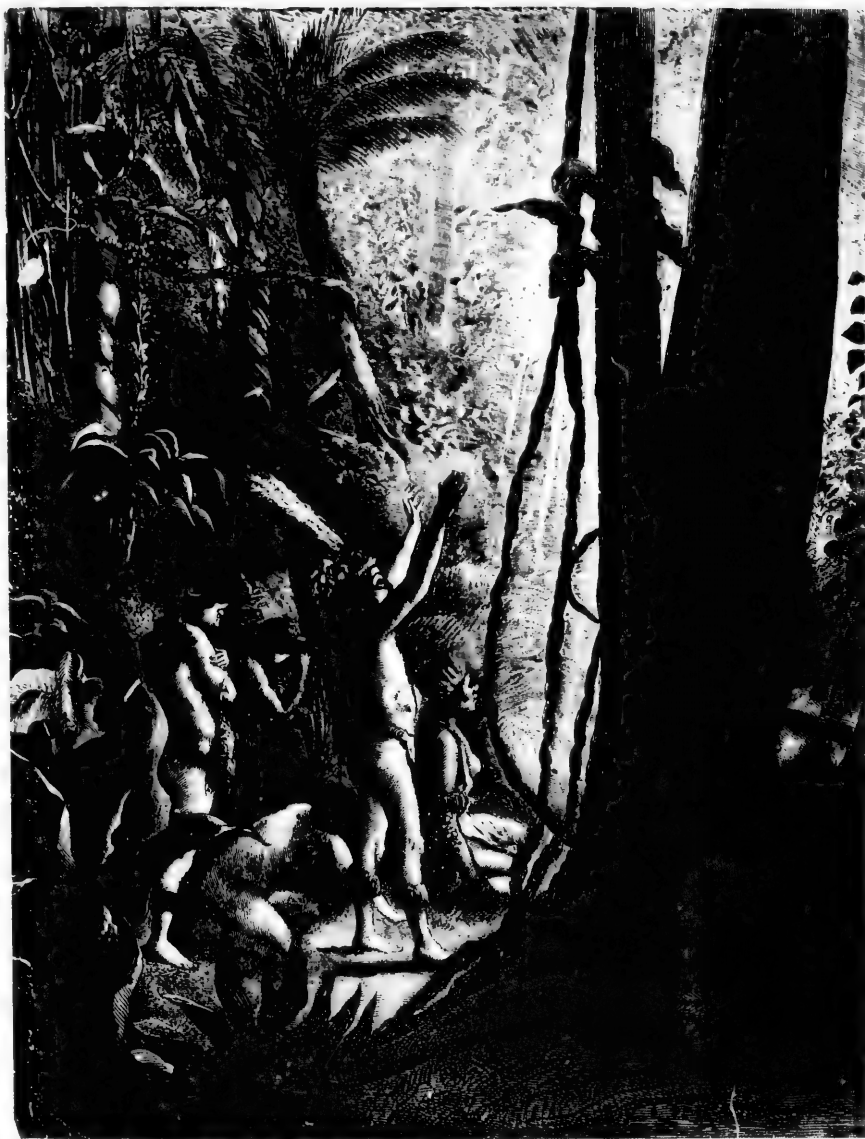


CHAPTER XXIII.

Methodism in South and Spanish America.

BETWEEN the United States and Cape Horn, the M. E. Church, after it came to ability to do foreign work, found a line of states now getting clear of the Old World and proposing to govern themselves. The people were Pagan or Romanist and twenty millions in number, and the New World below us was to be what they should make it. It was natural to count these needy people the first claimants on missionary benevolence. In 1835, a Mr. Pitts was sent to examine South America, and on his report Mr. Spaulding was sent to Rio Janeiro and Mr. Dempster to Buenos Ayres. In Rio, the preaching was not allowed in anything that looked on the outside like a church, (a queer statute !) and in Buenos Ayres it could not be in the Spanish language. The Romish Church did its utmost at multiplying obstacles. There was enough to be done; the Scriptures, at least, could be circulated. Spaulding soon had in Rio forty hearers, and Kidder came to his help. They opened a Sunday-school, the first effort ever made for the blacks, and had a weekly prayer-meeting. At this

States and
church, after
foreign work,
getting clear
proposing to
people were
twenty mil-
New World
they should
count these
claimants on
Mr. Pitts was
in his report
to and Mr.
he preaching
on the out-
ed in Buenos
a language.
multiplying
done; the
Spaulding
der came to
effort ever
ing. At this



AMAZONIAN INDIANS WORSHIPING THE SUN

time, 1836, Rio was a bad place. It had one thousand priests, but no prayer or sermon for the people. The priests were low in morals, and cared about religion only enough to oppose with fury the efforts of the missionaries. Not one in five hundred of the people, or in one hundred of the priests, had ever seen a Bible.

By the aid of the Bible Society and of some generous English merchants a great many Bibles were distributed. The mission-



SHIP PREACHING.

aries also preached on board ships in the harbor, especially those of their own navy.

Mr. Kidder traveled extensively. He was the first Protestant minister to visit San Paulo. He found one priest who welcomed the Bible and aided in its circulation. As he was just feeling able to preach in Portuguese, the sudden death of Mrs. Kidder compelled him to return home. For various reasons the work in Brazil was given up to the Presbyterian missions already established there.

The Methodist Church South has now in Brazil flourishing missions.

There remained the work in Buenos Ayres. The first Protestant worship in the city was held by a Baptist, Mr. Thompson, in 1820. A Sunday-school was opened the next year, and a Presbyterian mission was conducted. It was closed before Dempster's arrival in 1836, but worship was continued without a pastor. The awful Rosas was then Dictator, but he welcomed Dempster, only warning him to keep to the foreign population. The city is to Europeans the avenue to South America, to which come four thousand miles of navigable rivers, flowing through fertile regions.

Dempster found ample foreign population (now fifty thousand), and to these for twenty years the work was limited. He was an able man, and soon there was need of building. Then war came on; the society was in debt and its workers were recalled. Three years later came peace, and the stir of business was sudden and immense, and all life revived. Before recall Dempster had done well. His parsonage was finished and his church nearly so; his day and Sunday-schools, his Church and congregation were respectable.

All were sad at the stoppage of the work. At Montevideo, a petition to Bishop Hedding, headed by Tarros, the Swedish consul-general, set forth that the removal of Norris, the missionary at that place, would leave them in darkness and ignorance, as painful as a relapse in fever. At Buenos Ayres, the foreign residents guaranteed one thousand a year to support Norris, if sent to them. He was ordered to sell out the plant at Montevideo and go to Buenos Ayres. On Christmas, 1842, he received at the latter place a hearty welcome. For four years he was blessed in his labors. Most of the time a civil war was raging, but he kept his flock and it grew in spite of the evils that accompany war.

In 1846, he came home, and Dr. Lore was his successor.

priests, but
were low in
oppose with
hundred of
ever seen a

ous English
The mission-



pecially those

st Protestant
no welcomed
just feeling
Mrs. Kidder
the work in
ready estab-

During four months of interval, sermons were read and meetings sustained by the members. Dr. Lore was in service until 1854. Mr. Carrow, who succeeded him, found on every side the fruits of eight years' faithful labor, even in troublous times. In the Church were about eighty, gathered amid the long storm of war. In 1855, the last revolution ended, and Carrow urged prompt extension of the work. His labors met obstacles and misfortunes. Half the gatherings were lost and, Mrs. Carrow's health failing, he had to return home. Dr. Goodfellow now took charge of the work, and the time of the divine favor drew near, when the seed sown in tears and toil was to bring its harvest. He managed the mission thirteen years, and rarely did a month pass without conversions. There were wars, cholera and earthquakes, but, in spite of commotions, there was progress. In 1863, a school for the poor was begun, and this



BUENOS AYRES M. E. CHURCH.

proved a true and efficient aid to the mission. In 1872, a beautiful church edifice was erected, for which long efforts had been made, beginning in 1864. In that year, Dempster, the first missionary, died, and the church, though long in building, was truly his memorial among those whom he had well served and who held

meetings
until 1854.
the fruits
s. In the
m of war.
ed prompt



CHURCH.

2, a beauti-
ts had been
he first mis-
g, was truly
nd who held

him in lively remembrance. The work now spread, and, as in the rest of the world, it had its heroes. George Schmidt, who, besides his German, spoke many tongues, undertook the Bible work. He carried his pack over thousands of weary miles. The priests, to whom he always first offered his books, often got him thrown into prison, but he was always able to defend himself in court, and the more his persecutions, the larger his sales. Mobs were unable to do him harm. He had been a kleptomaniac, who could not sleep unless he had stolen something, and for this he was in prison in Brazil, when a Bible from the Bible Society was the means of his conversion, and his propensity to steal troubled him no more.

He worked as cooper, and with his earnings bought Bibles to give away in gratitude for his cure. He, at last, went into the service of the Bible Society, and there wore himself out. He died in a rude hospital, alone and uncared-for, but he had won the record of a good and faithful servant.

After a prayer-meeting, a captain of the Argentine army, blazing with new uniform, arose and declared himself an Auracanian Indian from southern Chili. His people, he said, had convents and the like, but "no good." He had been baptized, but was, for all that, a pagan. They had schools, but he could not read, for they were never taught that. In the meeting, his heart had been touched with the simple, spiritual worship. He begged for a missionary. His tribe were sowing and reaping, making butter and cheese, living in their own houses, but had no light. "I will build you a house about as good as this." This was Antonio Negron, a chief of that great tribe on the Pacific coast. There was no missionary for him.

Charles William Pearson had come from England and entered business with his brother in Buenos Ayres. On his birthday, August 5, 1865, his mother, widow of a Wesleyan minister, a lady

of culture and faith, wrote from Leeds: "I have been all day in prayer for you, and now just at night my prayer is answered; you are to be converted and become a minister: I know not when or how, but my covenant-keeping God has said it." At just the same hour, after a thoughtful day, Charles was writing to her: "My plans are changed; I am to be a Christian at all hazards; Christ first and business afterwards, if at all." The letters passed each other in mid-ocean, and six weeks after writing were read at their destinations on the same day. Charles at once became active in the mission, such an ally as cheered all hearts. He afterwards graduated at Evanston, and has long been professor of English in the Northwestern University. Urquiza, Governor of Entre Rios, in 1866, welcomed the missionary to his own town of Urquiza, and gave five hundred dollars towards building a church.

John F. Thomson, whose family had come from Scotland, and whose "mither," deeply imbued with lessons of "the great har Bible," found congenial fellowship at the mission, was to be a sheep farmer. Dr. Goodfellow turned his thoughts to an education. He was converted and spent seven years amid the ennobling associations of the Ohio Wesleyan University. Returning in 1866, he resumed his Spanish, and enriched it with all the resources of his education.

The next year he heard of Mrs. Aldeber. This lady was born in Patagonia, the southernmost town in the world, on the frontier of civilization. Here a lady from Spain was teaching, and "Fermina" became her pupil, and very dear. The lady had a New Testament, and when her loved Fermina became Mrs. Aldeber, she gave it as the choicest of bridal presents. Years after, Fermina, a widow with four children, teaching at Boca, not far from Buenos Ayres, heard that a clergyman in the city was preaching from her now old, worn book, the Testament. She invited him to her

house, and service was there sustained for ten years, and then she removed to the city.

At her home was converted Cardoza, a sailor of reckless character. *Conversion* it truly was. His life was at once transformed after Christ's dear image. He began a faithful support of his family, and also the leading of his friends to Christ. In a yellow fever, that in 1871 wasted the city, he, with another convert, gave his time to the sick, saving more patients than the physicians, and bringing many to the Saviour of souls. He then took his religion to a colony on the northern frontier, to the Gran Chaco, where for ten years it has been a light shining in a dark place. The first Spanish sermon in Buenos Ayres was given by Mr. Thomson, May 25, 1867. His audience was more than the house could hold, and of the best people in the city, legislators, professional men and prominent citizens crowding with the common people.

The preacher frankly stated the difference between his Gospel and that of Rome, so that the Spanish work might rest on clear foundations. He had a good hearing, as also on Tuesday evening afterwards, and the new work was fairly begun.

In 1868, three sailors came to the parsonage to inquire where to find lodgings and labor. They staid to a prayer-meeting, and all began the Christian life. One of them, Mathieson, opened a sailors' home for an evening resort, and by day gave his time to labor among the hundreds of seamen in port. He could speak half a dozen languages, and thus reach men of many nations. He had some trials, but good success. One morning he found himself without money or breakfast, but he never stopped work. He found at the post-office a letter with two dollars, which a sailor dying in England had sent him in gratitude for kindly service. Mathieson afterwards served in New Mexico, the northern border of those ninety millions of Spanish peoples on whose southern border he entered his work.

The most eminent lady in literature that Spanish America has ever produced, Señora de Norhona, known wherever Spanish is spoken, became, in her last years, a devoted laborer in our Church and Sunday-school. Just before her death, her pastor found her with the Bible given by her class open before her, and herself praising God for His goodness. The Romish priest refused interment in consecrated ground unless she would renounce Methodism. She quietly chose to die trusting in Christ alone, and to rest in the Protestant cemetery.

In 1871, the first Spanish service was held in Rosario by Mr. Wood, who afterwards became professor of Physics in the National College in that city.

"By their fruits ye shall know them." Our missionary has, besides spiritual results, formed a society, like Henry Bergh's in New York, that has banished bull-fights. The bull-ring was torn down, and in its place came a decent cattle-show, with premiums.

The temperance work, too, has prospered, and the W. F. M. S. has done well.

In Montevideo, Thomson, in 1868, was politely greeted, and here he had a lively experience. In the State University, a famous Romish doctor was asserting the divine authority of the Apocrypha. Thomson was invited to answer him in the University Hall. On the evening of their statement of the question, a most intelligent audience crowded to hear "the young heretic." At the next meeting the masses were not admitted, and in place of the doctor a well-fed priest appeared, who refused to debate unless the people could hear. Thomson agreed with him, and offered to adjourn to another place, but the padre could not do that without his Bishop's consent. The next Sunday night the plump padre came to Thomson's and, asking to say a word for the Church, talked on for some mortal hours. Thomson appointed to answer him on Wednesday evening, but that night fell seriously ill, and his

physicians forbade all labor. He, for rest and recovery, left the town. Then trumpeted forth the fat father a victory! His portrait he had sold on the street as "Friar Mansueto, the conqueror of Thomson." Soon his victim was back in fair health, and Mansueto, calling on him, urged him to enter the Romish, or, if he would keep his family, the Greek Church. "It was too bad to use such splendid gifts in a Church so crude and dark as the Methodist, when he could have a great career in the True and Holy Church."

The longed-for evening came, and the room was packed with Catholics, and Velazio, an eminent jurist, presided. Thomson began by saying that he had not yet been heard, yet Mansueto claimed a victory. Was that just? "As many as think it *just*, please rise!" Not one arose. "As many as think Mansueto is *not* conqueror, rise!" Every man stood up. Thus he gained good hearing, and the verdict in his favor was crushing. He was at once appreciated at the University. He lectured there, putting into his lectures a large and hearty Gospel. He became president of a literary club, and edited a literary journal for the students.

To-day there are in South America one thousand in society, and five times as many in attendance, with sixteen hundred scholars in Sunday-schools, and twelve hundred in day-schools. Three papers are printed, and our hymns are sung at the opening of the public schools, in which, of all grades, are many Methodist teachers. All the elements of growth are active, and the increase by conversion is one hundred and fifty a year.

In Mexico, the northern land of Spanish America, "our next-door neighbor," Methodism made a home in 1873. Juarez, an Indian of great ability and patriotism, had opened Mexico to Protestantism in 1857. Then came Rome's last struggle and, with the aid of the French Emperor, Mexico had years of sad, bloody history, never to be repeated.

After the long storm was over, the vast Church and properties, save churches used for worship, were confiscated, and all convents and monasteries abolished. A great door was opened and all Churches hastened to enter. There was need of it. Every bad thing of Rome had ruled and the condition of the people was dreadful. William Butler, now come from India, was taken to Mexico by Bishop Ilaven, with money given by the founder of De Paw University, to open a mission.

In Puebla they bought the grounds and buildings used by the Inquisition, where many a poor victim had come to agony. In the capital, ground far more historical was gained, the very site of Montezuma's palace, where, three hundred years before, Cortez had seized the Emperor's person and handed his country over to Spain. On this stood the Monastery of St. Francis, where four thousand monks had been fed by people to whom they had done no good. Under the noble Juarez and the new laws, this had become the property of those whose toil had built it, and for near three centuries supported it. Better mission property can be found nowhere in the world. It is in the very best part of the city and provides for every want of the enterprise. The work went on briskly, and soon there were four congregations in Mexico. In 1873, Dr. Cooper, of the Episcopal Church, having an English congregation, united it with the Methodist, and entered the Methodist Spanish work.

Towards the end of the year the Romish priests grew furious. They had had rule in Mexico three hundred and fifty years, and the people were weary of them. In half the families of the country there had never been a lawful marriage, and all other morality was of the same sort. There was a growing call for Protestant service. The priests tried violence and murder. Twenty Christians were killed, and churches were plundered. The government did its best. The Archbishop, whose word

would have stopped all outrage, let it go on, and to his Church's damage. For now ten years all is peace.

At Puebla, where the legend is that angels worked on the cathedral by night as the workmen did by day, the Church had owned nineteen-twentieths of the real estate, and did most of the business of the city. Of course there was devotion to Rome even after the confiscation of its property, and the first Protestant preacher, Dr. Riley, a Presbyterian, had to flee for his life. At the first Methodist service, January, 1875, only two persons dared to come. In April, the public were invited, and the street was full of a noisy mob, whom a rain in good time scattered.

In August, the new premises were used. As native preachers were needed, a school for training converts was opened in 1876. Since then the favor and energy of the government has secured rest and the work has prospered.

Guanajuato, a city of eighty thousand people, in a rich region, three hundred miles north of the capital, among fat lands and silver mines, was reached in 1876. The Governor heartily welcomed the missionaries, and promised them protection, and premises were secured. The Bishop gave his people instructions, and they raised a mob, headed by three priests, to wipe out the mission. The Governor ordered the chief of police to disperse the mob in ten minutes, or he would call out his troops. The chief obeyed, though himself in sympathy with the mob. The mob did not rally, and soon was preached the first Protestant sermon in this important city. Two obstacles hindered early progress; one was requirement of the marriage ceremony, the other was bitter personal persecution. The former was soon to be a duty, the latter diminished.

Mexico is so near us that we can understand its condition. Religion there has for ages had nothing to do with morals. Robbers cross themselves devoutly, and houses of ill-fame are dedicated

to the Virgin. It is a land of gross darkness. But it is a rich land, and must in time be a good land, and many Christian people are working to help it. The W. F. M. S. has an orphanage in the capital. *El Abogado*, a Christian advocate, is a beautiful journal, read in the palace of the President, and many tracts and books are printed and circulated to enlighten the people. Up to 1886, two million five hundred and ninety-five thousand five hundred and ninety-one pages of religious literature have been scattered by Methodism south of the Rio Grande. There are fourteen hundred in society, and three times as many in adherence.

The Church South, also, has there a good and thriving work.

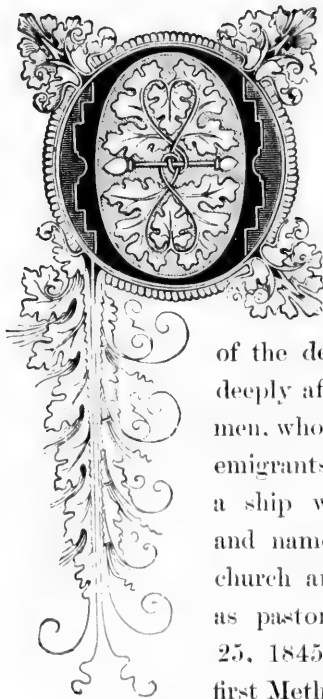
The Theological School at Puebla has three teachers and sixteen students.

The Spanish work of New Mexico is now in its second year. It has ten preaching-places, and counts one hundred and eighty members, and a growing university at Albuquerque.



CHAPTER XXIV.

Methodism in Europe.



OF the work done by Methodism in Scandinavia (Denmark, Norway and Sweden) we will first tell. It began in this country. "Pastor Hedstrom," born in Sweden, was a tailor in New York. In 1829, he was converted and became a preacher. Bergner, also a Swede, brought out of the depths of wickedness, a carpenter, was deeply affected at the condition of his countrymen, who came to New York either as sailors or emigrants. Soon others were interested, and a ship was bought at Pier 11, North River, and named "John Wesley." This became a church and, to Bergner's great joy, Hedstrom as pastor held there his first service, May 25, 1845. Fifty Swedes were present. The first Methodist congregation in America, eighty years before, was five. The ship became an asylum, a labor and emigrant bureau, a distributing center, not only for Swedes, but for all North Europeans. Its good influence was felt far and wide. The emigrants pressed on to the frontiers, and soon societies were formed in the West, in Iowa and Wisconsin.

In 1850, twelve thousand Scandinavian seamen visited New York, so that Hedstrom's task was great, while Willerup found in Wisconsin twenty thousand Norwegians needing his labor.

Both enterprises went on together, the ship being receiver, helper and distributor of people for the western Churches. Hedstrom was for a while relieved by Petersen; a new ship was bought, and this afterwards moored at Harrison street, Brooklyn, but the work still goes on. Hedstrom died in 1877. Of Scandinavian members in the M. E. Church in this country there are now twelve thousand, and usually of a solid, spiritual, intelligent class.

Correspondence from these awakened religious interests in their native land. Converts even made the home voyage to tell their kindred the tidings of salvation. Hedstrom had made such a visit, and had seen his father and two brothers come to the Saviour. Petersen went on like errand to stay a month and could not get away until after a year. He was then sent by Bishop Waugh "to raise up a people for God in Norway." He went to his native land as a foreigner, being an American citizen. He found some offended at his coming—as if, forsooth, they were heathen!—others at his doctrine. Yet after a year, in 1854, he had fifty "with us in heart and life." His labor was chiefly at Fredericks halt. The state church, which by law could make every preacher show his credentials and swear to obey the laws of the land, and made every man record his pastor's name, was a tedious enemy.

Willerup now came to his help, and at Sarpsborg, 1857, a church was built of funds raised in the town. Soon one was built at Fredericks halt. Willerup then went to Copenhagen. As years went on, the special glory of Methodism as a *revival* was seen in the state (Lutheran) Church. It built chapels, sent out laborers and stirred itself with new life and zeal, though it heartily opposed the Methodist efforts. There is now a Norway Conference of over four thousand members.

In Trondhjem, the Land of the Midnight Sun, the northernmost point yet reached by our Church, is a society of about fifty, so

near to the Paradise Found, the North Pole, home of Adam and Eve.

In Denmark, Willerup began work in 1857. A church was dedicated in 1866 in Copenhagen, but Viele became our chief station. The Lutheran Church felt the zeal of the new-comer, and put forth commendable efforts for preaching and Sunday-schools in neglected places. At Hornsyld and Langeland, a citizen of each place, Simonsen and Brunn, built a chapel and gave it to the society. In later days, Hon. M. J. Cramer, brother-in-law of General Grant, and United States Minister at Copenhagen, identified himself with the Methodists, and did them true service during his official stay of twelve years. In Denmark are now twelve hundred in society, twice as many in average attendance on worship, and fourteen hundred in Sunday-school. Two periodicals are published.

Larsson was a convert at Hedstrom's Bethel in 1852. On his return, being wrecked, an English vessel picked him up and took him to Sweden. He was neither preacher nor exhorter, but he began simple work, and for eighteen months had a continuous revival, all the time working with his own hands. He thus began Methodism in Sweden at Calmar. In 1855, Swenson, also a Hedstrom convert, went home for a visit, and found himself working with Larsson. They were laymen. The laws of Sweden were hard upon those not of the state Church, and, not ten years before this, five Baptists had been fined and imprisoned for their faith's sake. Clergymen, jurists and other eminent citizens were at the meetings, and the King himself urged a change of law. The meetings could not be held in "church hours," nor could Churches be formed or sacraments administered. Still the meetings went prosperously on, and Onderholm, a born Swede, opened service in the island of Gottland. Soon there was a great revival at Gottenburg, and the Archdeacon of the state Church bade it God-speed.

In 1868, there were revivals elsewhere, and at Karlskrona the people built a neat chapel, some living on two meals, and others pawning their spare clothing and furniture to get money for it. This was second Methodist building in Sweden. In 1870, a rich man at Monsteraas opened his house for meetings, and at Karlskrona a leading business man, Kringelback, was converted. He proved his sincerity by beginning to pray morning and evening



METHODIST CHURCH, CHRISTIANA, NORWAY.

with his hundred and twenty employés, and to preach to them on Saturday evening. Soon eighty of these came to Christ. He also gave liberally to the general cause. At the end of 1871, twenty chapels were counted, and the preaching had reached royal ears. One preacher was fined, another imprisoned, but at Warburg, where these annoyances were worst, the work grew, and soon a fine chapel was built.

The King's counsel had at last prevailed for a modification of the rigid laws, and, in 1874, "The Swedish Methodist Episcopal Church" was formed. In February, they presented their petition to His Majesty, who was deeply moved, and blessed them: "God be with you, my people!" It took a year to get their charter, through long and weary formalities, but in the year three hundred were added to the societies. A training school was established at Orebro; a Book Concern and periodicals, "Sandeudet," and all the fixtures and features of Methodism became facts accomplished.

To-day there are in Sweden six thousand in society, with about ten thousand in Sunday-school. The book agent is a member of the Diet, or Legislature. The country is poor, but the last year, one of constant revival, has been the best ever seen.

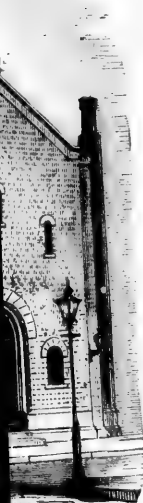
In Finland, the nobility are aiding the society at Helsingfors. A minister of government and his sister, the Princess Karamsin, have attended and dealt generously.

Thus, in the icy North, Methodism, like the Christianity of which it is only a fresh movement, is warming and cheering human hearts. As we trace it in every climate and continent, among various kindreds and tongues, we find it always and everywhere the same.

In 1832, Charles Elliott, whose Irish warmth made his convictions ardent, had become persuaded of the utter apostasy of the Romish Church of to-day. He came to look on a Romish land as a heathen land. It was only natural that he should urge a mission to Italy as a duty pressing on the Christian world. For forty years, or nearly, his idea was counted as a pleasantry or at least as a thing impracticable. In 1870, the question found a vigorous advocate in Gilbert Haven, and gained a favorable hearing with the Missionary Board.

Leroy M. Vernon, son-in-law of Dr. Elliott, was asked to go as

krona the
and others
ney for it.
70, a rich
at Karls-
rted. He
d evening



n to them on
Christ. He
nd of 1871.
eachd royal
but at War-
k grew, and

missionary to Italy. He was surprised, but, giving no direct negative, was appointed, and in the end of June, 1871, he sailed for the ancient land. On his way he consulted in London with the missionary who had begun work in Italy. Arriving at Genoa, he found a true friend in O. M. Spencer, U. S. Consul, and there he fixed his home. His next work was to explore the land through which he was to "spread Scriptural holiness," and to perfect himself in its language. The political state of the country, the feelings of its people, the condition of the Romish Church, and the progress of other missions, had to be carefully examined. He came to see that Rome was the true place for the mission. The Wesleyans proposed to join their work with his, but separate friendly labor seemed preferable. Strangely enough, Gavazzi, one of the most eloquent men of the century, and champion of Protestantism and "A Free Church in a Free State," opposed the coming of the mission, as if it might complicate and weaken the Protestants.

The headquarters were fixed at Bologna, but it was four months before a place for public worship could be had, so bent were the priests on keeping Vernon out, and, meanwhile, a hall was leased at Modena. Here, in June, 1873, was the first service with sixty present, and the next Sunday as many attended the opening of a hall in Bologna. Work was begun in Forli and Ravenna also, these four towns being near each other.

Of course there was opposition. A priest showed in a pamphlet that Vernon's doctrine was atheistic, immoral and retrograde, fair of face but all serpent beside. At a public meeting, to discuss the pamphlet, the priest did not appear, and Vernon turned the adjectives and the man-serpent figure upon him and his doctrine with bold and successful demonstration. Now came a valuable helper, Dr. Gay, a French Protestant of piety, learning and general culture, whose ancestry were of the long-suffering Church of

the Waldenses, for ages struggling with persecutions in north-western Italy. In November, 1873, Gay entered Rome as a Methodist preacher. A hall was rented near the old Forum, where Cicero had spoken, where Paul had been in prison. Here, on Sunday, December 18th, he preached to a full house his first Methodist sermon. In a few days, Methodist work began at Florence, also, by Arrigai, a man of education, who had lived in America. He had a rough time with a mob excited by the parish priest, but the damage was slight, and six of the mob were promptly put in prison.

In 1874, Milan, the great city of North Italy, was occupied. Two places were occupied, and three services in each were held weekly. Dr. Lanna was professor of Philosophy in the leading college in Rome, and had been the same in the Seminary of the Vatican. He was of broad, inquiring mind, and religious questions had occupied and troubled him. He had noted this coming of the Methodists to Rome, but he could not safely come to a Protestant minister, and to become a Protestant meant loss of all things, place, friends and standing. At length he got an interview with Vernon and Gay, and told them his heart. Other interviews with long and free conversations were had, and at last Lanna decided to give up all for Jesus, to bear His cross and do His work, let the cost be what it would. It was like the coming of Jonah from the maw of the sea-monster.

The next year was made glad by a like conversion. Caporali was of high rank in society, and well known as author and editor, engaged at the time on a scientific encyclopedia. One evening his attention, as he walked the street, was drawn to some words in a lighted vestibule, indicating services within. He stopped and heard them, and went on with truth like an arrow in his heart. He was converted, and with all his gifts and accomplishments entered the following of Christ.

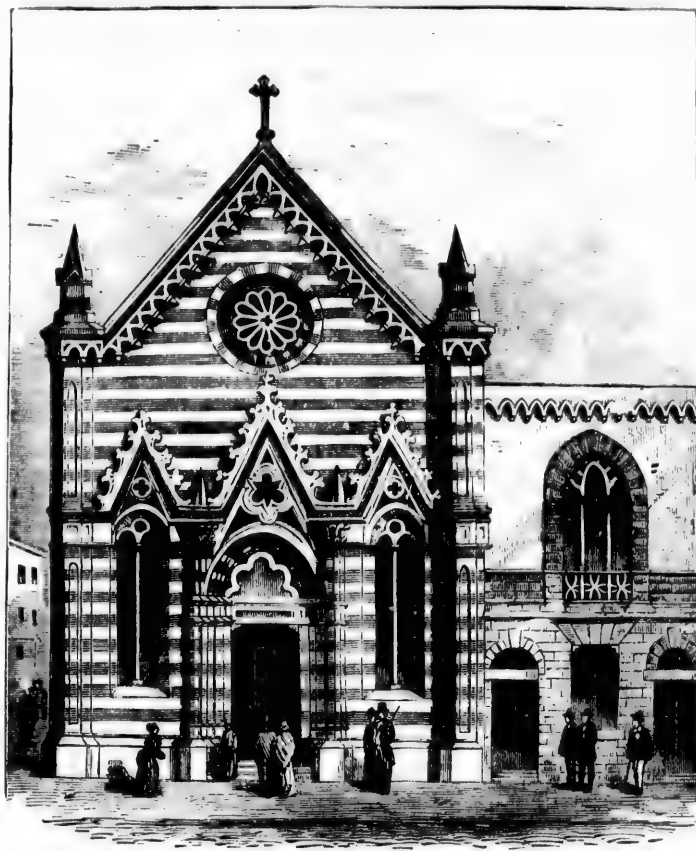
The little band was made strong by his coming, and his own soul found rest.

One Ravi had years before given up Romanism and become a Protestant preacher. In Rome he had gathered a flock of forty whom he had well taught and trained in the truth. His work had been his own, wholly independent, and now he and his willing people came together to the handful of Methodists, and took membership with them. All these cheering events, with no reverses elsewhere, made the Annual Meeting of 1875 a glad occasion. Bishop Simpson was present, and Dr. Lanna was ordained deacon and elder.

An event of gladness and victory was yet to come. It was the building of the first Italian Protestant church in Rome. A choice site on Via Poli, a street of high character, was offered for sale, and Vernon at once secured it. It had been the garden of a monastery and of course there was a cry and a curse at its desecration. Free Italy found voice in the dailies for approval, and Colonel Coindrelli, one of the patriots prominent in 1849, being government inspector of buildings, aided and defended the enterprise. It is queer that the pope had bought for the stables of his French allies, that force of ten thousand which Napoleon III. for many years lent him, the roofing material now used on this church. On the departure of the French to the war in which Napoleon fell, this material was sold and the Methodists took it of the dealer who bought it. "The Festival of the Roof," an Italian usage, like corner-stone laying with us, was on All Saints Day. The Catholics were in the cemeteries praying for and to the dead while the few Methodists were rejoicing in a work for the living. The banners of Italy and America were hung from the front wall; dinner was served for the workmen, and Dr. Lanna made a glowing address, full of patriotism and pious zeal, grateful for Italian freedom and Gospel light. "Long live Italy! Long live the

King!" There was gay and cheerful music, and an old extemporizing poet, such as abound in Italy, being one of the festive workmen, broke forth into a rhapsody of song in honor of the occasion.

The priests were looking for some proof of divine displeasure



ST. PAUL'S M. E. CHURCH, THE FIRST PROTESTANT CHURCH IN ROME, ITALY.

at the heretical undertaking. "Has no one fallen from the roof?" asked one. "No one." "There is time yet." But no one ever did fall, and at Christmas came the Feast of Dedication. The

audiences were large ; all the evangelical Churches of Italy were represented, and the event was noted in foreign lands.

Early in 1876, Ravi rented a theater in Naples, and transformed it into a church. Stasio, a young lawyer of position and ability, was there converted and came into the ministry. Another Gay and a vigorous young man, Bambini, were also joined to the working force. These latter opened work at the charming city of Terni, the scenery of which is so often painted. Here a monk was set to demolish their work with his curses. He could not use the civil power, as of old, and his curses, like the boomerang, came back on him and his cause. The nuns were dismissed from service in the public schools, and the monk wished he had kept stiller in the new, free Italy.

In 1876, Cardin, a Wesleyan, came to the M. E. work and was put into Venice, "Fair Queen of the Sea." Here the angels, according to the legend, had brought from Syria St. Mark's cottage, and where they placed it was afterwards built St. Mark's Cathedral. No city of the world has had such place in song for a thousand years, and into this paradise of art and nature Methodism now came, but only with toil and patience did it get a footing.

At Arezzo, near Florence, a church was now secured on a long lease. In front of it, across a thirty-foot street, is a house wall, on which is painted a Virgin and Child. Before this at night is hung a lighted lamp, fed by the house-owner, and there it has glared upon the rude, staring picture, while across the little street has shone the true and living light.

Baron Gattuso, one of Garibaldi's heroes, took charge of the work. The W. F. M. S. now, in 1877, put three women into service as Bible readers, and also Dr. Stazi, a fellow-student of Lanna, a man of high culture and attainment, took charge in Milan. It is remarkable that so many of the very best Italians be-

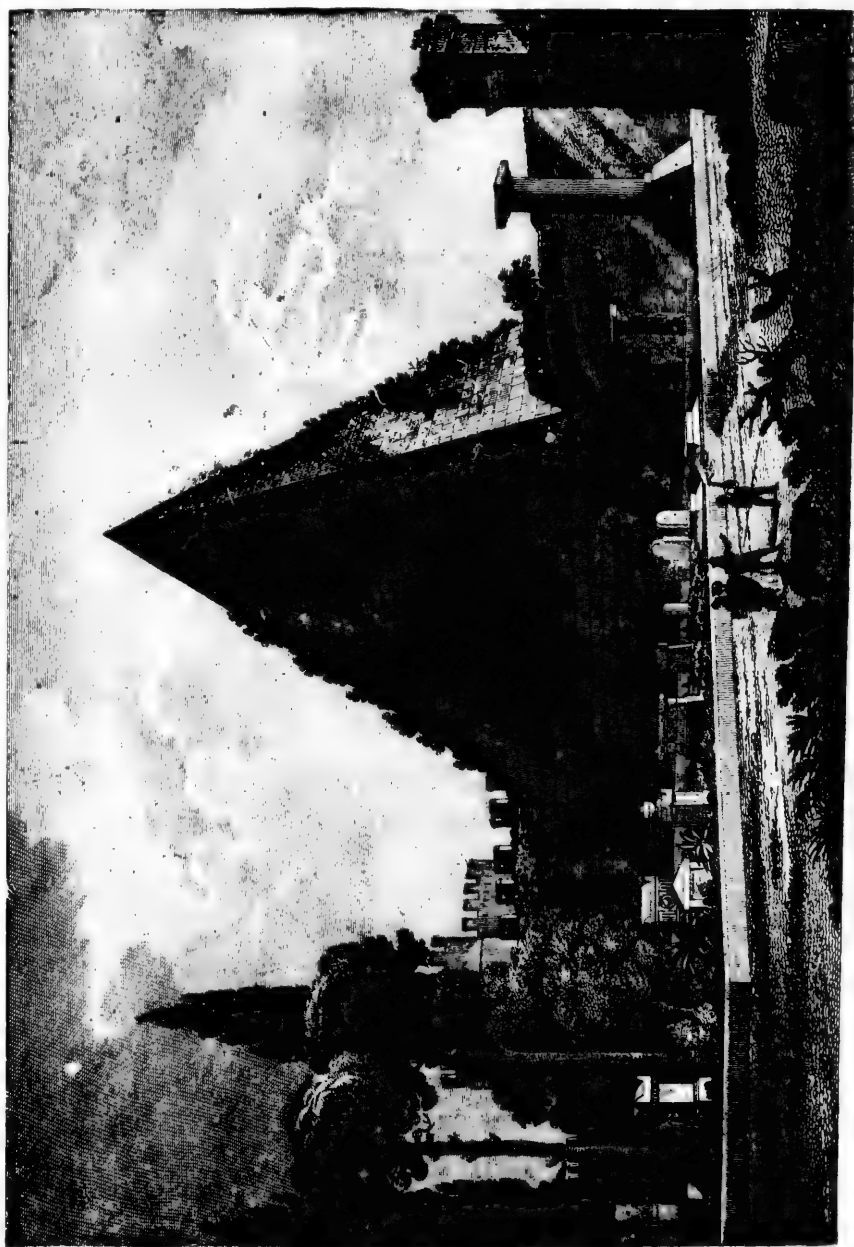
came preachers, and by this the work was at once, socially and intellectually, respectable.

In 1878, a journal, *La Fiaccola* ("The Torch"), was introduced. By reason of the stream of travel, the work in Italy, and especially at Rome, has been more noticed than any other in the world. It is small, but it is on historic soil, wet with the blood of ancient and modern martyrs. Here, in the ground now used as the Protestant cemetery, out on the Appian way, and marked by the Pyramid of Cestius, which was built for other uses, Paul the Apostle laid down his life, and missionary zeal might well grow warm in such a vicinity.

There is opposition enough. It drives the priests mad to see the work the mission is doing, but there is steady progress in all good things in Italy, and the darkness of a thousand years is disappearing.

Bishop Hurst, in 1884, dedicated a beautiful church in Bologna, and a Catholic chapel in Pisa was bought, repaired and dedicated. An Italian church at Geneva, Switzerland, the home of Abel Stevens, the Methodist historian, has joined the Methodist Conference. Dr. Caporali edits a *Quarterly Review*, and in every way Italian Methodism has a complete life of its own. It has twelve hundred in society, with twenty-five preachers. The largest society—of about two hundred—is at Florence. Thus the Story of Methodism in the fairest of all lands is the same as elsewhere.

Bulgaria is the wide region below the Danube, and is to be the probable successor of Turkey in Europe as Armenia is its probable successor in Asia. In 1855, Dr. Riggs, of the American Board, urged the Methodists to send missionaries to this country. The Bulgarians were of the Greek Church, but not of the Greek language. They wanted religious services in their own speech and a Church of their own. Messrs. Long and Prettyman were sent in



THE MONUMENT AT THE BARRIERS OF THE ARMY

1857. Reaching Rutschuk, on the south side of the Danube, they found a fertile and beautiful land, the Protestants cordial and even "the unspeakable Turk" kind and tolerant. They settled at Shumla, forty-five miles from the sea, and began the study of the language. This was a trying task, and it was long before they could tell the people their errand. Mr. Flocken, who could speak Russian, soon joined them. Mr. Long soon went to Tirnova, a city near the Balkans, the finest in all Bulgaria, having thirty thousand



BULGARIA MISSION.

Turks, as many Bulgarians, and alone of all cities of its size in the world, not a single Jew. For this city the Romanists were making a desperate struggle, offering the people the protection of the pope and the aid of France. The leading citizens, however, turned to Protestantism to find life for their Church and hope for their land. Dr. Long began to preach in Bulgarian, December 24, 1859, with fifteen hearers. All Catholics were warned, under pain

of excommunication, not to attend his preaching, but his congregation grew.

A Bulgarian priest (Greek) came to him to ask the loan of a Bible. He complained, with tears, of the impiety of his people. "I am poor, weak and ignorant; what can I do? My people have no instruction and will not hear mine. If I ask them to pray they say they are not priests and the praying is my business. They call themselves Christians, but they do not love Christ or keep His commandments. I went to my superior priest and asked for a Bible. He said the Bible was not for me to read and I had no business with it. Now I am a priest, and I do not see why I should not read the Bible."

Elieff, the first Protestant convert in Bulgaria, had found Christ in reading a Testament from the British Bible Society. He did not know that there was another in the world that felt as he did. He was surprised to meet a colporteur who held his views, and, going to Constantinople, he learned from the missionaries the full nature of the faith. He now came to Dr. Long and became a permanent and valuable helper.

In Stumla, meanwhile, some progress was making. A young German, who was going to Jerusalem on foot to pray for the soul of his dead mother, was converted. A young Jewess became a true believer and Flocken officiated at her wedding, using his simple ritual in the presence of guests of several nations. Some of the religious usages of the people were strange. On St. John's Day they baptized all strangers and proposed to do so to the missionary! December 24th was kept as the birthday of Colida, a heathen deity, and then, dragging a log from the woods, they cut upon it a rude human face and drank themselves drunk to its health. It was time for a purer religion. Dr. Long had a taste for poetry and music and he put into Bulgarian many sweet songs, as "Joyfully," and the like. These the children to-

day are singing. He is to be called the pioneer, making the way for western and Christian literature into that long-neglected land, and for this he will have an honorable fame, when Bulgaria shall take her place among the nations of the world.

Mr. Flocken then went to Tultcha, near the sea. Here he found a singular people, the Molokans.

In the last century, two young Russians, a young man and



THE FIRST RUSSIAN M. E. CHAPEL.

woman, had gone to England as servants of the Russian ambassador. Coming home, they told of English Christians who met in dwelling-houses, without image, cross or holy candle, who did not fast or cross themselves, yet were very pious and sincere. They and their friends determined quietly to do the same. They put away images and the like, and on fast-days ate milk. For this they were soon called Molokans, from *moloko*, milk. They

were also called Nemoloks, non-worshippers, from rejecting images. Czar Alexander I. had been favorable to them, but Nicolas treated them like a savage, though they were now one million of his best subjects and many had fled to Turkey where Mr. Flocken found them. He was present at one of their meetings. It was simple, scriptural, but imperfect through ignorance. He was anxious to supply their lack of knowledge, and they were glad of his idea of coming among them. He felt sure that those two original Molokans had in England been at Methodist meetings. In May, 1860, he opened a school in Tultcha, assisted the Molokans and distributed tracts in German, Russian and Bulgarian.

In 1862, the era of storms and opposers came on, Dr. Long went to Constantinople and gave his time to translations, preaching in his own house. Flocken found his school hindered by the habit of early marriage, and by a system of apprenticeship that takes boys from school at twelve. He was about to leave Tultcha when a revival began, and soon the first Russian M. E. Church (1868) was organized. There has never yet been a second. There were nineteen in society, with a Sunday-school of thirty-five.

Opposition and difficulty of many sorts set in, and the mission was abandoned. Dr. Long became professor in Roberts College, where his learning and talent still keep him in great usefulness. A native Russian, Petroff, staid by the Church in Tultcha, and Elieff served a place, Sistoff, and itinerated. Mrs. Clara Proca began a useful service as Bible reader, but Flocken and his helper came to America.

In 1873, the mission was resumed. A new man, Dr. Buchtel, was sent with Mr. Flocken, and, in learning the language, the conversion of his teacher was his cheering introduction to Bulgarian work. The country was now cut loose from the Greek Church, but not for the better. Several native Bishops forbade the read-

ing of the Bible, and foreigners were not welcomed. Dr. Buchtel had to come home for Mrs. Buchtel's health. Flocken and Elieff did their best, and Mrs. Proca, supported by the W. F. M. S., was very useful.

The dreadful war between Russia and Turkey now began, and the massacres in some parts of Bulgaria shocked the world. Bishop Andrews came in 1876 and ordained the faithful Elieff, the first Bulgarian Protestant, the first Bulgarian Methodist preacher. The effect of the war was now felt near the missions. The Turks became fierce and cruel, and there was no safety. After much suffering, Flocken and other Americans came home in 1878.

The same year he returned for a while, and Messrs. Thomoff, a Bulgarian, a graduate of Drew Seminary, and Challis, who had already been in service in the country, were later sent.

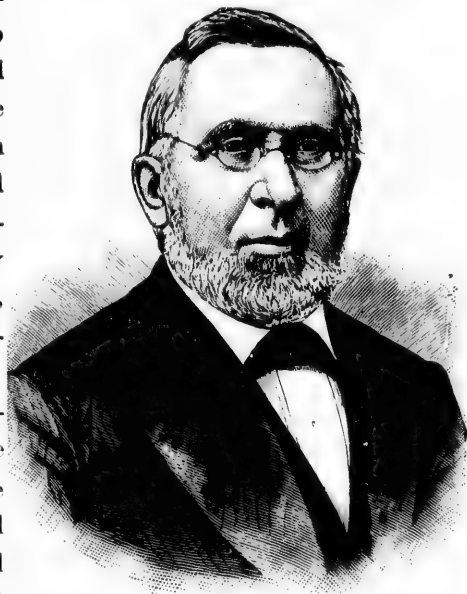
The prospect in this worn and weary land is now better. It is looking as if here were before long to be a great nation, and there is a growing inclination to hear the Word. The past has been full of trouble, but the missionaries now at work are persuaded that they will soon show the Slavonians of Bulgaria, after five centuries of Turkish oppression, still humans capable of a spiritual religion. There are now one hundred in the societies; Miss Schenck, of the W. F. M. S., has at Loftena a thriving school, and the attentions of herself and her pupils to the wounded in the late struggles have done much to win the hearts of the people.

German-American Methodism begins with William Nast, five years after German-English Methodism. He was piously reared and thoroughly educated, he came out of the University of Tübingen with his religion spoiled by philosophy. In 1828, he emigrated and became tutor in the family of Mrs. Duncan, of Duncan's Island, in the Susquehanna. There he saw Methodist preachers and came

to know of the M. E. Church. He was then professor of German at West Point, where McIlvaine was chaplain, who, with some devout officers, encouraged his religious feelings. For three years he was under deep but varying conviction, until finally, at a meeting in Ohio, he was able fully to give his soul to the Saviour, and enter into a glorious peace. His call to preach was clear, and he became German missionary in Cincinnati. He had been favored with the best friendship of the Episcopal and Lutheran Churches, but he felt his home to be with the Methodists. He had learning and high character, but he was of heavy tongue; he could not sing, he felt quite un-Germanized.

In his first year, he reported twenty-three awakened persons. The next year, he addressed the Germans through all southern Ohio, on a circuit of twenty-five appointments.

His seven converts joined English societies. In 1837, he formed in Cincinnati the first German society of the M. E. Church, having twenty-six members. A convert of his first year, John Swahlen, a good singer, began to help him. In 1839, Swahlen, being now a preacher, built in Wheeling the first German Methodist edifice. It was dedicated in 1840, and the society is still flourishing in its successor on Chapline street. In 1839



WILLIAM NAST, D. D.

was issued the first number of the *Christliche Apologete* (Christian Advocate). In this year, too, was converted Jacoby, a young physician of broad and thorough culture. He was born in Mecklenburg, an Israelite of the tribe of Levi (?), and was now in Cincinnati in his profession. He was, by a deep experience, fitted for an effective career. In 1841, he was sent to St. Louis, where he began his work with but one converted German, while mobs and opposers were fierce and many.

Dr. Nast now devoted his whole time to literature. In years, hardly fifty years, the German Methodist work has spread over all this country. It has the *Apologete*, with fifteen thousand subscribers, and other periodicals with twice as many, its hymn books and Sabbath-school publications, and the Western Book Concern publishes more German works than any book house in this country.

The chief institution of learning is Wallace College, Berea, O. This dates from 1864, having been preceded by a German department in Baldwin University, at the same place. There is still free access between the two institutions. There is a Biblical department; and over one hundred have gone from it into the ministry. Here, too, is an orphan asylum, opened in 1863, the first in the Methodist Episcopal Church of the United States. There are three other Methodist Episcopal German schools or colleges in this country, of which nine-tenths of the cost was paid by Germans. Of members in German societies there are about fifty-one thousand, and of preachers five hundred, and these contributed to missions in 1885 an average of one dollar apiece. Such is the American train of results following the conversion of Nast in 1835, and he still lives to look and labor, as he edits, for now forty-seven years, the *Apologete*.

In 1844, Nast was sent to Germany to prospect for a mission the old father-land. He knew how for a century the masses of

Germany had been godless and unbelieving, and those who, like himself and Jacoby, came to America had the better chance of becoming Christians. So many of these wrote home of their experience that one said: "Every letter is a missionary." He found one Muller, who, fleeing to England to avoid serving in Bonaparte's army, had there become a local preacher, and, returning after twenty-five years' absence, was preaching as a Wesleyan missionary in Wurtemberg. Nast was glad to find Muller's work very prosperous, but he believed the good man could fill the present demand, as the state Church elsewhere refused openings. Muller died in 1858, but the Wesleyan Society continued his work and it prospers to this day. All Europe was shaken in 1848 by political revolutions, and one result was that the German Diet, under popular pressure, declared full religious liberty for all Germany. This, the restored Emperor said, meant Lutheran and Catholic, but the free cities, at least, were open, and, in 1849, Jacoby was sent to Bremen.

His soul was sorely tried, and he longed to return from a godless land to one that had Sabbaths. He could find no place to preach, and his first sermon was in Germany. Impression was made, but his next sermon, at Achin, was unheard by the gay, Sundayless community. At length he got the Krameramthaus, a public hall in Bremen. It seated four hundred, and was on the evening of December 23, 1849, packed and crowded.

He soon got a hall twice as large, and that was crowded. He went to a vile suburb where he was often interrupted and preached to the unwashed. At Baden also, fifteen miles away, he had a school-house full. At Easter, twenty-one converts formed a class, and on May 21, 1850, the holding of a Quarterly Conference fixed the birthday of the mission. The same day came the first issue of a Methodist religious journal in Germany, that land of reading.

Already a thousand hymn books had been sold, and the demand for books was wonderful. *Der Evangelist* began with two hundred subscribers. This year the Book Concern prints about thirty-five million pages. Jacoby was soon unable to meet the growing demand, and Doering and Nippert were sent to his help, and with them came Dr. John McClintock. On the day after his arrival, Nippert preached on a barn floor near Bremen. Horses and cattle, pigs and poultry were crowded unwillingly by the congregation, and their discontent made a very mixed scene. On the Sabbath, Dr. McClintock preached the first M. E. sermon (English) in Germany, and on Monday evening was held a meeting in behalf of Africa, at which over five dollars were given, being Germany's first M. E. missionary collection.

Sunday-schools now came to Germany, one of eighty children being formed at Bremen, and another at the hard suburb, with the ponderous name, Buntenthorsteinweg. The Lutheran Churches soon and widely were forming them.

The first exhorter was Fiege, licensed in 1850, and Jacoby foretold truly that Germany would yet be sending preachers to America. A watch-night was held at the end of the year, while a ball was in progress on the floor above. The meeting was too much for the dancing, and the throngs crowded the hall, and the occasion was one of divine glory and power. Methodism had surely entered Germany.

Now began the period of persecution and of annoyance. A mob drunk with free liquor, and instigated by state clergymen, broke every window where Doering was preaching in the old style of Wesley. The Sunday-school was denounced in vain, and, as an answer, one among the vile dens of Bremerhaven grew from fifteen to one hundred and thirty.

Nippert, going with a colporteur to a town was met by a mob with a fierce leader, who tore off their clothes and threw the col-

porteur into the ditch, bidding Nippert never come there again. Twenty years later the funeral train of that leader was passing that very spot. The hearse was overturned by accident (i. e., without hands) and his coffin pitched where he had thrown the colporteur!

Wanderlich, who had been converted in Dayton, O., came home to Saxe Weimar to witness for his Saviour. His mother and brothers were converted, and one of them began to preach. The comer was fined, imprisoned and banished for persisting in his work. In one prison were three for "infidelity," a queer coincidence; he, put in for praying too much; they, for not praying at all! The comer returned to America, but his brother persisted, though fined ten dollars for every sermon. In 1851, Jacoby found at Saxe Weimar a society of one hundred and thirty.

At Frankfort, Mr. Riemenschneider held meetings in his own house, but his congregation of one hundred and growing was suppressed because it annoyed his sensitive neighbors. He went to Giessen, where all the notables of the town came to hear him. He was then put in jail for the night, because he had no passport, and the next day was sent out of the little dukedom (Hesse Darmstadt). The tracts which had been taken from him were read by three or four sets of officials and then returned, the officer who returned them begging a few. Thus these were well read, and that is what tracts are for.

Through all the country there was great readiness to hear, and great rage of opposition by clergy and magistrates. In Heilbromm and Alsace preachers were imprisoned, but the work went on. In 1856, the Annual Conference was organized.

In Zurich, Switzerland, a preacher advertised a service, and went in true, wrestling faith, but not a soul entered the hall! The next Sunday he had five hearers, and the following seven, but his evening congregation filled the place. In Zurich is now a beauti-

ful church and a vigorous society. This tried brother was the first of the German missionaries to die, but he left in Zurich forty members.

In 1860, a Biblical Institute had been established at Bremen, its corner-stone being laid in 1859, ten years after the coming of the first missionary. W. F. Warren, now President of Boston University, became a professor in it. In 1866, John T. Martin, of Brooklyn, gave twenty-five thousand dollars to build for it a



BREMEN CHURCH AND TRACT HOUSE.

worthy building, and the Martin Mission Institute has since been its name. In the same year, a chapel worth fifteen thousand dollars was built in Berlin, chiefly by the efforts of Ex-governor Wright, of Indiana, then U. S. Minister to Prussia, who died before it was finished.

In 1871, Jacoby, who had begun this work, and for nineteen years been at it, returned to America. Doctor (now Bishop) Hurst, who had, since 1866, been director of the Biblical Insti-

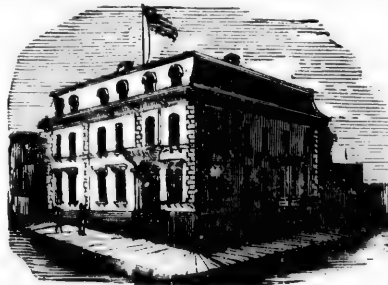
tute, came to the Drew Theological Seminary, and Saltzberger, of Switzerland, took his place.

In 1875, Bishop Simpson held the Conference. His Sunday discourse was one of those marvelous efforts which came from his lips as a special blessing, and Nippert's translation was so rich in skill and sympathy, as to seem a prolongation of the power. The sermon was read and remembered, and, not the hearers only, but its German readers, were deeply affected. Doering, after twenty-six years' service, now visited America, and after a year he came back to take charge of the Book Concern.

There are now in Germany eighty-two churches and chapels, with eighty-four preachers and about fifteen thousand in society, and twenty-two thousand scholars in Sunday-schools.

How has Methodism taken hold of Germans within the life-time of men yet living! Fifty thousand in America, and fifteen thousand in the father-land, and Nast, the first convert, still in service! The Revival, which we call Methodism, has done for Germans as it has done for so many other people.

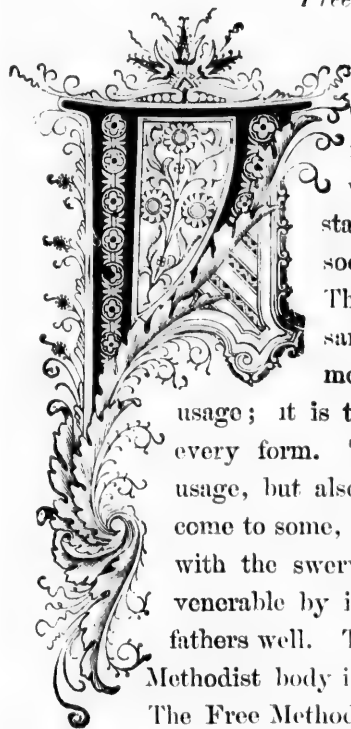
We have now told the Story of Methodism in the lands which it has visited. We have found it at Trondhjem, near the North Pole; we have found it at Patagonia, near the South Pole, and in every climate between. Bishop Taylor in Africa, and Mr. Oldham at Singapore, are spreading it beneath the Equator. By its fruits it is known to be a genuine form and development of Christianity. It is everywhere Christianity in earnest.



CHINESE MISSION OF THE M. E. CHURCH, SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA

CHAPTER XXV.

Free Methodism, and Some Change of Usage.



NOT in human affairs do the form and manner of any institution remain without variation. In Church and state, as well as in art, education and society, methods are ever shifting. The successive generations, and the same generation in various lands, must modify the outward form of religious usage; it is the spirit that abides and quickens every form. This change of form, not only in usage, but also in speech, will always be unwelcome to some, and they will choose not to swerve with the swerving times from what is dear and venerable by its associations, and has served the fathers well. The youngest offshoot from the great Methodist body illustrates this remark.

The Free Methodist Church was organized at Pekin, in western New York, August 23, 1860. Its founders were preachers, who held that the parent Church was sadly departing from fidelity to the clear doctrines and simple usages of Wesley. They held that hearty repentance, proved by suitable behavior, was ceasing to be faithfully preached; that the witness of the Spirit was but little enjoyed, and that a merely intellectual persuasion, without love or loyalty to Christ, was taking the place of the self-sacrificing faith of the heart. As to Christian perfection, it was preached in styles so conflicting that it might as well not be

preached at all, and the number of those professing it was small. In this way the supernatural element, the glory and the power of the Church, was weakened and dishonored.

It was also urged that in wealthy societies discipline fared quite as badly as doctrine, and could not be executed. Methodists were dressing as gaudily as the world, were doing business unscriptural in its nature or methods, and were in oath-bound fellowship of secret societies with unbelievers. In the churches were costly pews, organs and hired artists, daintily-read sermons in buildings of extravagant cost, and supported by picnics, fairs, concerts, by any means rather than the primitive, apostolic and Wesleyan. In the Genesee Conference many ministers regretted and denounced this unhopeful departure.

Of these the most prominent

was B. T. Roberts. He was a brilliant and effective speaker, and a concise, clear, energetic writer, a college friend at the Wesleyan University with Bishops Andrews and Gilbert Haven. He and his friends would not be silent at what they held to be ruinous and wrong, and, in 1857, Roberts was tried for publish-



BISHOP E. T. ROBERTS.

ing an article on "New School Methodism," in which he had set forth the view of the Methodist decay and departure as above given. He now offered to retract any statements therein made, should they be proven untrue. His article was taken as slanderous, and he was pronounced guilty and sentenced to be rebuked by the Bishop. The next year some one republished his article, with an account of his trial, and he was again tried by his Conference, this time for what was called contumacy—persistence after rebuke. Neither the publication nor the circulation (it was a pamphlet) seemed legally fastened upon him, yet he, with a colleague, McCreery, was expelled from the Conference and the Church.

A convention of laymen, looking upon this expulsion as unjust and tyrannical, passed resolutions of sympathy for the expelled, and, as proof of unabated confidence in them, urged them to continue in the work of the ministry. Several ministers of the Conference freely denounced the expulsion, and the next year four of these were expelled and two located on charges of the same contumacy. Many laymen were put out of the Church, and the term "Nazarite," as indicative of higher piety and holiness, or the assumption of the same, now came into use. There was a world of unpleasantness now rife, and in almost every society in western New York heart and Church divisions prevailed. It could not be expected that the blame of the unhappy state of things would rest on one party and not on both.

The General Conference of 1860 met at Buffalo in the territory of these disaffections. Fifteen hundred members of the Methodist Episcopal Church within the Genesee Conference petitioned for the investigation of these acts of the Conference in expelling its members. A committee was appointed for this, but was soon discharged. Roberts had appealed both his cases. That of his expulsion was not entertained; that of his previous rebuke was

confirmed—i. e., not reversed, the committee being equally divided. Other Methodist bodies being more or less liable to the charges already made against the Methodist Episcopal Church, the people in the new movement, being thus outside of their original Church, had to proceed and form a new denomination. It was a case of deep convictions and of impracticable temper, in which the action of the Methodist Episcopal Church seems legally correct, and it was better for all parties that separation take place. In most societies those who chose to do so simply left and formed new ones, no letters being asked or offered, and those who remained proceeded as the original and lawful society.

The new Church was after the model of the parent. Bishops were chosen for four years and Presiding Elders were called district chairmen. In all the Conferences laymen in number and right are equal to the clergy. Probation is retained, but none enter it on "a desire to flee from the wrath to come." An actual saving faith is required, and none are admitted to full membership who do not give proof of a living religious experience. Laying aside gold, pearls and costly array, membership in secret societies, and all use of whisky or tobacco (unless as medicine) are forbidden, and attendance on class meeting is enforced.

The new denomination found great hindrance from being at once the chosen home of wild-fire and unreasoning zeal, that disliked all discipline and had its own ideas of order, and some strange practices were found in its meetings. These have worn off, and in twenty-six years energy and zeal have come to be joined to charity, sobriety and decorum. Most of its adherents have been drawn from the poor and uncultivated, and most of its preachers have been uneducated.

Bishop Roberts began, in 1860, the publication of *The Earnest Christian* to expound the principles of the new Church, and this, as his independent journal, has had a large circulation. He has

also published tracts and pamphlets, but as yet there is little standard literature. *The Free Methodist*, at Aurora, Ill., also a private enterprise, has a large patronage.

Bishop Roberts is still at the head of this new Methodism, which he was in this way led to found and which he has now so long conducted. He counts about six hundred preachers, traveling and local, and thirteen thousand members. There are two seminaries, one at North Chili, N. Y., and one at Spring Arbor, Mich.

It will be seen that the basis of this new departure in form from the M. E. Church is urged by the departed to be a falling away of the Church from its early character. That is indeed a serious matter. If the Methodism with which our Story ends is not the same as that with which it began, then this is not the Story which we intended. Let us look closely for the state of the case.

First of pewed churches. They have an air of inhospitality. We saw how the Boston church, the first pewed church in Methodism, was saved by Colonel Binney's making it a stock affair, cashing its debts from his own purse and letting his poorer brethren work out their various subscriptions at their leisure. None but a man of generous faith would have taken such a risk. Such things have since repeated themselves. Wesley's life was spent in labors chiefly for the poor, and, as we have seen, the English at home are more prone to acquiesce in an established order than we Americans. We are self-asserting, bound to have things to our mind, if we can, and that not willfully or wickedly, but because we believe our mind is right. It will, therefore, happen that those who build a church can make a pew in it a permanent home for their families, where their children can sit with the parents, and comforts and fixtures be provided, and there is much to be said in favor of this.

In free-seated churches there is a tendency in persons and families to occupy the same places, and a stranger could hardly tell whether it were pewed or free. The tenant of a pew has the chance for politeness and hospitality, and this a Christian will not fail to use. So of costly churches, something is due to art, beauty and refinement, and no man enjoyed these more keenly than Wesley.

The first pewed church in the West (Christ Church, Pittsburgh) is a splendid edifice, beyond anything in western Methodism, when erected. Bishop Morris was looking at it. "What would John Wesley say if he saw that?" asked a grumbler. "He would say, 'It is the finest Methodist church I have ever seen,'" was the quiet answer. There seemed to be something wrong when, as was for years seen at a point on Cayuga lake, a Friends' meeting-house worth five hundred dollars stood near a cottage of one of the worshipers, and this cost thirty thousand dollars, the grounds being equally valuable. That men and women sit apart was a relic of Wesley's monastic ideas. The life of the family has gradually prevailed over that. It is still kept as the usage in many places, yet it has come to be classed among the things not essential.

In the matter of singing as a part of public worship, Wesley's views were too correct to be superseded. "Let all the people sing; not one in ten only!" We have seen how Charles Wesley sang the Gospel, putting Scripture into verse and music as if he were himself divinely inspired. He put the Story of Grace into the people's language and the people's tunes, so that all could sing, and to-day hardly any Christian people sing six hymns without including one of his making. At Bolton, 1787, Wesley's heart was glad. He had put a short stop to what he found at Warrington. "A few men who had fine voices sung a psalm which no one knew, in a tone fit for an opera, wherein three or four persons sang different words at the same time. What a bur-

lesque on public worship!" At Bolton, about one hundred boys and girls were taught to sing and "they sang so true that, all singing together, there seemed to be but one voice. In the evening I desired forty or fifty of them to come in and sing, 'Vital Spark of Heavenly Flame.' Some were not able to sing for tears, yet the harmony was such as I believe could not be equaled in the finest chapel." He returns afterwards. "The spirit with which they all sing and the beauty of many of them so suits the melody that I defy any to exceed it, except the singing of the angels in Our Father's House."

Music at worship, by a quartette of artists, is certainly not Methodistic or scriptural. A concert or a *musicale* is quite another thing. The Sunday-school is the true feeder to congregational singing, and Wesley would be glad again could he see (perhaps he sees) how the singing of the societies has been in late years improved by the happy training of Sunday scholars.

The use of tickets to love-feasts has been discontinued. In Wesley's plan, these were certificates of standing. Membership in the societies was held to be a privilege to be retained only by Christian activity and usefulness, and the quarterly visitation of the preacher in charge was to ascertain, as far as possible, each member's religious character. In this country, the ticket system has gone out within the memory of those now living. It was found that few cared to come in who were not already serious, and that it was better to put no hindrance in the way of their coming. The love-feast is a place of joyous witness for Christ, and it often happens that such witness affects some hearts more deeply than any formal sermon. The ticket system was therefore easily discarded, and the love-feast has come to be a public service, in which bread and water are taken together in token of Christian friendship, and the time is given to cheerful, soul-expanding fellowship.

The class is the unit, the smallest organism, in Methodism. It was to consist of not over twelve, and of these the leader was to a spiritual acquaintance each week renewed. The value of such an organization is great. It makes every member responsible to somebody, and, from being primarily a financial convenience, it came to be a source of mutual knowledge, aid and comfort. The heart that has no relish for it, or something equivalent, has reason to doubt its own religious health. The class meeting is not a confessional. No one is obliged to make a speech in it. The intent of it is the same as of those schools where the older scholars serve as monitors to the others, and all teachers know how aptly scholars appreciate and relieve each other's difficulties. In England, non-attendance renders one liable to exclusion from the society on the ground that when he became a member that was clear condition, and he agreed so to do.

In America, exclusion has not been counted as a penalty for non-attendance, this latter not being held to be an offense "that would exclude one from the kingdom of grace and of glory." Still, the moral obligation exists, and the class meeting is in most societies highly valued as helping a life of light and victory. In America, too, circuits early began to break up into stations, and the informal usage prevails by which prominent Churches practically select their own pastors.

Still these modifications are not enough to justify the statement that Methodism in this country materially differs from Wesleyanism in England, or from that which Wesley founded.

In India, Dr. Thoburn was once surprised at seeing eleven men come forward and ask for baptism when he had had no time with them for inquiry and instruction. It was a critical moment. His helper, native, told him that if he put these men off they would be discouraged. Dr. Thoburn baptized them at once, contrary to all usage, rather than leave them in the precarious and

unsettled condition of inquirers. They were thus fully and promptly brought away from heathenism and committed to Christianity. He was glad that he put aside Church usage, and gained souls, for these men prospered. Reporting the case to Bishop Kingsley, the robust answer was: "*Under the Methodist Discipline it is always right to do the best you can under the circumstances.*" His decision relieved the faithful missionary from many a difficulty, and uttered the true spirit of Methodism.

These changes in Methodist ways and usages are partly due to the influence that has come to it from other Christian bodies. The lineal source and origin of Methodism was from the Church of England, the Protestant Episcopal Church of this country. To this day the Wesleyans occupy a middle ground between the Dissenters and the National Church. Some societies are still found using the liturgy arranged by Wesley from the Anglican Prayer Book; some Wesleyan families send their children to be confirmed by state Bishops, and call their own Churches "societies," and their own church buildings "chapels." So in New England the Congregational Churches formed the aristocratic class, and Methodists were at first held to the support of those Churches. Methodism there has for that reason had a peculiar type, more decorous and self-controlled, with pewed churches and written sermons. Not, indeed, behind in labor and sacrifice, and to-day no people are nobler in their Methodism.

But meanwhile the Methodists have influenced their neighbors. It has been especially the revival Church. It has gone beyond metaphysics and doctrinal statement, beyond sacrament and ceremony. It has used a working theology, believing this thing first of all that men should be up and doing what is put in their power to do. Sinners are called straight out to conversions; backsliders are warned and heartened to return, converts are bidden to tell what God does for them.

CHAPTER XXVI.

Methodist Literature.



JOHN WESLEY, as we have seen, was not only a scholar, but he also held that literature, like the Gospel, was the heritage of mankind. He early began in earnest to restore men to their heritage and to unfold and enrich it for their benefit. His own direct effort to scatter books and tracts widely by large sales and low prices dates from the Foundry, in 1739. He made some profits, and with these he aided needy preachers and promoted the work of the Gospel. His own publications in sixteen years had come to the number of one hundred and eighty-one and treated a variety of useful subjects in a manner fully up to the advance of his day. Many of these went through twenty editions and most of them were sold at less than one shilling each. They thus came into the hands of the poor, and well used they must have been, for at Wesley's death many had vanished or could be had at only the highest prices. The Hymns sold quickest, as was very natural. Charles Wesley before his conversion had written nothing. It was in the dingy street of Little Britain, in the heart of London, that he found peace and the fountain of his poetry was unsealed. One might visit the street as one walks through Smyrna and thinks how here with Homer began the immortal songs of Greece and the classic world. John had already published some

hymns, but when, three days after Charles, he entered into peace with God, the brothers began a poetic career together, in which Charles outstripped his brother. Their hymns were simply the expression of their own feelings.

A new hint soon came to Charles. His preaching was one day interrupted by the rollicking song of some sailors. He told them to listen to the sermon and come next day and he would give them a song to their own tune. They came and he had for them his

"Listed into the cause of sin,
Why should a good be evil?"

Thus putting hymns into familiar tunes, he found ready sale for them. With the songs went other books. "See that every house is supplied with books" is Wesley's direction. In 1778, he began the *Arminian*, second oldest religious periodical in the world. It is now called *The Wesleyan Methodist Magazine*. For the publication of his works Wesley soon had a "Book Room" near the Foundry, and afterwards on premises adjoining the City Road Chapel. This Book Room he willed to trustees, who transferred by legal process until it came into ownership of fifteen trustees, who are members of Conference, and into the management of a "Book Steward."

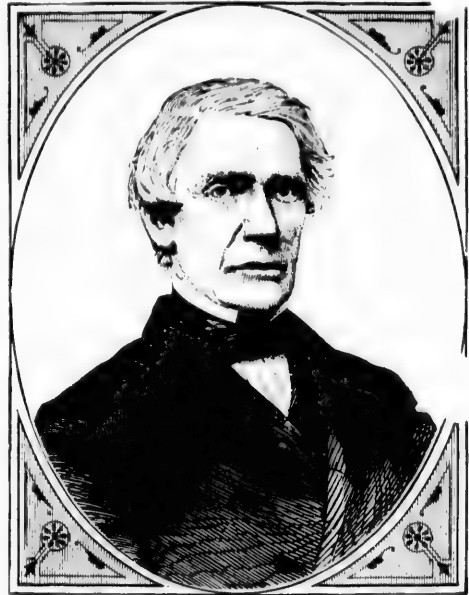
At the Centennial, in 1839, its premises were enlarged to meet the demands of a greatly-increasing business. Here are published the *London Quarterly Review* and eight other periodicals, and the issues have been over twelve millions a year. Its publications stand well in the general market, and are sold by all dealers.

The Book Concern of the Church in America has long been the largest religious publishing house in the world. In 1787, as we noticed, it was determined to proceed with the printing of "our own books," and soon John Dickins, with six hundred dollars of his own finding, began the business in Philadelphia. There must

have been good profit, for besides six hundred and sixty-six dollars and sixty-seven cents salary, and a house to the agent and as much to the distressed preachers, there was a payment of eight hundred dollars to Cokesbury College, and sixty-four dollars to the Bishops for schools. The whole profit must have been twenty-five hundred dollars a year.

In 1797, a book committee to examine and decide upon publications was created. In 1804, the Concern was removed to New York. *The Methodist Magazine*, though ordered in 1796, was first published in 1818. It is now *The Methodist Review*, under the effective editorship of Daniel Curry. The *Youth's Instructor* began in 1823 and in 1826 *The Christian Advocate* appeared. In periodicals, New England could not wait, for its *Missionary Magazine* began, in 1815, at Concord, and *Zion's Herald*, with pages nine inches by sixteen, the first Methodist weekly in the world and still one of the best, was started at Boston.

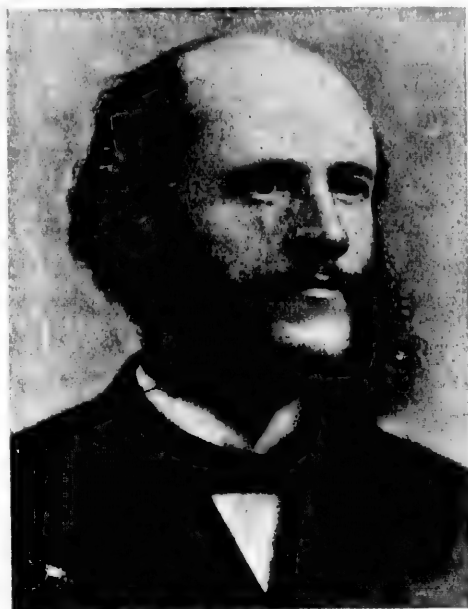
The financial history of the Concern showed good management. Ezekiel Cooper took charge of it in 1799, finding four thousand dollars of property and three thousand dollars of debt. In 1804, he had a clear capital of twenty-seven thousand dollars. In 1816,



DANIEL CURRY, D. D., LL. D.

the capital was eighty thousand dollars. In 1820, Dr. Bangs took vigorous hold and soon had a manufacturing house in Crosby street. In 1820, the difficulty of transportation made desirable the planting of a Concern at Cincinnati, and from this and that at New York branch houses for the sale of books were established in various cities. The *Advocate* soon had thirty thousand subscribers, being more than any paper in the land was having; it also

advertised the books. Soon more room for the plant was needed, and in 1833 an immense house was built in Mulberry street. This in 1836 was burned, at a loss of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Public collections were taken, yielding ninety thousand dollars; some insurance was realized and soon the Concern was at work. At the division of the Church, the Concern paid to the Southern Church two hundred and seventy



JAMES M. BUCKLEY, D. D., LL. D.
Editor of The Christian Advocate.

thousand dollars, together with all its property, debts, accounts, etc., in the South, being in ratio of its number of traveling preachers. The Church South then planted its Concern at Nashville. The Concern went on prospering and, twenty years afterwards, bought the iron building, 805 Broadway, for salesrooms and general offices, still retaining the Mulberry street plant as a manufactory. To pay for the new building, which cost seven hundred

and fifty thousand dollars, bonds at par were issued, the last of which were in the year of 1886 redeemed and burned.

There are published now by both Concerns four thousand one hundred book and tract publications. For the last four years the average daily number of bound volumes was about two thousand eight hundred. Of German books and tracts, there were issued, at the Western Book Concern, about eleven million pages annually, and of all such issues (book and tract) both Concerns seven hundred and fifty thousand pages daily.

Of editors, there are of weekly periodicals thirteen; of all periodicals, nineteen. The total number of periodicals in the Church is seventy-two; in all branches of Methodism it is one hundred and sixty-four.

The number of copies of all periodicals published by the Concerns is about thirty-three millions yearly. In 1884, the net capital of both Concerns was one million seven hundred and forty-eight thousand nine hundred and twelve dollars. The profits of both were one hundred and thirty-one thousand four hundred and sixty-one dollars. The sales of both were one million seven hundred and one thousand and twenty-seven dollars. These figures are immense and "need explaining." The explanation is simple. Some of the Methodist preachers have the finest talent for affairs, and their calling has its secular and financial side on which they find exercise and development. Their brethren see this, and thus some of the best business men living come to these agencies and their success proves their gifts. Then, too, all traveling preachers are agents. In this way it has happened that only once has the Concern suffered by frauds in management (a trifle, of an overseer in the bindery), and never by a defaulting agent. While so great a financial success, it has done vast good to the minds of nearly three generations. It has called into existence kindred associations, and nearly every Church has now its "Book Concern"

under some form and name, giving religious literature at low prices to its people and to the world

The origin of Sunday-schools and the opening of the first one in America at Crenshaw's in Virginia have already been given. In 1790, Sunday-schools were recognized by the Conferences. Directions for their formation were given, but there was no general organization of them. Dr. Durbin prepared a Question Book, and the first Library Book and others followed. In 1827, a Sun-



METHODIST BOOK CONCERN, NEW YORK.

day School Union was organized, and its starting was successful. At the first annual meeting, more than one thousand schools and sixty thousand scholars were reported. For various causes the Union declined, but, in 1840, it was reconstructed. At its report, in 1845, the attendance of scholars was nearly one third of the number of communicants in the Church. In 1876, the scholars almost equaled in number the Church members. The Year Book for 1886 gives the members, one million seven hundred and eighty-

seven thousand three hundred and thirty-nine, and the Sunday-school scholars, one million seven hundred and ninety-six thousand and thirty-four, showing a great change in forty years. The number of conversions during this last four years was two hundred and ninety-seven thousand eight hundred and three.

The object of the Union is to collect money from the Churches, and to aid weak schools, as well as to plant schools in destitute places. For this purpose it receives about fifteen thousand dollars per year. Closely connected with it is the Tract Society, which has usually about the same income.

Of Sunday-school books there are one thousand three hundred and fourteen volumes. Of the *Teachers' Journal* one million copies; of the *Classmate* two million copies, and of the *Advocate* over four million copies have been issued during the last four years.

In treating of the Church South, as well as of some other branches, the Methodist Episcopal Church being in fact the parent stem, we will give something of the style and success of these various institutions as found among them.

Under the vigorous leadership of John H. Vincent, Secretary of the Union since 1868, Institutes have been introduced. These are held in the Church districts once or twice a year for the training of the teachers in the best methods of teaching Scripture and of managing schools. These Institutes are continually enlarging into Assemblies, where the best talent in the country is employed and the schools of a Conference are represented. These are now found from Maine to California, and furnish at once delightful resorts for summer recreation, and some days of valuable instruction and intellectual activity. The first of all and greatest is at Chautauqua, under Dr. Vincent's own guidance, to which, and what has come of it, a chapter will be given.

Closely connected with the subject of literature, and summer

and general study, is the general work of education. Nearly every Conference in the M. E. Church has its Educational Society, the object of which is to collect and manage funds for the education of Christian workers, chiefly those intending ministerial or missionary work. These societies expend part of their income within their own limits and send the remainder to the General Board at New York. This Educational Board was formed in 1868. It is made of twelve trustees, half being laymen. The funds under their control were given at the Centennial of 1866, and have been increased by gifts and collections, until now one hundred and ninety thousand dollars are safely invested. Of this sum, the annual interest is spent by the Board for the following purposes: (1) To aid young men in preparing for missionary work. (2) To aid them in preparing for the ministry at home. (3) To aid the biblical and theological schools. The receipts of the Board in 1884 were fifty-six thousand one hundred and eighty-five dollars. A similar Board among the Wesleyans in England has long done like service, and the Methodists of Canada have the same system.

"Children's Day," the second Sunday of June, has come to be a Church festival. Its aim is to enlist the children of the Sunday-schools in the cause of education, and to commend especially to their sympathy, and plant among their growing ideas, the education of such of their own number as are to serve in the Gospel during the generation in which they themselves are to live. The ardor with which the day is welcomed, and the generous giving usual thereupon, are very hopeful for the future volumes of the Story of Methodism. Its collections are for the education of missionaries and ministers from Sunday-school scholars.

In the matter of authorship and literary production, Methodism has to-day an honorable record. Its specialty has been *preaching*, and from the beginning until now "spoken speech" has given its

men their chief repute and power. Of eloquent men it has had its share.

Some of these were born orators. The most eloquent Methodist in America, since Whitefield, was John Summerville. He was born, in 1798, at Preston, England. In 1818, he began to preach,



REV. GEORGE G. COOKMAN.

and immediately drew immense audiences. He came to America in 1821, with Bishop Emory, partly for recovery of health. Here his first effort, at an anniversary of the Bible Society, marked him as the first platform speaker then living. He joined the Troy

it has had

t Methodist
l. He was
n to preach,



ue to America
health. Here
r. marked him
ned the Troy

*Gomes affectionately
J. Hemmings*

Conference, and was stationed in New York, but no house could hold the crowds that pressed to hear him.

He had been reared in Ireland and his temperament was Celtic more than Saxon. In Dublin, when a boy, he used to attend the courts and after listening to a long trial he would say: "O how I would like to sum up!" At one time, being witness in a case of perplexing details, his testimony was so clear and gratifying that the Judge said to him: "You'll one day shine in the world." In New York, his address in behalf of the Institution for the Deaf and Dumb, the only one of his discourses ever published, was probably the greatest effort of his life. At his concluding sentences he dropped his handkerchief, and at the signal the children rose to their feet and stood before the audience with "Poor, poor dumb mouths." "I transfer these children to you. Behold them! They now stand before you as you must stand before the judgment-seat of Christ." In a few burning words he so touched all hearts that a collection of one thousand dollars was taken, and on the plates were a gold necklace and several valuable rings.

His career was most brilliant but brief. He died in New York in 1825, being only twenty-seven, closing his career at the age when Demosthenes and many other orators began theirs, but no American has in four years so deeply touched as many people, and children that heard him are still living to tell how his tongue entranced them.

In the year of his death, George G. Cookman came from England and well-nigh filled his place. In 1839, he became Chaplain to Congress, and no chaplain has ever equaled him in eloquence and power. Members of Congress were converted under his service and all Washington felt the influence of the chaplaincy. He embarked in 1841 for Europe, on the steamer *President*, but the ill-fated vessel was never heard from. Two of his sons and a grandson have followed him in the ministry.

Of later years no preacher has equaled Bishop Simpson in the power (in him but not of him) to sweep great assemblies with sacred eloquence, but of able speakers Methodism, North and South, has a good supply.



FANNIE J. SPARKS.

CHAPTER XXVII.

Methodism among the Freedmen.



VERY marked was one feature at the close of the civil war, in 1865. It was unlike anything found in the ordinary struggles of the world. The separation of the combatants left helpless between them a mass of five millions of colored people, a fortieth part of the negroes of the world. The government undertook the care and guidance of its wards, but

‘How small of all that human hearts endure

Is that which Kings or laws can cause or cure!’”

It was soon found that personal and organized benevolence alone could do the work needed by these unfortunates. Their ignorance and immorality were such that only the patience of Christian love

could labor and wait for their reform. The Freedmen's Bureau was also in the eyes of southern whites a constant reminder of the recent struggle. It represented the party then controlling the government and was unwelcome to their eyes. Besides, the U. S. government is not patriarchal, and that any class of people should lean upon it for support is contrary to its theory of personal responsibility. Its doctrine of life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness is that citizens help themselves, or, in some way independent of the state, help each other. The most unhopeful element in our Indian management has been the dependence of the Indians on the government. As soon, therefore, as the immediate

pressure was over the Freedmen's Bureau was discontinued and the relief of the colored people was thrown upon public benevolence, which meant—which always means—the benevolence of the Churches.

As we have seen, the Methodist Episcopal Church, with the best desires to care for what seemed its natural inheritance, was heavily taxed to repair its own severe losses by the war, and had few spare resources for the relief of the "Brother in Black." We have seen how the Church South heartily and honestly urged the formation of the colored Church, "de Chu'ch de white folks set up," and that this now contains the colored people who were under its care "befo' de wa'." To-day there are almost no colored people in the Church South.

Bishop Keener says of his South Carolina Conference in 1885: "White membership, fifty-four thousand eight hundred and fifty-eight. Colored members, seventy-six, mostly sextons. Think of our Church in South Carolina as solidly white." At present there is not a colored congregation in the Church South served by a white preacher. The Methodist Episcopal Church began on the whole wisely. It sent teachers first.

The Freedmen's Aid Society was organized in 1866, and in October of that year seventy-five teachers were sent to open schools in various places. The southern whites did not all take the matter kindly. Some felt it like a new invasion and there were instances of rude behavior. Gradually the work was better understood and it has come to be welcomed. Well it might be, for it has been a vast blessing to the South. There had been in some of the states no good school system even for the whites, and there were few good teachers to be had for colored schools. These had to be brought from the North. The colored children began to learn with great readiness. Training schools were opened and young people of promise were taught the art of teaching and

the work went on hopefully. In due time there was found to be need of still lower labor.

The Woman's Home Missionary Society was formed to do at the South, chiefly, what the Woman's Foreign Missionary Society was doing abroad. Its devoted servants visited the lowest places in cities and towns, as well as in the rural districts, sought out the most degraded, relieved their wants, read to them the Bible and got the children and adults, too, into schools. These women had some hard times in their faithful labors, chiefly from the cruel scorn of the higher white families, but they kept on. They knew of Whose cup they were drinking. In patience and long-suffering they worked on, and in due time the good results appeared.

What need there was of all this effort will easily appear. There were in the South at the close of the war eighteen and a half millions of people, of whom six and a half millions were colored. Of these eighty per cent could not write, and many of the whites were in as bad condition. Meanwhile, the M. E. Church was gaining rapidly in numbers. In 1884, it had in the South over four hundred thousand communicants, of whom three-fourths had been added since the war, and these were about equally divided between whites and colored. The M. E. Church could not undertake to educate all these, but it did its part. It began with primary schools in cabins and did what it could to help the ignorant masses.

When the states began to recover from the evils of the war, they went to the task of establishing public school systems, guided by the experience of the North. It has now come to be the case that elementary instruction is as well provided in the southern states as in most of the northern.

The illiteracy is chiefly of those beyond school age, and the young, between six and sixteen, are fairly taught. The task of the society and of "de ole John Wesley Chu'ch" is now to pro-

vide for higher instruction. The colored people are less inclined to mix with the whites in school, church and society than they were twenty years ago. This is seen in the fact that the Conferences were then mixed. They have steadily tended towards separation until now they are entirely distinct. At first the color-line was entirely ignored, and the man in black was accounted a full brother. Nature has asserted herself, and while as citizens the white and colored are to-day breaking up party lines and voting variously they socially are parting as gently as oil and water. This is not at the instance of the whites in either Church or school. It seemed to be by the instinct of the blacks. The colored preachers were restless until they had Conferences of their own.

The society has now to provide higher schools, training schools and professional schools, such as the state ought not to be taxed to support, and which in most of our states benevolence in some form supplies. About forty such schools are now operated by the society in the South. These have been carefully located, places being sought where the largest number of people can be benefited, and where there is the surest local sympathy and support.

At Atlanta, "the Chicago of the South," is the Clark University, already equal to any institution of learning in the South, except the magnificent Vanderbilt University. It has at the edge of the city four hundred and fifty acres of land, rapidly rising in value. Its chief building is fitted to all the purposes of school and boarding. The students are trained in farming, blacksmithing and carpentry, and they themselves have built houses for the faculty, a Home where the girls learn all the arts of housekeeping and plain sewing. Thus what the negro most needs, training in labor, with right ideas of its fitness and dignity, and what the girls so greatly need, training in housewifery, plain cooking

and needle-work, are found on the premises. There is ample instruction in all the branches of book-learning. The Gammon School of Theology is upon the same premises, bearing the name of the giver of over twenty-five thousand dollars to build and endow it, being about half its entire cost.

The Claflin University at Orangeburgh, S. C., has a similar outfit of farm, etc. Instruction of this kind combined with manual labor elevates the negro. A mere getting of learning tends to give him a peculiar reluctance towards manual labor and to unfit him for what he must surely do if he is to live and thrive in Dixie, or elsewhere. It is a relic of his old condition that he so often counts exemption from labor a blessing. Industry and economy are to be the lights of his pathway to improvement. It is therefore wise that the society in its schools keeps this constantly before him.

In every state, from Baltimore to Marshall and Houston, there is a higher Institution. In Little Rock there is a Philander Smith College for the blacks (the same Philander Smith as at Tokio, Japan, and at Nankin, China), and there is a Little Rock University for whites. Alabama has a school of moderate grade. In New Orleans is a University and at La Teche is the Baldwin Seminary. These are the only ones that compete directly with Roman Catholics.

In all, the institutions for colored pupils are this year twenty-two, with an attendance of three thousand four hundred and sixty-one. For whites there are eighteen, with an attendance of two thousand seven hundred and fifty-eight. The expenditures for the year closed are one hundred and seventy-four thousand and fifty-two dollars. During its career it has spent one and three-quarters of a million of dollars. There are now in the South fourteen Conferences, composed of colored preachers. No distinction of these is made in the Church reports

and no color line is found in the Minutes. The colored members prefer to be by themselves and they are Methodists for all that. There are no colored Bishops.

In the good time coming when separation shall have run its weary course, and there shall be but one Methodism in this land, these enterprises will thrive with flush life and vigor. One can hardly foresee how two races, so distinct and yet so similar, are to prosper on the same ground, under the same political rights and privileges. This has never yet happened since the world began. We must dismiss that to the distant future. There are no race troubles now, and piety and culture do not produce troubles. If this land is in the order of divine providence to show to the world the new sight of Africans and Caucasians living in peace, freedom and mutual regard, neither blending nor hating nor fearing each other, it will do the world good service.



GAMMON SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY, CLARK UNIVERSITY.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Methodist Benevolences.



COLLECTIONS for its various benevolent enterprises come in the pleasant and various round of the Methodist year. The advantage of a Connection appears in the fact that every itinerant is an agent for each of these enterprises, and none are paid as employés except the handful of secretaries who give their whole time to

the accounts and other interests of each cause. The Missionary Society is the oldest and largest of all the Church benevolences. Its origin and operations have already been given in various chapters of our Story. The humble, solitary movement of John Stewart among the Indians of northwestern Ohio and the effort to support him and his work, as the Church was in honor and duty bound to do, led to the creation of a

regular system of collections and distributions. In 1819, Nathan Bangs and Joshua (afterwards Bishop) Soule organized the Missionary Society, and the next year it was approved by the General Conference. It seemed to be for a long time a personal affair. Dr. Bangs was its sole officer for sixteen years, doing most of its work gratuitously while serving the Church in some other appointment. In 1841, Charles Pitman, a man of large views and of

great sympathy and skill in address, took the new office of missionary secretary. His chief labor was to visit the Churches, to form societies and promote earnest feeling and liberal giving.

On the failure of his health, in 1850, John P. Durbin was made his successor. A new era came on, or rather the day of small things rapidly enlarged. His term of service was twenty-two years. In that time every foreign mission except Liberia began. The income of the society rose from one hundred thousand dollars to seven hundred thousand dollars. He seemed to have all the gifts needed for the place, eloquence of the highest order, administrative ability, and great tact and discernment in choice of missionaries. At his death Methodism had girdled the earth. When he was no longer equal to the task the society ceased to be a voluntary undertaking and was made an organic part of the Church, so that every Methodist is a member of it. Its collections are a part of the regular finances of the Church, which every one joining the Church solemnly promises to maintain "according as God prosper him," so that no honorable Methodist can slight it. John M. Reid, following Dr. Durbin, was in 1886 missionary secretary. The duties of the office have long been too great for one man, and an assistant has been necessary. The present assistant is Charles C. McCabe, often called "chaplain" from his cheerful service in song and prayer to his fellow-prisoners at Libby prison during the war. Last year the sum to be raised was set at one million of dollars, and, while the senior secretary took the burden of office work, the lively chaplain was rousing the friends of the cause and all Methodists far and near to meet the demand. The society now employs one hundred and eighty-eight missionaries sent from the United States, with four hundred native helpers. It has about five thousand employed within the United States.

The Missionary Society of the Church South is steadily increasing its operations. Its first foreign mission was established in

China in 1848. It has done a good work chiefly in the region of Shanghai, and it has now twelve missionaries with nine native preachers. The Woman's Board has nine missionaries in China and the property of both societies, Church and Woman, is one hundred and thirty-five thousand six hundred dollars. Bishop Wilson is now visiting this mission. It has a valuable hospital and excellent schools at Suchow. If only this mission could be made one with that of the Methodist Episcopal Church, how much greater would be the economy and efficiency of the work! This mission cost last year twenty-four thousand dollars.

In 1873, the Church South established a mission in the city of Mexico. The chapel of St. Andres was built, and soon was gathered a society of eighty-three, with two native preachers and a free school for boys and girls. The revolutions in the state were singularly harmful to this little company, but for now eight years it has grown and prospered, G. M. Patterson being the superintendent of the mission from 1878 to 1886, and the only foreigner in the mission, his policy being to utilize native helpers. Spreading out from the city, there are now fifty-three stations, each as a light shining in a dark place. At these are five missionaries, and other native helpers to the number of forty-three, and a membership of two thousand. The mission property is worth one hundred thousand dollars. There are in the city two industrial schools, one for girls and one for boys, and in the mission there are nineteen day-schools and sixteen Sunday-schools, with an aggregate attendance of more than one thousand pupils. Its support last year cost thirty-three thousand dollars. The Mexican Border Mission is sustained by the Church South on the Texan frontier. It has a difficult field, but it is able to employ nine missionaries with over thirty Mexican helpers. In view of the wild life of the border, and the poverty and ignorance of the people, the success of the mission is gratifying. It received last

year an appropriation of twenty-nine thousand three hundred and fifty-five dollars.

The Church South entered Brazil in 1878. In the great Empire it has been found that the hold of Romanism is relaxing. It has failed to make the people wiser or better, and there is a disposition to discard it and try anything that offers improvement. There are now in Brazil five missionaries of the Church Board and two of the Woman's Board. Four schools are in progress. In the societies are one hundred and thirty-one members. The cost of the work last year was about sixteen thousand dollars.

The domestic missions of the Church South need the greater part of its funds which, in 1885, amounted to two hundred and sixty-seven thousand two hundred and sixty-three dollars. The amount judged proper to be raised in a given year is estimated by the missionary committee and assessed. The assessment of 1885 was two hundred and sixty thousand dollars, so that the income was a happy advance of over seven thousand dollars upon the expectation.

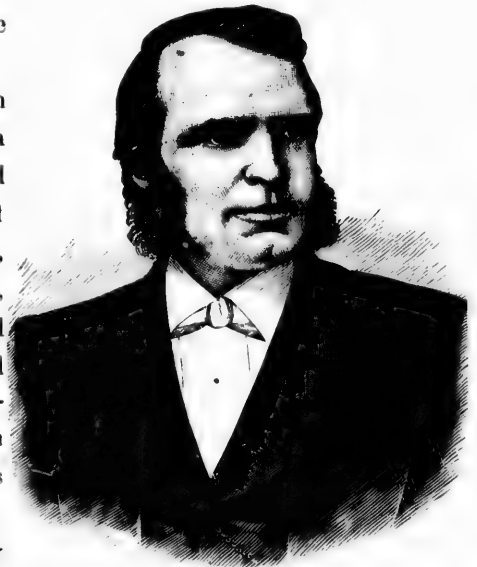
The Church Extension Society of the M. E. Church was organized in 1864. Its object is to aid in building churches in places now weak, but of fair promise, and it aims to do this in a systematic and safe fashion. It is an interest very difficult to manage; first, because it can help only those who are willing to help themselves and, next, because there must be security for funds advanced, and that means a judicious use of them. Help is given by donations and loans. The Loan Fund is created by gifts and bequests specially made for it, and no part of it can be given away, though it may be loaned without interest. It is now about one million, and the loans last year were one hundred and five thousand one hundred dollars. The Donation Fund is raised by annual collections in all the societies, to which all good Methodists give something. The donations, in 1885, were one hundred

and thirty-one thousand three hundred and forty-six dollars. The result of this system is wonderful. When an assembly of men, Ingersoll (Bob) at their head, met at Rochester, N. Y., to exult over the decay of Christianity, Chaplain McCabe, then secretary of this society, was able to telegraph, for their comfort, "We are building churches at the rate of two a day." Of twenty thousand M. E. church edifices now standing in this country, this society has aided in building five thousand and three hundred.

The Church Extension Society of the Church South has had a rapid and prosperous growth. It was incorporated in 1882, and has, in four years, received one hundred and forty-five thousand two hundred and forty-two dollars. Its system of loans and donations is like that of the M. E. Society, and it has already aided four hundred and fifty-nine Churches within

four years. A happy annex to the society has been devised, and it now goes into operation, by which the women of the Church in an associated society assist after a like fashion in building parsonages.

The Methodist Episcopal Sunday-School Union, for the aid of needy schools, the publication of Sunday-school literature and the general care of Sunday-schools, was formed in 1840. Its



REV. CHARLES C. MCCABE, D. D.

ollars. The
bly of men,
Y., to exult
en secretary
rt, "We are
nty thousand
, this society

importance may be reckoned from the fact that its statistics show twenty-two thousand two hundred and forty-six schools, with a census of two million twenty-eight thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight people in them. Its funds by collection are about sixteen thousand dollars, and with these it helps nearly a thousand schools a year. The conversions in the schools are about seventy thousand a year.

The Tract Society, like the preceding, is an organic part of the Church. Its income by collection is about fifteen thousand dollars a year. It circulates in this country in seven different languages and also in every country where we have a mission.

In the Church South and in other Methodist Churches these two interests are not separated from the general pastoral and publication work.

The Woman's Foreign Missionary Society and the Woman's Home Missionary Society are not parts of the Church. They work in separate organizations. Bishop Janes, in 1869, proposed to the former an organic union, "a wedding," with the parent society. To this Mrs. Dr. Hibbard, the president of the Woman's Foreign Mission, wittily replied: "There are two hindrances; the parties are too near of kin, one claiming to be the 'parent,' and there is too great disparity of age, one being fifty years the elder." The Bishop declared that one refusal should not break a courageous man, but the proposal has never been renewed.

The society seemed to fill a real vacancy. It gave the women of the Church something special to do, redeeming the rich out of idleness, and setting before the poor an object near and clear for their mites and prayers. *The Heathen Woman's Friend*, a monthly, edited by Mrs. Dr. Warren (Boston University), has a circulation of over twenty thousand. An illustrated paper for the women of India is published at Lucknow. The income of the society was, in 1885, one hundred and fifty-seven thousand four

E, D. D.

devised, and
the Church in
building par-

. for the aid
literature and
n 1840. Its

hundred and thirty-nine dollars. From this are supported two hundred and fifty-two workers of all grades and the work is sustained in seven different foreign countries.

The Woman's Home Missionary Society was formed in 1880. Its immediate object was to re-inforce the Freedman's Aid Society by interesting the women of the Church directly in the southern work and by supporting women among the ex-slaves as teachers and readers. The freedman is simply an unformed man, and his family is in the same crude and chaotic condition. To shape his children to piety, neatness, thrift and intelligence is the first effort; to reach adults, those children of a larger growth, and win them to industry and temperance, is the second. The laborers for these people have an immense experience of the ludicrous, the pathetic and the disagreeable, but they work for Christ's sake and have no failure. The society's work is also among the Indians, and Mrs. Gaddis among her Pawnees, trying to bring them to decency, to house-thrift, to reading, and from the worship of stuffed wild geese to Christ, is a good example of the workers. The income of the society for 1885 was over forty-four thousand dollars.

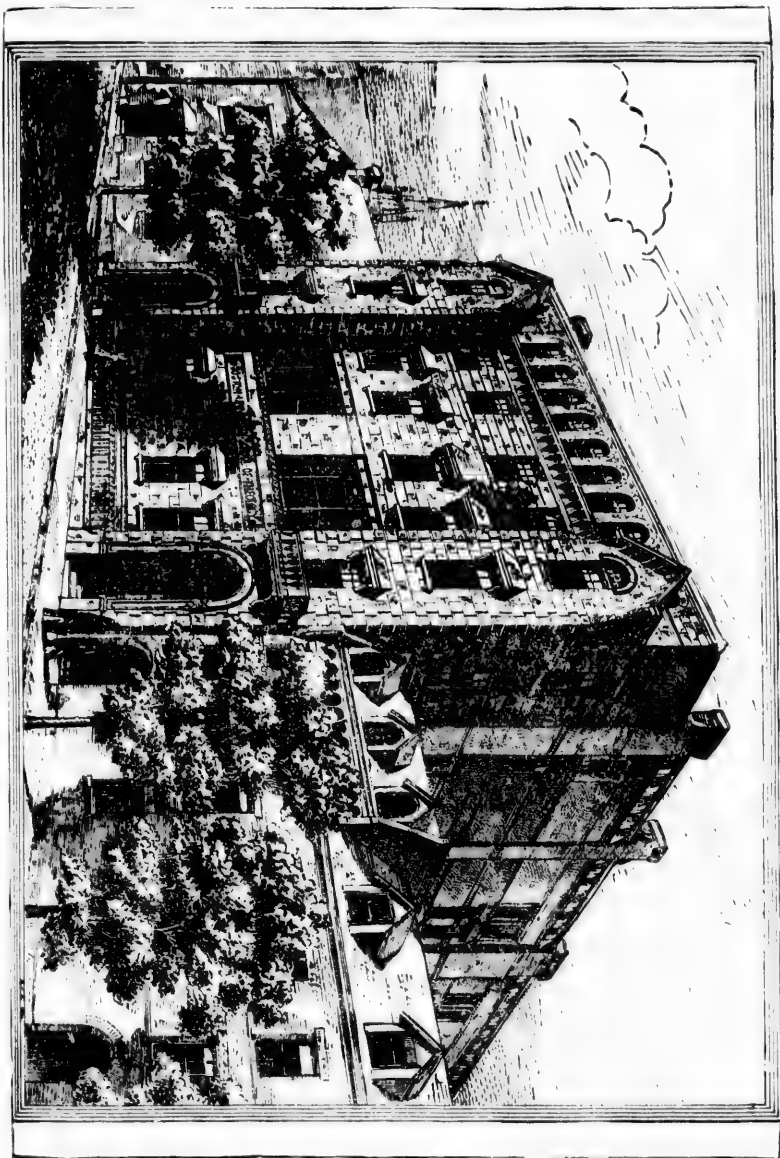
Education in the Methodist Churches has already been partially told. It truly belongs under the head of its benevolences. To plant an institution is the noblest form of individual benevolence, when it is done as told in the motto of Harvard, "*Pro Christo et Ecclesia*," for Christ and the Church. The Church is the one thing that abides in the restless whirl of mortal change, and institutions of learning anchored to it and under the shadow of its Living Head perpetuate the name of the founder and become the joy of many generations. The great universities of England and most of those, all the ancient ones, in Europe were so founded. Almost none of the seats of learning bear a founder's name. Better and truer if none did! No one person can do such exploit alone. Of educational institutions the Methodist Episcopal Church has now

ported two
work is sus-

med in 1880.
Aid Society
the southern
es as teachers
man, and his
To shape his
he first effort ;
and win them
rers for these
s, the pathetic
e and have no
ans, and Mrs.
to decency, to
f stuffed wild

The income
d dollars.
been partially
volences. To
benevolence,
Pro Christo et
rch is the one
nge, and insti-
low of its Liv-
become the joy
gland and most
ded. Almost
e. Better and
oft alone. Of
hurch has now

SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY, BOSTON FIVE-HUNDRED, 70-72 WEST VERNON STREET.



one hundred and forty-three. Of these, theological schools are ten, colleges and universities are forty-five, classical seminaries are sixty-one, female colleges and seminaries are eight, and foreign mission schools are nineteen. Their entire property is fifteen millions. This last is imperfect, for, while one writes it, two universities are founding in California, one, the Stanford, to be of larger means than any in America, and several in the far West are rising as if from the soil. Of the theological schools, the oldest is the



MEMORIAL HALL OF GARRETT BIBLICAL INSTITUTE.

Boston. It was first placed at Concord, New Hampshire, and opened as the Methodist General Biblical Institute. When the Boston University was built the removal was made in 1867. Since 1871 it has been the Theological Department of Boston University, which is intended to comprise a complete system of affiliated colleges in all departments of learning. There could not be a better location. Boston culture is proverbial, and the city, like Athens of old, is itself a school. Its pulpits and platforms set

before the student examples of the highest sacred and secular eloquence. The libraries, the resources of art and music, the historic associations and the bracing breeze of the sounding sea, inspire the young mind and help to furnish the student for every good work. The needs of the city for such labor as aids in training the laborer are great. It is not quite a Christian city, but no Church is more faithful and thriving than the Methodist.

The Garrett Biblical Institute at Evanston, Ill., bears, unfortunately, the founder's name. Mrs. Eliza Garrett, dying at Chicago in 1855, left the means by which it was established. Its organizer was John Dempster, already named in our Story, whose father had been one of our earliest preachers from England. It has done a great work in training ministers for the western regions. One of its buildings is Heck Hall, Barbara's true monument. About two thousand students have there received instruction. The huge city of Chicago is but twelve miles away, and its crude and mostly foreign-born population give the students ample apprenticeship in evangelical labor. Evanston is a charming town by the bright, blue Michigan, and so many decayed preachers have made it a residence that it is called The Pilgrim's Rest.

The Drew Seminary, also named from a founder, is at Madison, N. J., forty-five miles from New York. It has a noble place, not so much of imposing architecture as of parks and grounds, so that a student might say: "This shall be my rest forever. Here will I dwell, for I have desired it." Its libraries and appliances are choice and ample. Planted in the heart of metropolitan Methodism and served from the beginning by able men, it has, since its founding in 1866, done a work worthy of its resources, and already about one in thirty-six of Methodist preachers are its graduates. Although so far from New York, many of its students find calls to labor in the city and its environs. Other theological schools are at Baltimore, Atlanta, and in foreign missions.

al schools are
cal seminaries
at, and foreign
is fifteen mill-
t, two univer-
to be of larger
West are rising
he oldest is the



E.
Hampshire, and
ute. When the
made in 1867.
t of Boston Uni-
plete system of
g. There could
pial, and the city,
and platforms set

Of colleges the oldest is the Wesleyan University at Middletown, since Allegheny and Dickinson, though earlier built, did not earlier come into the control of the Church. The University began its work in 1830, but was not a college until the following year. It was happy in having for its first president Dr. Fisk, whose fame abroad was fully justified by the happiness of those who were immediately under his shadow. The University is beautiful for situation. Its buildings look upon the mirror of the Connecticut and



WESLEYAN UNIVERSITY, MIDDLETOWN, CONN.

its wide range of wooded hills south and east, while in front and around is the quiet town in fullness of foliage and of homes. The University has every modern improvement and fixture, and of all Methodist colleges does most truly college work.

Its namesake at Delaware, O., was founded in 1842. Its growth was slow, as it might well be in a state that has forty colleges, but it has come to be foremost of them all. Its buildings and fixtures are very extensive, and its attendance is nearly one

thousand in the associated schools. No Methodist college has been so favored with continuous revival, the converts being sometimes hundreds in a year.

The Northwestern University at Evanston was framed in 1850. The leader in the enterprise was a far-sighted man, John Evans, a physician of Chicago. His theory was that, if the school were endowed with lands in its own neighborhood, its endowment must grow with the prosperity of the school. Four hundred acres of



CENTENARY BIBLICAL INSTITUTE, BALTIMORE, MARYLAND.

low-priced farms were secured in one body, and on this land Evanston was begun. The scheme succeeded. The town took the schemer's name and grew to be the finest suburb of Chicago and a great educational center. To-day its work is large and prosperous and a thousand can at any time be found in attendance on its schools.

It is no part of our Story to give account of other than a few of these leading schools. The Boston University should be named,

seeing it bravely takes the classic name of its town and in its youth competes fearlessly with the oldest and richest schools in the land. It has its home in the heart of the ancient city where Methodism had so dreary and unhopeful an entrance. Bishop Gilbert Haven put it to some rich Methodists of Boston in this simple way: "Plant your potatoes where you can see them grow!" They accepted it and built under their own eyes a university of which all Boston is glad and all Methodists proud and thankful. From it, as from our Rocky Mountain reservoirs, flow streams all the year to refresh and fertilize a wasting world.

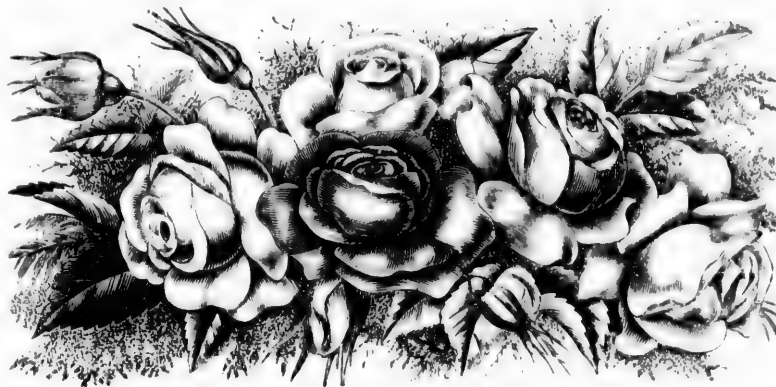
No Church is said to be now doing so much educational work as the Methodist Episcopal Church, and if this be true no other is doing so much for the future of this land. It is only doing its duty, and yet hardly that. The Church South is doing nobly, and other Churches need not blush for their efforts. Of the institutions of learning in the Church South the leading one has already been named, the Vanderbilt University, at Nashville. It was founded in



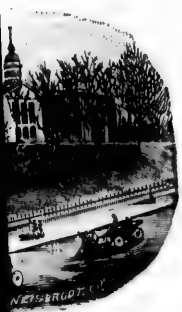
OHIO WESLEYAN UNIVERSITY.

1872, and was called the Central University of the Methodist Episcopal Church South. During the next year, it had from Cornelius Vanderbilt a gift of half a million of dollars, and to this he afterwards added a like sum. He directed that six hundred thousand dollars be permanently invested as an Endowment Fund and that Bishop McTyeire be president of the board of trustees and direct the organization of the University. A campus

of seventy-five acres was secured near the beautiful city, and here, in April, 1874, the corner-stone was laid. The institution was opened in 1875. L. C. Garland, LL. D., was chosen as its first chancellor and Dr. T. O. Summers was made vice-chancellor and dean of the theological faculty. The University has four departments, Theology, Law, Medicine and Philosophy. The latter includes Science and Literature. These departments were at once supplied with faculties of such ability as was befitting the highest institution of a great Church. There are several elective courses of study, and the collections of apparatus and cabinets are valuable. The institution has taken high rank and proved itself creditable to its founder and to its patrons. The Church South has colleges and seminaries in every state of its ancient domain.



l in its youth
s in the land.
e Methodism
ilbert Haven
way: "Plant
y accepted it
all Boston is
t, as from our
to refresh and
tional work as
ue no other is
only doing its
ing nobly, and
Of the institu-



the Methodist
. it had from
dollars, and to
that six hun-
an Endowment
the board of
y. A campus

CHAPTER XXIX.

Methodist Bishops.



O many eminent men have arisen in the Methodist Church that the outline of their characters and careers would demand a cyclopedia. It is to be assumed, and it will usually be true, that the Bishops, as they occupy the highest office, are in the average the ablest men of their period. We therefore propose to give sketches of the later Bishops, the earlier ones having been presented in our more continuous narrative.

The thirteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church was LEONIDAS LENT HAMLINE. He was born in Burlington, Conn., 1797, and died in Mt. Pleasant, Iowa, 1865. In early life his thoughts were inclined to the ministry, and he directed his studies to such a purpose. He, however, decided upon the law as his profession. His mind had a legal cast, and his sermons often took a forensic shape, so that, to many of his hearers, he was the better preacher for having once been a lawyer. He was a member of the bar in Lancaster, Ohio. When about thirty, the death of a daughter

gave a deep stir and turn to his thoughts. He threw up the practice of law and soon by regular course became a preacher. His abilities, as might be presumed, brought him into immediate notice, and in two years he was sent to Wesley Chapel, the foremost station in Cincinnati.

In 1836, he became assistant editor of the *Advocate* in that city, and after four years editor of the *Ladies' Repository*. In

1844, he was elected Bishop. His leading qualification for the high office was his gift and habit of clear, legal judgment. He came into the episcopacy at the time of the separation of the Church, a time of passions and perplexities, and his calm, acute discernment was of great value. He was of full habit and stately bearing. In preaching he made little use of the imagination; he aimed rather to carry the judgment by clear



REV. LEONIDAS LEST HAMLINE, D. D.

and impressive reasoning, yet, when he had made his point, he could enforce it with electric energy. He was constantly of devout and spiritual frame, so that when he said nothing he yet preached. He was the only Bishop that ever resigned the Episcopal office, and thus illustrated the Methodist idea that the Bishop's place is not an *order* to be lost only by sinfulness, but an *office*, and allowing of being vacated. His health being very

have arisen in the
the outline of
careers would de-
it is to be assumed,
be true, that the
occupy the highest
average the ablest
We therefore pro-
of the later Bishops.
presented in our
the M. E. Church
SE. He was born
, and died in Mi.
early life his thought-
y, and he directed
e, however, decided
his mind had a legal
ensic shape, so that,
he better preacher
ember of the bar in
leath of a daughter

feeble, he thus resigned in 1852 and took his place among the superannuated of his Conference. He then lived thirteen years of pain and weakness, but such were his peace and comfort that he says: "I am far more contented and cheerful than in the best days of my youth." His sky seemed always growing brighter and his horizon wider. After his death, Mrs. Hamline removed to Evanston, Ill., where her home was for years a center of religious society. Bishop Hamline gave to the Hamline University, between St. Paul and Minneapolis, Minn., twenty-five thousand dollars in real estate at Chicago, said to have greatly increased in value since the date of its giving. Dr. F. G. Hibbard, Clifton Springs, N. Y., has edited Bishop Hamline's life and his works, these being chiefly sermons.

The fourteenth Bishop of the Church was EDMUND STORER JAMES.

He was born, in 1807, at Sheffield, Mass. He was converted in 1820, but he spent ten years in teaching and in the study of law. He became a preacher in 1830. He was at once noted for his skill and influence with the young, his Sunday-schools being specially successful. After being called to some other office, as secretary of the American Bible Society, he was in 1844 chosen Bishop, the last ever chosen by the vote of an individual Church. For thirty-one years, a



REV. EDMUND STORER JAMES, D. D., LL. D.

among the
irteen years
comfort that
in the best
ing brighter
ine removed
a center of
line Univer-



D. D. LL. D.

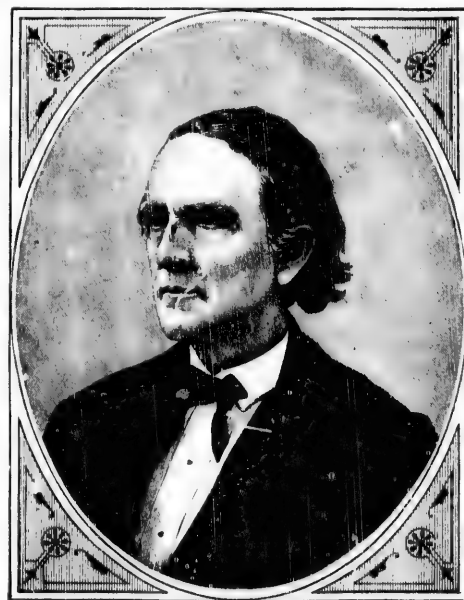
he spent ten
me a preach-
influence with
ssful. After
he American
t ever chosen
one years, a

term longer than any other has yet served, he did all the duties of a Bishop. He was not tall but of full and healthy appearance, and his slender, flute-like voice made upon the hearer a peculiar impression. His share of Episcopal experiences was quite various and complete. Among these was this that, in 1859, holding a Conference in Texas, he was driven from the state by an armed mob. The next year, Anthony Bewley, one of his preachers, was hung by a similar mob. On the whole, the M. E. Church has never had a man more effective than Bishop Janes. His clear judgment and ready wit never failed him, and, whether on the platform or before the Conference, in the pulpit or the social circle, he had the finish and brilliancy of a courtier, with the moral and spiritual character of an apostle.

Mrs. Janes was of Huguenot descent and an Episcopalian by training, but she early joined the Methodists, finding with them congenial religious society. This was some years before her marriage. She proved worthy to rank with the noblest ladies named in this story, with those who aided Wesley in the beginning, Mrs. Fletcher, Lady Maxwell, Lady Huntingdon. She died a month before her husband, and her last words were: "Out of the darkness into the light." The Bishop had already been suffering from slow disease and the loss of Mrs. Janes aggravated his malady or diminished his vital, resisting force. In about a month after her death he was prostrate and in a few days he rejoined her among the blest. His last quiet remark was: "I am not disappointed." In the same year his twin brother, who had served forty-three years in the ministry, also died; as a man, he was not unlike the Bishop and hardly his inferior.

The fifteenth Bishop was LEVI SCOTT. He was born near Odessa, Del. His father, of Irish origin, died in the year after Levi's birth, solemnly commending to God his boy and dedicating the lad to sacred service. Young Levi grew up worldly

and wicked, in spite of his parents' prayers, but he worked hard to aid his mother in the care of the family. His summers were given to farming and fishing; in winter he was at school. For music, and especially for the violin, he had a passion and a skill which opened temptation enough before him in his youth, but soothed and rested him in many a weary hour of later life. He was brought to Christ at twenty by the preaching of a Presbyterian clergyman who used to stop at his mother's house, but his clearness of experience dates from a camp-meeting held soon after. He entered Conference in 1826. We have elsewhere seen how Delaware was a fertile field for Methodism and how its most cultivated people became members of the societies. This was true when Scott began to preach and it filled him with misgivings. He began a course of severe



REV. LEVI SCOTT, D. D.

study and his inborn abilities rapidly developed. There were not then five college graduates in the itinerancy, but there were many hard students, and of these none was more diligent than this one, now entering upon ministerial labor of more than half a century. After service of fourteen years in the itinerancy, he became for three years principal of the grammar school of Dickinson College. In 1844, being member of General Conference, he opposed

worked hard
miners were
school. For
n and a skill
s youth, but
ter life. He
of a Presby-



D. D.

There were not
ere were many
than this one,
half a century.
he became for
Dickinson Col-
ee, he opposed

separation, and, though from a slave state, he took the northern view of matters then at issue. In 1848, he became book agent at New York, and in 1852 was made Bishop.

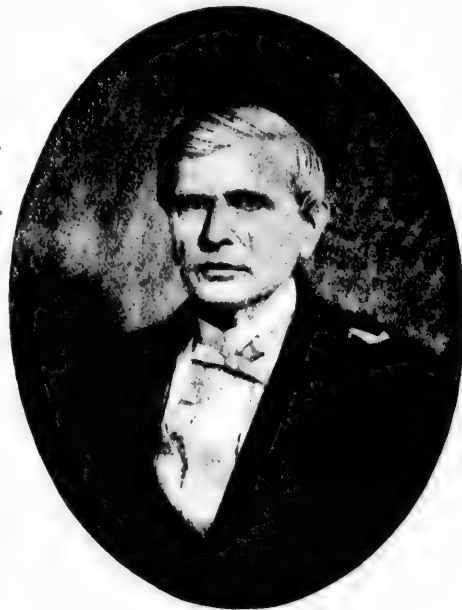
In his first Episcopal year he went to Africa, and to the last, or until his strength gave way, he was in travel and labor as abundant as his colleagues.

The impression that he made upon the Conferences was peculiar. He had no gush or overflow of feeling. His air was that of weakness and weariness, but no man saw the import of a question more quickly, or presented it with greater clearness or vigor. It was surprising that with his look of exhaustion, in a crowded, perplexed and agitated assembly, he would flash a clear, convincing light over the matter in debate, and with a few words bring everything to order. He was meek of temper but he would not abuse his own judgment, and he was inflexible in his decisions. Of all the Bishops, he was the man for a troublous session. He could ride on the whirlwind and direct the storm. "We Bishops do not claim infallibility," but he held himself alone answerable for his decisions. At the Baltimore Conference of 1861, the secretary being in the chair, resolutions were passed condemning the slavery action of the General Conference of 1860. On taking the chair the Bishop said: "This whole action passed, is in my judgment, in violation of the Order and Discipline of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and is therefore null and void, and I as Bishop do not recognize it as Conference action." This was entered over his name on the Journal. Those who recall those stormy times will see that then to annul the action of such a body of men was the highest effort of courage and conviction.

Thus Bishop Scott, having neither genius nor brilliancy, honored his office by the higher gifts of sound judgment, deep piety and clear ideas. He ceased from public labor in 1880 and two years later was gathered to his fathers. He had been fifty-six

years in the ministry and thirty years a Bishop. Mrs. Scott was for fifty years an invalid. The last days of the Bishop were soothed by a daughter's care, and his son is a member of the Wilmington Conference.

The sixteenth Bishop of the Church was MATTHEW SIMPSON. He was born, 1811, at Cadiz, Ohio. His early advantages were fair and he was a diligent student. At first, having spent some time in teaching, he entered upon the practice of medicine. He then felt his call to preach and entered the Pittsburgh Conference. Some years later he became professor of Natural Science at Allegheny College, Pa., and in 1839 he was made President of Asbury (now De Pauw) University, Indiana. Here he served nine years, and, after four years' editorship of the *Western Christian Advocate*, he was in 1852 chosen Bishop. He was a dili-



MATTHEW SIMPSON, D. D., LL. D.

gent Bishop and a successful author, but he will be most remembered as an orator. For years he was the orator of Methodism. Of Celtic lineage, he inherited the Irish gift and turn for eloquence, but, in his youth, speaking was what he least could do. When he became a preacher, his voice and even his personal appearance were against him; nor did he, like Demosthenes, resort to art and elocutionary device. By his own account, which he

gave for the help of young preachers, his first step was utterly to forget himself, to banish all thoughts of oratory and simply to make the utmost effort to say things so that people could understand them at the first saying.

In every discourse he had but one purpose in view, and to accomplish this he bent all his energies. The intense, conscientious effort to impress truth in the most effective manner was attended with growing power so to do, and thus he became a great public speaker. In his public efforts there was, as in those of all great preachers, much that has no carnal or artistic explanation. He was often slow, sometimes dull; sometimes a failure. Again, thousands would hang upon his words with eagerness, and they would "see what was coming" quite as soon as the speaker himself saw it, and their emotions would surge within them. When the coming crisis of thought and feeling was reached, vast congregations would be uncontrollable. They would rise, throw up their hands and shout wildly, the speaker himself being as much overcome as they. Nothing like it has been seen in the modern Church since Summerville. During the Rebellion he was very active in public service, as was also Mrs. Simpson, but he declined all civil place and honor. He led, in patriotic devotion, his own Church, which Lincoln, for its temper and power in the country's trials, was inclined to call The National Church, seeing that it sent more men to the field and more nurses to the hospital than any other. Bishop Simpson died at Philadelphia just after the General Conference of 1884. His tomb, one of remarkable beauty, is visited by throngs who come to remember his power in the Gospel.

The seventeenth Bishop was OSMOND C. BAKER. He was a native of New Hampshire, born at Marlow, 1812. After such struggling boyhood as was the usage of the Old Granite State, he went to Wilbraham at its early outset under Dr. Fisk. Under

s. Scott was
Bishop were
number of the

EW SIMPSON.
antages were
g spent some



D., LL. D.

he most re-
ator of Meth-
t and turn for
east could do.
personal ap-
thenes, resort
unt, which he

the shadow of that saint, he was converted and became an exhorter at seventeen. He went with Dr. Fisk to the Wesleyan University at Middletown, and was under him there for three years. By reason of failing health, he left the college without graduation. He soon became a teacher at Newbury, Vermont, where he served for ten years. The Biblical Institute at Concord (now Boston) was then opened, and he became a professor, having been an itinerant but one year in all his life.

He was made Bishop in 1852. The infirmity of his health and the quiet habits of the recitation-room, where his life had been spent, made him as Bishop very different from most of his colleagues. He was of fine personal appearance, beyond all the rest, and his manners were peculiarly refined and courteous. He wrote for his own guidance an Exposition of the Discipline, an authority in



REV. OSMOS CLEANDER BAKER, D. D.

all Church law, and his decisions were very carefully made. He was not an impressive speaker, but his views were luminous and instructive. It was in the exhilarating air of Colorado, where he was guiding and aiding the Church in its day of small things just after the war, that paralysis struck him with its "air-drawn dagger." He afterwards did some service, but a second stroke, in 1871, was fatal. He was nineteen years a Bishop.

became an ex-
the Wesleyan
ere for three
lege without
ry, Vermont,
itute at Con-
e a professor.



AKER, D. D.

ally made. He
e luminous and
prado, where he
mall things just
its "air-drawn
second stroke.
op.

EDWARD RAYMOND AMES was the eighteenth Bishop. He was born at Amesville, Ohio, but of staunch New England lineage. While a student at the Ohio University he united with the Church, and, in 1830, being then twenty-four, he got from Peter Cartwright his license to preach. He early showed a sagacity, fearlessness and energy that made him the joy of the frontier, and, when Indiana became a Conference, he took the state for his range. In 1840, being



EDWARD RAYMOND AMES, D.D., LL. D.

member of the General Conference, he was made superintendent of Indian missions, as well as corresponding secretary of the Missionary Society. Within four years he traveled, between Texas and Lake Superior, more than twenty-four thousand miles. He seemed to enjoy the Indians thoroughly, and they enjoyed him as well. He would be for weeks among them, camping in the wild, equally fear-

less and free with friendly or hostile tribes. He perfectly understood their character, and, learning to speak Choctaw, he served that tribe, in 1842, as chaplain of their council. He framed the school law of their nation, providing for education more amply than any law then found in this country. His acquaintance with Indian character and his power to manage them were valued in national affairs, and he was often consulted and urged to take

office. He became Bishop in 1852, and, being from the same state and Conference as Bishop Simpson, his election was the more complimentary, as it is the only instance of the taking of two Bishops from the same state or Conference at the same time.

His power over men and his skill in affairs were such that, had he taken a political career, he would have gone to the highest place. His bearing had tenderness, courage and authority; he could listen patiently and explain, but his word was final. One could see in a Conference how he gained the love, reverence and obedience of the Indians.

In the days of the war, while Bishop Simpson was stirring the hearts of the people, Bishop Ames was closeted with Lincoln and Stanton in counsel and often in prayer. His knowledge of the Southwest served them well. He was never disheartened. When men doubted whether Chicago would be rebuilt, he relieved the case by saying: "The railroads could afford to build it," and men saw at a glance the truth of his word. He died in Baltimore, in April, 1879. "Know ye not that a prince and a great man is this day fallen in Israel?"

Our next Bishop, the nineteenth in order, was DAVIS ASGATT CLARK. His birthplace was Mount Desert, off the coast of Maine, that island so bleak in winter and so fair in summer. Here he was born in 1812, and, like most lads of the coast, he had before him life's ideal in the captaincy of a vessel or in wealth boldly drawn from the abundance of the stormy seas. His view of duty changed with his conversion, and he thought of becoming a fisher of men. At nineteen, he went to a manual labor school, and thence he began "to climb the hill of science barefoot." His health and vigor seemed as inexhaustible as his native Atlantic. He prepared for college by twelve hours of daily study, beside three of hard labor with his hands. In 1833, he went to the Wesleyan University, and finished in two years the proper study

of four, a feat impossible now. It should have been impossible then, but that was in times of looser requirements. He was over-drawing life's resources, and, though his drafts were honored, he found himself without deposits when they would have best served him—twenty years later. In 1846 he entered the pastorate, and did service mostly in New York city. His fiery abolitionism and the blazing of his bright blonde hair made him a shining mark in

those restless times. He was, in 1851, made Doctor of Divinity by the University from which he graduated, being the first of her sons so honored by her hand. He became, in 1852, editor of the *Ladies' Repository* at Cincinnati. That periodical has long since vanished from the earth "for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof," but it is remembered at least by its strange bishop-making power. Bishops Hamline, Clark and



REV. DAVIS WASGATT CLARK, D. D.

Wiley sprang from it into the Episcopacy. He (Clark) became Bishop in 1862. We shall see that, of the three then elected, he alone served seven years, the others only five each. He was, when chosen, already a worn-out man. He set at the duties of his new office with his habitual energy, his most noted labors being in the Southwest and South after the war. The University at Atlanta bears his name. So intense was his interest in the

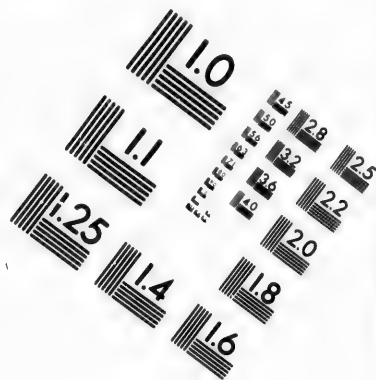
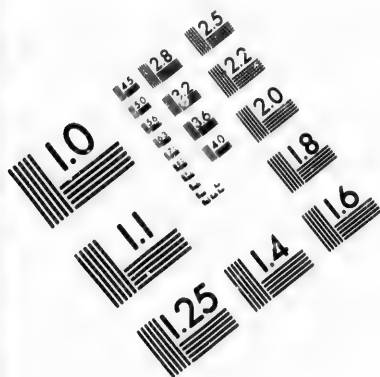
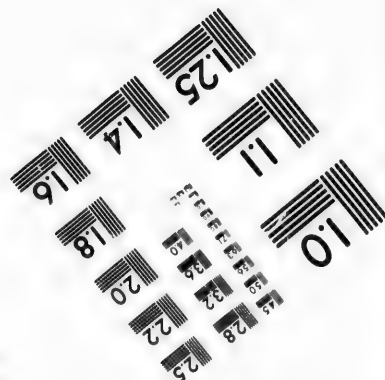
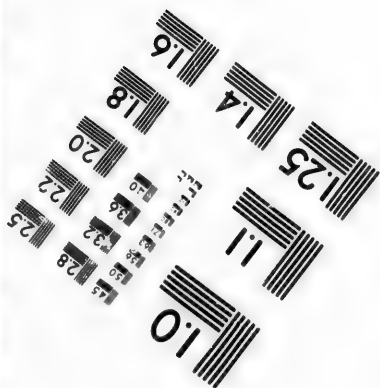
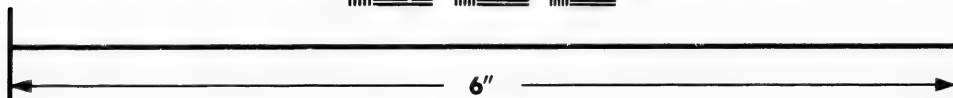
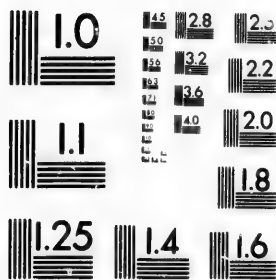


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

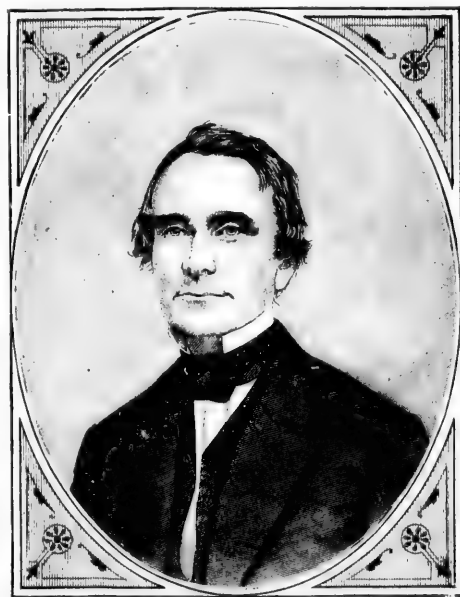
23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 28 25
1.6 32 22
1.8 20

10

southern work that he seemed to bequeath it to his family, and Mrs. Clark and his daughter, Mrs. Dr. Davis, of Cincinnati, became prominent in its promotion. His final breakdown was at Peekskill, 1871, but he was taken home and died among his kindred at Cincinnati. "He should have died hereafter," but, measured by its intensity, his life was fairly long. "Since Jesus hath lain there, I dread not its gloom," was his last word of the grave. Like many other Bishops, he left a fair estate, not that the office of Bishop is "a good thing," but that keen sight and economy, with toil and energy, may lawfully secure some share of the life that now is, as well as of that which is to come.

EDWARD THOMSON was the Bishop next in order of election, the twentieth to come into the sacred office. His birthplace was Portsea, England. From his



REV. EDWARD THOMSON, D. D., LL. D.

family, one hundred years before, had come James Thomson, the Poet of the Seasons, and, in 1810, was born a kinsman quite equal to the well-known, second-grade author. When he was eight, his family came to Ohio. Plato used to call young Aristotle the *nous*, the intellect of his school. It was true of young Thomson that, wherever he might be, he was the brain of the place. At nineteen, he had a medical diploma from the Univer-

s family, and
"incinnati, be-
kdown was at
mong his kin-
r," but, meas-
ce Jesus hath
of the grave.



D. D., LL. D.

Thomson, the
kinsman quite
When he was
all young Aris-
s true of young
e brain of the
om the Univer-

sity of Pennsylvania, and began the practice of his profession. At his conversion, a year later, he entered the M. E. Church, though from a Baptist family. He filled several prominent places, and had charge of Norwalk Seminary for two years; was also editor of the aforesaid *Ladies' Repository*. In 1846, he became president of the Ohio Wesleyan University, where he served fourteen years. No president of a college in our Church has ever so deeply impressed a school and a community as he has done. So perfect was his acquaintance with the studies of every department that he could enter any recitation and flood the exercise with instant light and energy. He adopted the Sunday afternoon lectures, and, as it was at an hour outside of the usual Church services, the University chapel was always crowded. No mastery of the English language more nearly perfect than his can be found in our century, and his prayer "flowed from lips wet with Castilian Jew." The young Methodism of the West learned of him (and felt the lesson) that noise and fury are no part of eloquence, and that the Wesleyan rule of elocution is good in every land.

The students of Williams College were fond of calling their president, Mark Hopkins, "Mark, the perfect man." The students of Ohio Wesleyan University said as much without play of words concerning President Thomson, and his name is dear and sacred with many thousands.

In 1860, he was chosen editor of the *N. Y. Christian Advocate*. The period was a trying one, the passions roused by the war were increased by various opinions within the Church, and competition among Church journals was vexing, but he quietly did his best. At the next General Conference he was made Bishop. He had a record as a preacher. At his first open-air sermon sixty-five had sought religion and forty-six united with the Church. Wherever he went, men heard him gladly. As Punshon said, he was the Chrysostom, the golden-mouthed, of

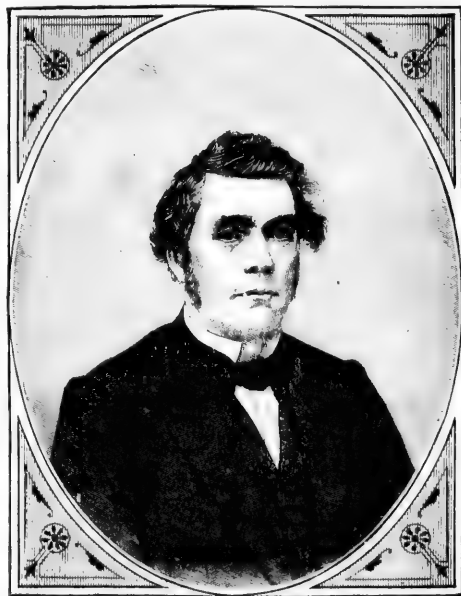
preachers. He visited India and gave, in two volumes, an account of the land; he also published "Essays and Evidences of Christianity." Four years in the Episcopacy did not allow him to make much impression as Bishop, but he gained in his office the confidence of his brethren. He died of pneumonia at Wheeling, West Virginia, in 1870.

The twenty-first Bishop was CALVIN KINGSLEY, born, in 1812, at Annsville, New York.

"In sooth, my friends, a sturdy lad was he!" At fourteen, he drove an ox team for six weeks westward, and then the family were not far from Chautauqua, settling in the forest primeval, under murmuring pine trees and hemlocks. There he heard a Methodist preacher, and, becoming converted, his prayers at home were blessed to the conversion of his parents. Feeling the ministerial call, he determined to

have an education first. He made the forest help him, yielding him skins and venison and maple sugar, and "how bowed the woods beneath his sturdy stroke!"

He made his way to Allegheny College, and cut his way through with his ax. Such a man was most wanted where he was best known, and he was kept at the college from 1841 to 1856. His life was prodigiously active. His bodily strength



REV. CALVIN KINGSLEY, D. D.

was great, and whatever he touched must move. In debate against the heresies and delusions of the period, he rejoiced as a mighty man, and his fame traveled far. In 1856, he was made editor of the *Western Christian Advocate*. At the General Conference of 1860, he was chairman of the committee on slavery and was regarded as the leader of the antislavery sentiment. His able conduct of the subject drew upon him general admiration and he was, in 1864, chosen Bishop. In his new office, he moved with his habitual energy. At a session of his old Conference (Erie), at Warren, Ohio, in 1866, a fire broke out at midnight on the premises of his host, and the Bishop was instantly foremost of all the active and muscular men, and by word and deed was master of the situation, saving the house that gave him a home. In 1869, after an Episcopal tour around the world and great exertions in the heats of India and Ceylon, he was on his homeward way by the Holy Land. At Beyroot, with Dr. Bannister, of Evanston, he rose early to get a view of that goodly mountain, Lebanon, then still white with its wintry snows. Coming down from the housetop, he fell and died. It was found that organic disorder of the heart, the result of some hard strain in other years, had resulted in this sudden taking-off. His tomb is in Beyroot, and over it has been reserved, by the order of the General Conference, a monument to mark our Methodist interest in western India.

"The ruddy beam of morning tinges
Only his sad funereal stone,
And evening throws its crimson fringes
But on his slumber cold and lone."

But to him the Master had but to say, "Well done!" He went up from a region of old, well represented in the heavens.

THOMAS BOWMAN follows Kingsley as twenty-second Bishop. He was of that ancient Methodist stock which we have in another place noted as appearing when Methodist preachers first entered

James, an ac-
Evidences of
not allow him
in his office
ia at Wheel-

born, in 1812,

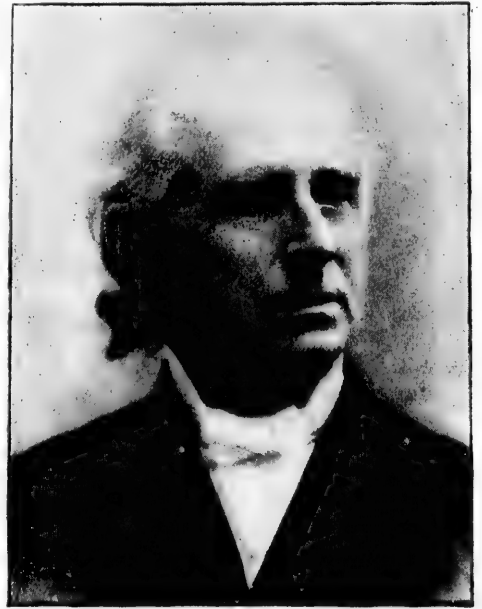


BY, D. D.

p him, yielding
how bowed the

d cut his way
anted where he
from 1841 to
bodily strength

central Pennsylvania. He is the grandson of the Bowman there named, born at Berwick in 1817. In 1832, he was a student at Cazenovia, N. Y., a bright, clean boy, not only loved by everybody, but impressing all with the idea that he was to act no ordinary part in the affairs of his generation. He was set up, a beardless orator, to make a Fourth of July address, and, forty years after, old citizens stoutly affirmed that it had not yet been equaled! He was then associated with his brother, who has since achieved a legal and a military career. While at school, the future Bishop was converted, and, four years later, graduating at the head of his class at Dickinson College, and still not fixed in his calling, he gave a year to the study of the law. In 1838 he began to preach, and, after ten years, he organized the Seminary at Williamsport, Pa. Hav-



BISHOP THOMAS BOWMAN, D.D., LL.D.

ing conducted this for ten years, he became president of the Asbury (De Pauw) University. For two years he was chaplain of the U. S. Senate, retaining his presidency of the University. In 1872, he was chosen Bishop, and, though now but fourteen years in service, he is the senior Bishop. "The fathers, where are they? And the prophets, do they live forever?" He is the most sunshiny of men, and, so simple and attractive is his manner.

Bowman there
s a student at
ved by every-
was to act no
was set up, a
ess, and, forty
d not yet been



, D.D., LL.D.

resident of the
e was chaplain
the University.
y but fourteen
ers, where are
He is the most
is his manner.

that, of all the Bishops, he is the favorite of the Sunday-schools and is often called "The Children's Bishop." He has entertained and instructed them all around the world.

At his turn of encircling the earth, as he came up the Red Sea, he found himself suddenly unable to mention his wife in private prayer. "She is dead!" was his instant conviction, and there he left it. At his Conference in Italy, soon after, a letter, his first for a long time from home, was handed him in time of session. "That is it!" he thought, and sure enough the letter told him of her death, at St. Louis, in the very hour of his strange thought upon the Red Sea! From that blow he has never rallied—i. e., his friends mark his loss of buoyancy and cheer, for she had been to him as Mrs. Gladstone, as any true and gifted wife, is to her husband. Still he does, even in a cool and broken spirit, his work to the blessing and welfare of the Church.

The twenty-third Bishop of the M. E. Church is WILLIAM L. HARRIS. His birth was in 1817, at Mansfield, Ohio. In early life his attention was not given to getting an education, but in the free air of a farm he secured a vigor of body that has served him well. At seventeen, he was converted, and began to seek intellectual training and fitness for the calling that came home to his conscience. He entered Norwalk Seminary, and was there able to secure a good elementary education and a fair beginning in higher studies. After beginning, in 1836, to preach, he prosecuted his studies with an industry worthy of a disciple of Wesley. On his circuits, he studied by the blaze of pine knots in cabins of settlers, and in the saddle as he rode to his appointments on his far-stretching circuit. He became, for two years, a tutor in the Ohio Wesleyan University, thus gaining a larger opportunity to perfect himself in his higher studies. In 1848, he took charge of the Baldwin Institute (now University), at Berea, Ohio. This institution took its name from the generous, eccentric man, who had

found a fortune in the grindstone quarries of Berea, and who, among other munificent acts, founded the institution for colored students, which now bears his name, at La Teche, La. His service here was for three years, and then he resumed teaching at the Ohio Wesleyan University. Meanwhile, he had been in General Conference, and, in 1856, was made its secretary. So fully was he endowed with secretarial gifts of quickness, accuracy and order, that he was re-elected, without opposition, at every session until 1872, a term of service quite without precedent. In 1860, he was chosen assistant corresponding missionary secretary, to aid the now venerable Dr. Durbin, and to this office he was re-elected until 1872. He was then chosen Bishop, and entered upon the highest position in the gift of the Church. His long experience as missionary secretary and as secretary of the General Conference gave him instant fitness for a line of work to which none of his colleagues was so well prepared. He is often called "The Missionary Bishop." The qualities that made him a good secretary make him also an excellent presiding officer. He is never snarled, and business under his hand is clearly and rapidly dispatched.



REV. WILLIAM L. HARRIS, D. D., LL. D.

He is now long resident in New York, which, in spite of his

ea, and who,
a for colored
ne, La. His
d teaching at
been in Gen-
ry. So fully
accuracy and



D., LL. D.
ness for a line
ell prepared.
qualities that
ent presiding
his hand is
n spite of his

long and frequent journeys all over the world, may be called his diocese.

RANDOLPH S. FOSTER is the twenty-fourth Bishop of the Church. He was born, in 1820, at Williamsburgh, Ohio. His early studies were prosecuted at Augusta College, Kentucky, but his mind developed rapidly, and at seventeen he was already in the ministry. It was his happiness to begin the Christian life so early as scarcely to feel the change, though this was real and abiding. At eleven he was quite furnished in the experiences of grace, and, though his service in the ministry began at an age so unusual, he was no novice in the principles of religion or of the art of discourse. His youthful turn was to literature and metaphysics, and his specialty has for his whole life been in this direction.



REV. RANDOLPH S. FOSTER, D.D., LL. D.

In depth of theological study, he has been the most eminent of our Bishops, and he may be called among them, as St. John was called among the apostles, the divine, the theologian. Such a man went, as a matter of course, to the front rank of service. After being in prominent places in Ohio, he went to Cincinnati, where, in 1849, he put out his first book, "Objections to Calvinism," in reply to some attacks upon the doctrines of Methodism. Being then called to New York, he

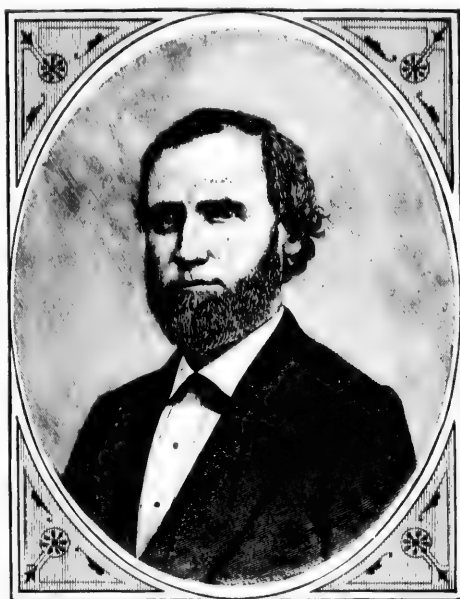
published "Christian Purity." Such intellectual power as he was now manifesting was in demand in many directions, and he became president of the Northwestern University at Evanston. At that Athens of Methodism he spent several years, and then resumed the pastorate in New York, filling the foremost stations and making himself felt in all. In 1858, he became professor of Systematic Theology at the Drew Seminary. On the death of Dr. McClintock, in 1870, Dr. Foster was made president of the seminary. In 1872, he was chosen Bishop, and entered upon the ever-shifting duties of his high office. He is not, to the popular ear, the most attractive of preachers, but there is always a strong and noble sweep of thought that makes the hearer feel the presence of a master. The Word is always opened and enlarged in his presentation. Bishop Foster has taken his turn at the world-girding journeys, and his letters have had a wonderful interest. He has been the man usually chosen where, as at Chautauqua, there has been wanted a clear unfolding of difficult and profound subjects. His home is at Boston, and the progress of the Church there planted by Jesse Lee has been well promoted by his successor.

The twenty-fifth Bishop was ISAAC WILLIAM WILEY. He was born at Lewiston, Pa., in 1825. He professed religion at ten, yet, like the twenty-fourth Bishop, such had been his habit of prayer that he hardly felt the change. He was soon in preparation for college, but at eighteen, being then a local preacher, he left school to labor in a revival then extending through that part of Pennsylvania. At the close of the revival, his voice seemed ruined, and he, for that reason, took a medical course at New York. In 1846, he married and entered practice in western Pennsylvania. He was still troubled about preaching; yet there was in the Conference no room for married men. He resolved to go to a new place, and be a physician and nothing else; but,

power as he was
ns, and he be-
Evanston. At
t, and then re-
remost stations
ne professor of
n the death of
resident of the
l entered upon
not, to the pop-
ere is always a
hearer feel the
ed and enlarged
his turn at the
a wonderful in-
ere, as at Chau-
of difficult and
the progress of
ll promoted by

WILEY. He was
religion at ten,
en his habit of
oon in preparat-
al preacher, he
rough that part
s voice seemed
course at New
western Penn-
; yet there was
resolved to go
ing else; but,

strangely enough, his repute as a preacher arrived at the new place, Port Carbon, as soon as himself. His medical success was most gratifying; his preaching was in growing demand, and at last both were reconciled in his appointment as medical missionary to China. After giving a year to special medical study, he sailed, in the spring of 1851, to Foochow. His initiation was severe. The health of Mrs. Wiley and himself was wretched, and



REV. ISAAC WILEY, D. D.

the Taiping rebellion was in full rage, wasting the country with fire and sword and threatening Foochow, where no missionaries but the Wileys remained. For a week they were kept in the upper story of their house, a cyclone having flooded the city. The year (1853) was dreadful with every evil known to mankind, and, in November, Mrs. Wiley died amid its horrors. He came home with his two motherless children. He then entered

the pastorate, and afterwards he managed the Pennington Seminary. In 1864, he became editor of the *Ladies' Repository*, and continued in that post until 1872, when he was chosen Bishop.

The leading feature in his character was fortitude. Few men have had so many sorrows as he in his own house. In China, the horrors around him were unspeakable, and, after his return, he, in our own war, went to the aid of the suffering, and was for

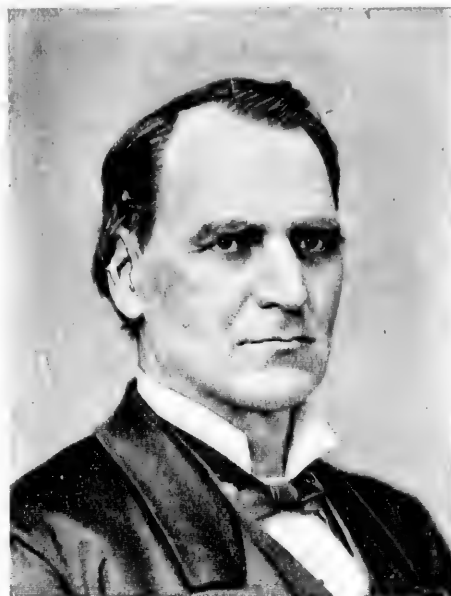
years in work for the freedmen. He was always the center of misery, and if any man, like the Italian poet, ever "saw hell," Bishop Wiley was the man. Yet he was always quiet, self-centered and unshaken. When the Chinese storms were raging, he gently won his first convert, a little boy, by telling the lad Bible stories and softly leading him to the truth, as it is in Jesus. No man gloomy with fear and sorrow could have done that. After twelve years of the usual restless round of episcopal duty, he made his last visit to China and there died, as was told in our "Methodism in China."

STEPHEN M. MERRILL was, in 1872, made the twenty-sixth in the order of Methodist Episcopal Bishops. He had not behind him so varied and eminent a history as some other Bishops could show. His brethren chose him for what he was at the time proving himself to be and for what they were confident he would be able to do hereafter. He was born, in 1825, at Mt. Pleasant, Ohio. His early education was not collegiate. In 1842 he came into the Church, and in 1846 he began his career as a preacher. He had a great native energy of mind, and his early lack of opportunity was now remedied by intense application to a wide range of study. His clear and comprehensive attainments have been recognized by institutions of learning, and he has to complain of no lack of university honors. He first became a member of General Conference in 1868, and he went immediately to the front of the body as a clear, fearless and skillful debater. In that year he was chosen editor of the *Western Christian Advocate*. The office of editor has preceded that of Bishop in so many instances that it seems to show some direct relation with it. Only six Bishops have been taken from the pastorate, while at least nine have come from editorship. The pastorate, unless its incumbent be otherwise conspicuous, rarely makes him so. The editor or general officer becomes widely known. He gives to the

public only his best attitudes and his most careful thoughts, and thus makes his best impression. He is also well situated for gaining broad views of the Church's interest and an appreciation of the ideas prevailing in it and of the men serving it.

Bishop Merrill's course as editor was final proof of his character and ability, and when, in 1872, men were wanted for Bishops, whose eye was not dim or their natural force abated, before whom

lay probable years of effective service, he was chosen one of them. For now fourteen years he has fulfilled the expectation of the Church. While he has taken his share of the duty "to travel at large throughout the work," his residence has usually been at Chicago. The Church interests centering there are very great. The city is a wicked one, but not more so than any great city where evils, foreign and domestic,



REV. STEPHEN M. MERRILL, D. D.

are in the majority. In every direction, Christianity is at work, and Methodism does its share. There are about forty M. E. Churches, with many missions. These, with Evanston and its schools, and the vast, rich country surrounding, make the active Bishop care and labor at home.

The Bishop next in order of election, the twenty-seventh, is EDWARD GAYER ANDREWS. He came of a good lineage. The

family of his mother, who is (1886) in the calm rest of an honored old age, was of the Friends, and still remembered in central New York for their integrity and ability. His uncle has been Chief-justice of Michigan, and his brother has long been a Judge of the Court of Appeals in New York. His father, a cotton manufacturer of Utica and Troy, was one of the noblest laymen, devout and generous, taking the lowliest duties and the heaviest burdens. The future Bishop, one of five sons, whose sisters were as many, was born near Utica in 1825. He was member of the Church at ten. He prepared for college at Cazenovia. Full of animal spirits and bodily vigor, he found a congenial friend in General Hawley, now U. S. Senator from Connecticut, and he left, with all the impression of a joyous, active, blameless boy, the life of his circle. In 1847 he graduated at the



REV. EDWARD G. ANDREWS, D.D., LL.D.

Wesleyan University. There he had been under Dr. Olin, and in the society of Gilbert Haven and a score like him, whose young efforts and ardors were fitting themselves and each other for place and power among men. Andrews was already a preacher, and, after graduation, he began at the bottom of the service, under a Presiding Elder, in central New York. In 1854 he became a teacher at Cazenovia and, in 1856, principal. He

est of an hon-
membered in
His uncle has
as long been
His father, a
of the noblest
duties and the



S, D.D., LL. D.

Dr. Olin, and
e him, whose
nd each other
as already a
ottom of the
ork. In 1854
principal. He

was member of General Conference in 1864, and at that time was transferred to the New York East Conference. His character now rapidly unfolded, and all the efforts of his previous life seemed but as studies preparatory to the brilliant career that now opened before him in the pastorate. His services were called for in the most important charges, and each year found him stronger in himself and in the sentiment of his people. In a Conference crowded with talent he was again sent to General Conference, and was for over thirty years the only man chosen from the pastorate into the Episcopacy. The true honor of the pastoral office seemed to be restored in him, and his following career has amply justified the expectation with which he was elected. Like his brethren in the Board of Bishops, he has traveled the round world, seeing the cities of many men and learning their minds. His residence has for some years been at Washington. The rapid growth of the national capital, and the southward spread of the M. E. Church, made such residence desirable. Abundant as he is in labors, his hereditary vigor is equal to their doing, and his cheer of heart is unfailing.

GILBERT HAVEN was, in 1872, elected as the twenty-eighth of the Bishops. He was the most *intense* man of his generation. What has been said of the family of Bishop Andrews might now be said again. Bishop (the simple "Gilbert," and even the shorter "Gil," not from lack of reverence, but from fulness of fellowship, has been his title among his contemporaries) Haven's father was a strong business man of Boston, and his mother a woman of great energy within her house and Church. After some business experience, he entered Wilbraham, and graduated, in 1846, at the Wesleyan University. No man in his college was so active in general affairs or of so wide miscellaneous reading, yet he took the third honor in a large and able class. Such was his intensity of mind that he was obliged to do nothing but once. It stayed

and he could recall it at will to his service. After teaching five years and serving as pastor for ten, during which his pen was incessantly active, he was the first chaplain commissioned for the war, entering with the Eighth Massachusetts, under General Butler. He was *so* proud of his regiment! He insisted, too, that one of its privates made the great war-song, "John Brown's Body." He visited Europe, and gave his travels in "The Pilgrim's Wallet." In 1866, he became editor of *Zion's Herald*, and that goodly sheet shot to the front in the handling of the stirring questions of the hour. His place was always at the front, as his regiment, in 1861, opened the way to Washington. The future was everything with him, and he claimed to represent and speak for The Church of the Future. In the same passionate intensity he mourned the death of his wife, lying whole nights



REV. GILBERT HAVEN, D. D.

at her grave in tears and groans. "I will lay my head in her lap for a thousand years in heaven and rest it," said he, in a time of longing and exhaustion. Becoming Bishop, he took the black man for his charge, and gave him all his heart and time. He took the perils of a season in Liberia, from which he never fully recovered. He made his home at Atlanta, and, on flying wing, he penetrated every place where Christian work was able to enter.

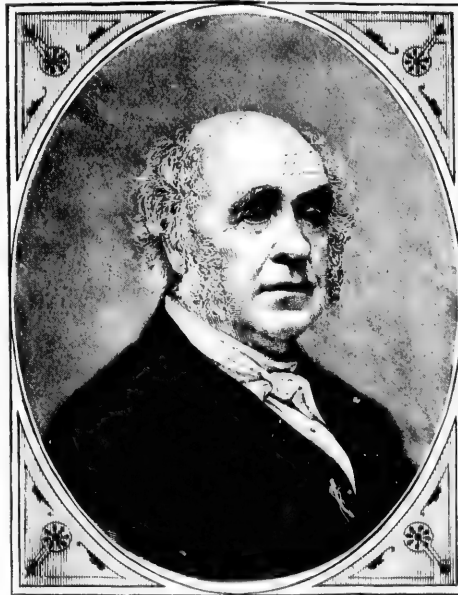
teaching five
pen was in-
oned for the
General But-
too, that one
own's Body."
rim's Wallet."



D. D.
ad in her lap
, in a time of
ok the black
ne. He took
ever fully re-
ving wing, he
ble to enter.

He had a passion for land, and the noble property of Clark University is of his securing. The whites of the South counted him hostile and dangerous, but they have come to see that he was their intense, far-sighted friend. In the end of 1879, a medical man at Cincinnati pronounced him suddenly worn-out, and he hastened to his family home, Malden, Mass., to die. Crowds of friends came, and his last days were a continuous levee. He died

in glorious peace, January 3, 1880. His son is a Boston preacher. His son-in-law is Dean of Gammon School of Theology at Atlanta.



REV. JESSE TRUESDELL PECK, D. D., LL. D.

JESSE TRUESDELL PECK, the twenty-ninth Bishop of the M. E. Church, was of a family ancient for this country, both his grandfathers being soldiers of the Revolution, a pedigree about as good as the hundred ears of the Lady Vere de Vere. He was one of six gigantic brothers, of whom the

eldest was a local preacher and the others itinerant. There were five daughters in the well-filled house, and the line is now multitudinous. Jesse was trained a blacksmith, and, on the fine old military days of central New York, his ear-piercing fife sent far its soul-animating strains. At about nineteen, he left his sounding anvil and came to school at Cazenovia. His excess of vigor sufficed him in paying his way as janitor. His first sermon was

at a school-house not far away, and, when his comrades "said nothing about it," his heart broke out in tears lest he might never be a preacher. His youthful bashfulness would hardly be believed by those who knew his fearless confidence in himself and his calling in later years. He did not graduate, but so close was his habit of study that he was early called to the educational work, and was for some years president of Dickinson College.

In 1844, he was prominent among those taking part in the debates that led to the separation of the Church. His years of greatest service were probably those spent in California. Going to San Francisco, in 1859, he was there in the days of the war. All public questions he discussed in his pulpit, at the street corners and in popular assemblies, and his influence on popular opinion became very great. The highest political offices were tendered him. He was president of the State Bible Society, and labored to build and perfect the University of the Pacific. In 1866 he returned and devoted himself in like manner to the interests of Syracuse University. He was chosen Bishop in 1872. In view of his being the one most recently elected, Bishop Ames, who dearly loved a pleasant word, introduced him at a reception as "the babe among the Bishops, with whose artless prattle you will now be entertained." Seeing that Bishop Peck was the oldest man ever chosen to the office, and was in stature almost double any of his colleagues, the pleasantry was overwhelming. A true and faithful servant of the Church was Bishop Peck. He spent weeks in the territory of the Conferences that he was to hold, and thus gained personal knowledge of men and places. Years of debility came on, against which he struggled hard, but, after eleven years of Episcopal service, he died at Syracuse in 1883.

The thirtieth in this goodly list is HENRY WHITE WARREN. He is from the Massachusetts line, and well represents the ancient

character. His birth was at Williamsburgh in 1831. Muscular force and mental energy were his born endowments. His early days were days of hard labor, and what he gained was fairly won by indomitable struggling. His record at Wilbraham was that of thousands at the same place, whose parents, "poor, but respectable," could give their children little but their example and their blessing. There is a brother, two years younger, now (1887)



REV. HENRY WHITE WARREN, D. D., LL. D.

president of Boston University, whose cast differs much from that of the Bishop, but whose intense zeal for learning, and whose early and conspicuous success in attaining it, must have served the elder one as an inspiration. After graduation at the Wesleyan University, in 1853, this elder brother entered upon teaching, but in two years began the pastoral work, never to leave it. He was marked as a star, rising to

be of the first magnitude. For this, nature had endowed him with a full wealth of physical and intellectual gifts. He is above the ordinary stature, strong and graceful, and developed by abundant manly exercise. His voice is firm, silvery and flexible. The art of amplifying a topic without diminishing its force he early mastered, and his preaching touched the entire range of his congregation. His personal bearing gave instant "assurance of a

man." He was soon sought to occupy the foremost pulpits, and was, in matter of appointment, above any perplexity except that of deciding upon his own choice. As early as 1864, when eloquent tongues were rife, he, being member of the Lower House, was chosen by the Senate of his native state to preach its annual sermon. He was twice pastor at Arch Street, Philadelphia, and was, when made Bishop, pastor at Spring Garden in that city. There are no appointments of higher grade. Astronomy is his favorite intellectual recreation. His lectures have been very popular, and his "Recreations," a Chautauqua text-book, found in 1886 a demand of twenty thousand copies. In physical exploit, mountain-climbing is his specialty, and for this his strength, steadiness and endurance fit him well. He has mastered the Matterhorn and Monte Rosa, and is quite at home in the Alps. In 1880 he was chosen Bishop directly from the pastorate. His first official residence was Atlanta. Since 1884 he has chosen his home, where he is rarely found, but felt whether found or not, under the bright sky of Denver, Colorado.

The Bishop next in succession, not traceable from the apostles by ecclesiastical lineage, but a follower of Wesley and thirty first in superintendency from him, is CYRUS DAVID FOSS. His father was a preacher in the New York Conference, and dying left four sons to the care and guidance of their noble mother. She could feel the pride of that Greek mother whose sons, after winning each the highest of the athletic prizes at the games, drew her in a chariot to make an offering at Juno's temple. Each of three sons was, at the Wesleyan University, the valedictorian of his class, thus bearing home to her its highest honors. Of the three, Cyrus alone was to have a long career, so as to fulfill the expectation so justly raised. He was born in 1834, at Kingston, N. Y., and graduated in 1854. For three years he taught in the Amenia Seminary. In 1857 he began the pastoral work at Chester. His

noble personal appearance was for him always a favorable introduction; he was such as would be "cheered before he had said a word." His utterance was full and clear, and his discourses, often impassioned, were strong in reason and rich in feeling, appreciable by the weak and weary. He filled in succession the most prominent places in New York, and was honored with his full share of attention from the public. His highest of compli-



BISHOP CYRUS D. FOSS, D. D., LL. D.

ments was a call, in 1875, to the presidency of the University from which he graduated. The ancient institution had a long list to choose from, and the unanimity and gladness with which he was selected proved his standing where of all places he was best known. Under his guidance, the University prospered, and his ways and words made a deep and lasting impression on all his students. After he had left the presi-

dency, he was recalled, in 1881, to be the orator at the semi-centennial of the University. After being member of three General Conferences, he was, in 1880, elected Bishop. He was made resident at Minneapolis. Since his severe sickness in 1882, he has not enjoyed the robust health of former years, but his presence with his conferences has never failed to be a comfort and a blessing. How such men come to their high place by the plain path of

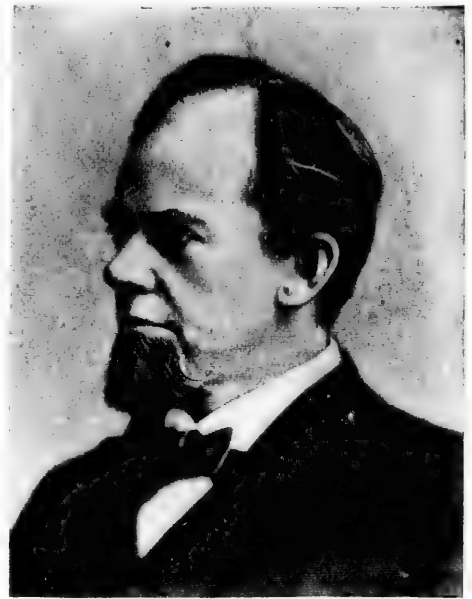
duty! Simply and nobly, making the most of their gifts, they find the Head of the Church in His own time and way, setting them where He would have them. They are bishops of Divine making.

The thirty-second Bishop is **JOHN FLETCHER HURST**. He represents that fair region so fertile in the early days of American Methodism, where Asbury rested from his long toil of journeys.

Ohio has furnished ten Bishops and Maryland hardly one. It was time that the pleasant state should have its representative. Bishop Hurst was born at Salem in 1834.

He was of ancient Methodist stock, and his uncle, John Hurst, a Baltimore merchant, was active and foremost in the (now) Mount Vernon Church for over fifty years. The Bishop had his preparatory education at Cambridge, in his own state, and naturally

took his collegiate course at Dickinson College, where he graduated in 1854. After two years of teaching, he went to Germany. Something in the framing of his mind, even in his very looks, indicates his affinity with German ideas. In that land of deep thought and wide research, he was at once at home. Their neology and rationalism were not what he went to seek, any more than their beer and tobacco. What he did seek he found in good



REV. JOHN F. HURST, D.D., LL. D.

their gifts, they
way, setting
up of Divine

ERST. He rep-
s of American
il of journeys.



D.D., LL. D.

where he grad-
e went to Ger-
even in his very
In that land of
at home. Their
o seek, any more
he found in good

supply and made it his own, their careful criticism and their fullness of attainment. At Halle and Heidelberg he reveled in their ancient stores as a bee in fields of clover. After two years of study, he entered the pastorate in the Newark Conference, and there continued for eight years. The Theological Institute, which we saw at Bremen, Germany, taking the name of the Martin Institute, was then opened, and he went over as its director. He was entirely at home with the German mind, and his sympathy with the difficulties of the time and of the land fitted him well to guide and strengthen the students in his care. During this period of five years' service he visited other lands.

In 1871, he was made professor of Historical Theology at Drew Seminary, and two years later he became president of the seminary. He had always been a working author, and his "History of Rationalism" was already a standard authority. Some ten other works show his industry, so that he is, of all our Bishops, the author most voluminous. He is not an orator. In the pulpit or on the platform he is a thinker and teacher, always calm and clear, always saying something worth hearing and worth retaining. If the Emersonian rule be good—that the first rule of eloquence is that the audience know "what the fellow is at"—then Bishop Hurst is always eloquent. Surely we need no other Bishop for the German work. At his election, in 1880, he fixed his residence at Des Moines, Iowa.

ERASTUS OTIS HAVEN was the thirty-third Bishop. He was cousin of Gilbert Haven, and was born in Boston, 1820. He had the family energy and versatility, and filled with honor a great variety of situations. In 1842, he graduated at the Wesleyan University, and went to teaching in the Amenia Seminary.

Teaching after graduation seems to be the rule with these men, and for the very intelligible reason that financial stress is then felt, and the graduate must put money in his purse. It is also

true that, while, as a churchly service, teaching is ranked inferior to the pastorate, it certainly completes the education, which, at leaving college, is at best incomplete. Bishop Haven was for a few years in the pastorate in New York. He then taught Latin in the University of Michigan, and English in Union College, N. Y.

In 1856, he began as editor of *Zion's Herald*, following Abel Stevens, and in no place of his life was his service more satisfactory. It was a period

when New England pulse was high, and his *Herald* was the leader of its sentiment. To be wise when excitement was so intense, and the land of the Puritans was rocking, was no easy thing, but the editor did it well and fairly. He was aided, and his *Herald* made spicy by the swift and restless pen of his cousin Gilbert. During his editorship he was overseer of Harvard University and a Senator of



REV. ERASTUS OTIS HAVEN, D. D., LL. D.

Massachusetts. He left the *Herald* and became chancellor of Michigan University in 1863. After six years of service, during which the University grew rapidly, he chose to take the same position in the Northwestern University at Evanston. From this place he was, after three years, taken to be secretary of the Board of Education of the Church. One more period of educational work awaited him at the Syracuse University. Here he

became chancellor in 1874. During his six years of occupancy of the place, its fine building was erected; its interests put in a safe and permanent condition, and the institution fairly set upon its great career. In 1880, its chancellor was chosen Bishop of his Church. He was now sixty years of age, and the labors of a life might seem to have told upon a frame always slender, but he rose at once to the level of his new duties. Of course he was no novice in Church work. In his Conferences he gave the utmost

care to the smallest duties of his office, and such had been his experience with men in his many relations with them that he found no trouble in his new work. His Episcopal service ended in a year by his death in Salem.

Our next Bishop, the thirty-fourth in the lengthening pro-



REV. WILLIAM X. NINDE, D. D., LL. D.

cession, is WILLIAM XAVIER NINDE. He is a native of central New York, born at Cortlandville in 1832. His father had been one of the most eloquent preachers of the region, and only his delicate health and extreme modesty kept him from the highest places. Few of those far more widely reputed than he as orators would so affect an audience.

So, born with an inheritance, there could be no doubt of the

anked inferior
on, which, at
ren was for a
ught Latin in
ollege, N. Y.
llowing Abel
e more satis-



chancellor of
ervice, during
ake the same
n. From this
retary of the
iod of educa-
ty. Here he

son's career after conversion and calling brought him to the work of the ministry. This son graduated at the Wesleyan University in 1855, and the next year he entered the pastorate in central New York. His preaching drew immediate attention. His voice was not ringing nor always clear, but it was sympathetic and agreeable, suiting well the cast of his thought and the temper of his heart. He seemed to take his hearers into his deepest confidence, and speak to them of things of the utmost concern to himself as well as to them. What all preachers try to do, and are glad to do, he seemed to do almost without an effort. Such a preacher and pastor was always in demand. In a few years, 1861, he was called to Cincinnati and there served in the most prominent Churches. After extensive travel in 1868-69, through Europe and the East, he became pastor at Detroit. In three years he went to Evanston as professor of Practical Theology in Garrett Biblical Institute. His uniform success as pastor proved that the secret of his calling he well understood. His department was really the professorship of religion, and in it he was at ease and in great efficiency. His first service in the General Conference was in 1876. Once more he went back to Detroit and served a term with his dear people at the Central Church, whose edifice is counted the finest in our Methodism. Meanwhile, the presidency of Garrett Biblical Institute became vacant and he was called to fill it. His service in his high place had but fairly begun when he was chosen to the higher one. There were other men more conspicuous, and perhaps in some ways more gifted, but his gentleness, his skill in pastoral guidance, his profound religious experience, were agreed to indicate him as a man who could do wide-lasting good to the Church. Perhaps his venerable appearance, prematurely white hair crowning a majestic form and florid face, had something to do with this. His home is at Topeka, Kansas.

JOHN M. WALDEN, the thirty-fifth Bishop, was elected May 15, 1884. He was elected for his business and executive ability. It is fitting that such talent command respect and have recognition. Mr. Wesley seemed to have in his own person the whole round of talents, but he was extraordinary. Usually to each man is given his own gift, and the diversity of gifts in the Board of Bishops is quite certain to be harmonized by the same spirit. Bishop Walden may be called the business man of the Board. He was



REV. JOHN M. WALDEN, D. D., LL. D.

born in Lebanon, O., in 1831 and reared upon a farm. He then became a clerk, and having some leisure formed a taste for reading. This wise and happy use of his time led to something more, led to all his success and gave him his position. In 1852 he graduated with honor at Farmer's College. He served for two years as tutor in the college

after graduation. He was already in the Church, but the stirring politics of the period had a charm and a duty for him, and he entered into public affairs with all his heart. The crisis and collision of the time centered in Kansas, the land being then open for settlement and the repeal of the Missouri Compromise leaving the young state to be Slave or Free, as its first settlers should decide. Walden went to Kansas, started a journal at Quindaro and threw

himself with all his might into the conflict. He served in the Legislature and was made superintendent of Public Instruction. For ten years he was in the pastorate of the Cincinnati Conference, during which he was especially active in Sunday-school work. He then, in 1868, became book agent at Cincinnati. It is a fact very complimentary to his talent for business that he was kept there fourteen years, and that the Concern grew rapidly under his care, his department of it being the local and manufacturing interest. As citizen of his town, he was able to do excellent service. He was member of the Board of Education and chairman of the Library Committee, where his labor for the public library was wise and effective. Cincinnati is the true headquarters of the Freedmen's Aid Society, being the home of Dr. Rust, its secretary, and Dr. Walden was an earnest helper of the society's enterprises. To this, and the favorable sentiment towards him thus created in the South, is his election to the Episcopacy in part due. His elevation occurred in 1882, and since that time all his gifts and graces have had full employment. His residence is now at Chattanooga, Tenn.

WILLARD F. MALLALIEU is the thirty-sixth Bishop. As his family name suggests, he came of that French lineage that has so honorable a record in the Protestant world. He was born in 1828, at Sutton, Mass., and is thus the most recent representative, both of his state and of his University in the Episcopacy. It cannot be said of any of the later Bishops that they have tasted the severities that were mingled for their predecessors. The times have changed, and the fare of Bishops, like that of other men, changes with them. Surely there is no virtue in hardship for its own sake, and he would be a strange man who chose it rather than straightforward labor. He would seem to have in his composition an ingredient of barbarism. Thus Bishop Mallalieu has no record of moving accidents or hair-breadth escapes. He has had

a life of simple hard work, and such he is still having. In 1857, at the mature age of twenty-five, he graduated at the Wesleyan University, the venerable mother of so many Bishops. If he was later than some in graduation (and early graduation is not the best), he was yet ready for immediate business, and he entered life as a strong man to run a race. Entering the pastorate in 1858, he remained in it, except a year as president of East Tennessee College, until he became Bishop. He seems to have had little



REV. WILLARD F. MALLALIEU, D. D.

care to be known beyond the Churches that he was immediately serving, yet all the time his good repute was growing like a tree in the silent lapse of time. Being a member of the General Conference in 1880, he gave in Cincinnati an address of eulogy on Bishop Gilbert Haven, who had recently deceased. It is needless to say

that this was of great merit. It marked the orator in the minds of his brethren as the man to receive the mantle of their departed brother and to continue Bishop Haven's special work among what he used to call "his shining ones," our colored people at the South. At the next General Conference in Philadelphia, he was elected, and his residence was fixed at New Orleans, the center of his "diocese." The mantle and spirit of his sky-gone brother are

with him, and his soul exults in efforts of begging and building, of tramp and travel, of training and shepherdizing, for the millions put chiefly in his charge. He stamps New England upon Texas.

CHARLES H. FOWLER is the thirty-seventh Bishop and he brings up now the rear of the episcopal train, and this is fitting, as he is the youngest man of all as well as the most recent Bishop. His rise has been the most rapid on the record. He is the only "foreigner" since Asbury, having been born in Burford, Canada, in 1837. At four he was brought with his family to Illinois and therefore has needed no other naturalization.

His early studies were had at Rock River Seminary, and in 1859 he graduated at Genesee College (now Syracuse University) with the highest honors of his class. His friends were then looking on him with both the greatest admiration and also with deep concern.

He was freighted with such talents and energies and dominated with an ambition so overmastering that, should his course be righteous, his eminence was sure; should it be wrong, the wreck must be disastrous. Happily their hopes and not their fears came true. On Christmas of his graduating year, being then student of law in Chicago, he was converted, and the whole course and aim of his life was changed. He then gave himself to the ministry and en-



REV. CHARLES HENRY FOWLER, D. D., LL. D.

tered Garrett Biblical Institute. At the end of his stay the war broke out and he at once organized a company of Evanston students, many of whom did good service, and thus he was captain, our only military Bishop. In the pastorate at Chicago he saw Centenary church built during his labors. The roaring, stirring city appreciated him and worked with him. After the great fire he was successful in raising funds at the East to restore its waste places, especially its churches and the Garrett Biblical Institute, the losses of which in Chicago had been very great. In 1872, he was made president of the Northwestern University, as indeed he had been invited to become in 1866, and in this office he remained four years. He was orator and preacher more than educator, and his calls to the pulpit and platform were simply incessant. In 1876, he was made editor of the *Advocate* at New York, the highest editorial position in his Church, and after four years he became missionary secretary. In whatever office he may be, his electric activity and his gift of overpowering appeal produce the same valuable results. The platform is his throne, and from it he rules the spirits of all within range of his voice. Since his election to the Episcopacy, in 1884, he has taken for his ground the Pacific slope, to guide and spread the Church in the vast realms where empires are rising and rounding into form, and he can make his life sublime.

Such are the Bishops of the M. E. Church in America, but to these should be added three names of men serving in Africa.

FRANCIS BURNS was a native of Albany, N. Y., born in 1809, a thorough African. At eight he was on account of the poverty of his parents put with a farmer, but he spent his winters and some part of his summers at school. The family that reared him was kindly and devout, the lady being herself a class leader. At fifteen he was converted, but, as he was bound to service in the family until twenty-one, he would not begin to preach sooner.

He hungered for learning, and, while in attendance at high school, he made his first efforts at preaching. It was refreshing to see his talent and character overcome at the outset all the disabilities of his color, and he rose to the very high esteem of all. Attention was called to him as a man available for the mission work then opening in Liberia, and after a course of appropriate study he went out, in 1833, with John Seys as missionary teacher. His ancestral land sorely needed him, but he had been for several generations homed in another climate, and it is doubtful if Africans from our northern states are better fitted than the whites for tropical residence. For two years Burns suffered severely from African fever. Recovering, he became abundant in labors. Besides teaching and preaching, he edited *Africa's Luminary*, and his executive ability was of



FRANCIS BURNS.
First Missionary Bishop for Africa.

great use, as oversight from America was remote and precious. He was a model of what is possible for his race. He was refined in his manner, fluent and often eloquent in speech, and clear in all his ideas, free from all servility, and a good, wholesome man. His African brethren counted him their representative, and when it was decided to have a Bishop for Africa their choice fell on him. He was ordained by Bishop Jones in 1858. The office of

t high school,
hing to see his
disabilities of
ll. Attention
mission work
ropriate study he
teacher. His

Bishop in a land of poverty and ignorance, "in partibus infidelium," with a million of heathen in his diocese and his own people unable to bear strong meat, was difficult and exacting. He had a thousand things to discourage him, but as many to cheer him onward. For about five years he was able to make full proof of his Episcopacy, spending and being spent for his people. His strength being then greatly wasted, he came to America to recruit, but recruiting was not to be his. He died in Baltimore in 1863. This

first Methodist African Bishop left a record as honorable as any of his white brethren.

JOHN W. ROBERTS was the second African Bishop. He was born in Petersburg, Va., in a free family, in 1812. He went to Liberia among its earliest settlers, being already a member of the Church. After several years of service in preaching, he came, in 1841, to this country to be ordained. Then followed twenty-three



REV. JOHN WRIGHT ROBERTS.
Second Missionary Bishop for Africa.

Africa.

and precious.
He was refined
nd clear in all
olesome man.
ive, and when
choice fell on
The office of

years of preaching, during which he attained preëminence among his brethren for ability, and also had their fullest brotherly regard. He is not to be confounded with J. J. Roberts, the foremost man whom Liberia has produced, who, though an ardent and faithful Christian, was a civilian, not an itinerant.

After the death of Bishop Burns, the Liberian Conference chose J. W. Roberts for his successor, and, coming to America, he was

ordained in New York in 1866. His needy land was greatly blessed in him during the nine years of his Episcopacy, and the Church grew large and flourishing, reaching out into the adjacent regions. He died at Monrovia, the capital, in 1875. There was no other of his race who seemed fitted to take the oversight of the Church in Liberia, and therefore his place was not filled. Bishop Gilbert Haven visited the country, but it was left for the present Bishop of Africa to take the Church there under his special care.

WILLIAM TAYLOR, the third Bishop of Africa, has already appeared in our Story. He was born, in 1821, in Rockbridge, Va., and became a preacher in 1842. A rude young Hercules, fit, like him of the Greek mythology, to endure twelve labors in many lands! He went upon circuits in his native region and, rude though he was of speech and little versed in the set phrase that is oftenest heard, he gave signs of power. He is a restless rover, born for pioneering, and soon we saw him shipping a church from Baltimore to California and hurrying to organize the first society in San Francisco. "California Taylor" was for years his name. In 1856, he came to the East and spent five years in evangelistic work on the Atlantic coast. His next labors were in Australia, Tasmania and Ceylon. We found thousands of Kaffirs and many whites brought to Christ by his preaching in South Africa. He was then seen in India and after that he was for years in South America. In every place he has been, as on the day he first entered the ministry, strong, sovereign, rude and fearless, knowing well his own mind and with no "if" or "fail" in all his vocabulary. The only thing indispensable to his comfort is a stone for his mighty head at night, and he carries a marble slab a foot square for this, sleeping his "marble sleep" soundly and waking in the morning to run anew his race. His view of mission work is the Pauline. He puts it in two general principles. The first is

the "Pioneer Principle." This means that men like Paul and Barnabas, at their own cost and risks, must go to open new fields. The Gospel pioneer must pay his own expenses and preach the Gospel free of charge. His second, the "Commercial Principle," applies when the field has been opened, the value of the Gospel



REV. WILLIAM TAYLOR, D. D.
Third Missionary Bishop for Africa.

made known, and the law of supply and demand put in operation. Wm. Taylor proposed to apply his Pauline method to the regions opening in the heart of Africa. The opportunity to utilize his zeal, loyalty and experience for the good of that far-away

flock in Liberia was not to be lost, and so, in 1884, he was made Bishop of Africa. It is not the usage of the Church to make a local or territorial Bishop. The Bishops are equally such in every place, and Wm. Taylor is Bishop in New York as much as in Loanda, only he chooses to have charge in Africa alone.

We have told of his entrance there. His last letter shows him delighted with his work. He is distributing men and women to his heart's content, and is hopeful of them and their work. About thirty went with him and twenty-six more have since gone. "I am weeping for joy as I get acquainted with these dear people." The authorities of the Congo Free State give them hearty welcome and free conveyance. The Bishop exults in his work and in his helpers. "We don't appear to have a weakling among us."

Bishop Taylor, on going to Africa, planted himself at once in the heart of his "diocese" in the Congo Free State. This occupies a wide region in central Africa, a region rich in all that tropic fertility can produce, and watered by the affluents of the Congo. The King of Belgium is Governor-general of this state, one hundred times as large as his own little Kingdom, and beyond all crushing between France and Germany. His agent is the famous and noble Henry M. Stanley.

The highway to this country is the Congo river. For one hundred and ten miles from the Atlantic, it is navigable by the largest vessels. Then comes a series of huge cascades, some of great beauty, reaching two hundred and thirty-five miles, and entirely shutting off navigation. At Stanley Pool the cascades end, and the broad, bright streams give seven thousand miles of sailing amid countries populous and productive. Bishop Taylor saw his instant need of a steamer and, in the winter of 1887, he made his appeal. It was to cost twenty thousand dollars, and he preferred that the money come in dollar contributions. Some would have more "stock," and one, Mrs. Henry Reed, of Tasmania, asked to

he was made
ch to make a
ually such in
rk as much as
alone.

letter shows
en and women
d their work.
ave since gone.
e dear people."
em hearty wel-
his work and
ing among us."
self at once in
e. This occu-
n all that tropic
of the Congo.
state, one hun-
and beyond all
nt is the famous

For one hun-
e by the largest
some of great
s, and entirely
eades end, and
miles of sailing
Taylor saw his
87, he made his
and he preferred
me would have
mania, asked to

give two thousand dollars. From the Bishop's friends all around the world the money came quickly to his hand. Many wished the steamer to be "William Taylor," but he gallantly and justly urged the name "Anne Taylor," from his noble wife, his peer (in her own place and manner) in all labor and sacrifice.

The steamer was built in England; it was, in April, 1887, shipped from Liverpool, in pieces weighing sixty-five pounds, to be carried on men's backs along that weary path up the cascades, which the stout Bishop has walked already more than once. The steamer is ninety feet long and sixteen feet wide, drawing two feet of water. Its machinery is so arranged as to admit of use in sawing wood in transit, and lumber when at rest. It has a hose worked by steam, which will shoot water with force enough to disperse canoes of "hostiles."

This is the first Methodist missionary steamer, except the "Allen Gardiner." This latter belongs to the London Missionary Society and bears the name of a missionary who died of starvation in Patagonia. It is employed among the missionary stations of Terra del Fuego and the adjacent shores. It is to convey the Gospel along seven thousand miles of streams in the land which will one day be second to no other. It will also tell of a toilsome, much-suffering woman, who for over forty years would never let her husband fail of a Gospel duty on her account, who in his long absences trained her four sons, strong and manly as their father, to pure and brave living, and to witness for the Master whom he was serving. Yet is not this steamer with heart of fire and frame of steel, steering fearlessly on an errand of grace along the strange and distant streams, a very type and embodiment of her dauntless husband?

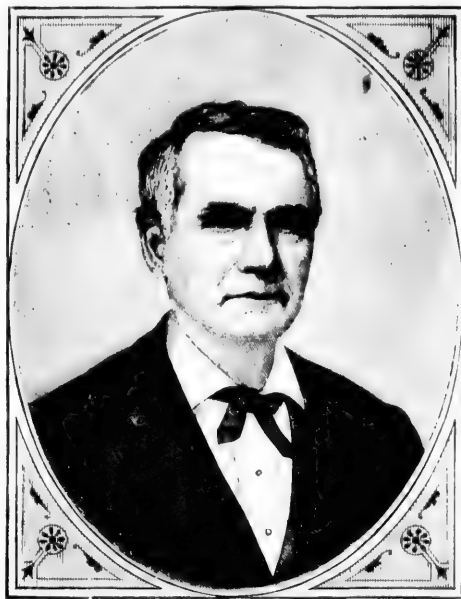
We have thus told the individual story of the Bishops of the M. E. Church. They are but men, and not the only men of power and repute. They are, however, representative men. Their personal

characters tell the liking and tendency of the Church that chooses them, and in them we see the turn and temper of the Church in their day. Study them and we know what manner of Methodism is now around and among us. There are men enough as worthy of the Episcopal office as any now filling it, but not more worthy, and these have been freely chosen. It is now three centuries since the French Academy was founded, with arm-chairs and members limited to forty. In the forty arm-chairs have sat the ablest scholars of France, yet a witty writer has shown how often the ablest man of the period has been sitting in "The forty-first arm-chair"—i. e., has been just outside of the Academy. That may be so of the Methodist Episcopacy.

In the Church South, since the separation, has been a line of able and effective Bishops. In

1844, Bishops Soule and

Andrew remained with the southern division. After two years, there were chosen William Capers (already described) and Robert Paine. The latter was born in Person Co., N. C., November 12, 1799. He did effective work in the Tennessee Conference, filling prominent appointments, until, in 1830, he was elected president of La Grange College, Ala.; and, until his election as Bishop, in 1846, he remained at the head of that institution. He had



ROBERT PAINE, D. D.

Fourth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

that chooses
the Church in
of Methodism
ugh as worthy
more worthy,
centuries since
and members



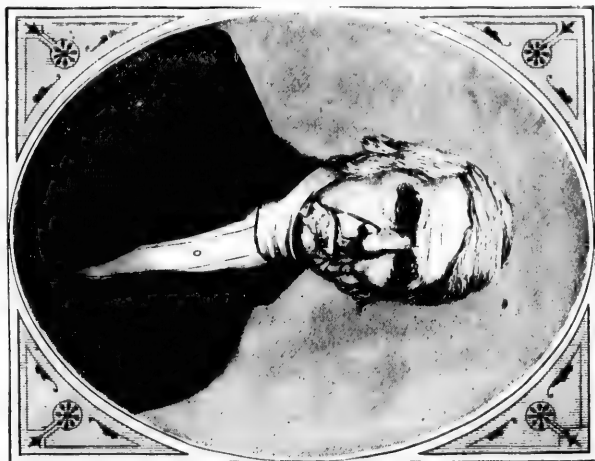
D.
Church South.

fter two years,
(ed) and Robert
November 12,
ference, filling
ected president
ion as Bishop,
tion. He had

REV. GEORGE FOSTER FEEGE, D. D.
Fourth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.



REV. JOHN EARLY, D. D.
Seventh Bishop of the M. E. Church South.



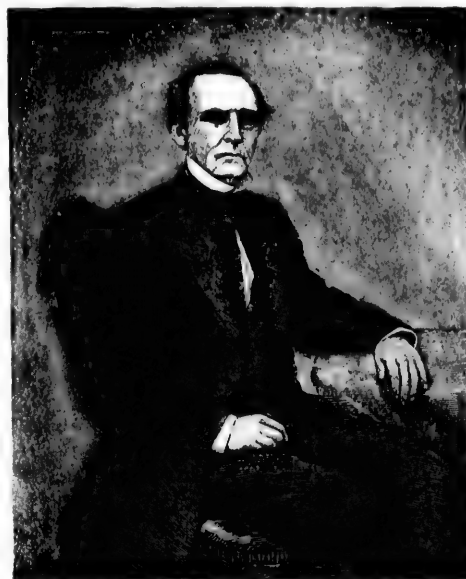


REV. WILLIAM WIGHTMAN, D. D., LL. D.
Tenth Bishop of the U. F. Church South.



REV. HIRAM HINDLE KAVANAUGH, D. D.
Seventh Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

been a member of five General Conferences and was active in giving form and movement to the Church South. He was chairman of the committee of nine, which reported the paper referring to the separation of the Church, and was a prominent member of the Louisville Convention in 1845. As Bishop, in supervising the general interests of the Church, he has traveled extensively. He wrote "The Life and Times of Bishop McKendree." In 1850,



REV. DAVID SETH DOGGETT, D. D.
Ninth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

Henry B. Bascom, of whose eloquence we have told, was added to the list. In four years thereafter, John Early, George F. Pierce and H. H. Kavanaugh were made Bishops. Of these good men, the first, born in Virginia, 1786, had a hero's record. His first ministerial labors were among Jefferson's slaves. He was chief founder of Randolph Macon College. At one camp-meeting of his conducting, one thousand were

converted. In 1846 he was book agent. As Bishop he served twelve years, and even then continued useful to his death in 1873. George F. Pierce, son of Lovick, born, 1811, in Georgia, was one of the ablest men of his time. He was at first a lawyer, but in 1831 was received into the Georgia Conference. In 1848, he became president of Emory College, and remained its president until his election as Bishop in 1854. He was prominent in

REV. HUBERT HINDLE KAVANAUGH, D. D.
Ninth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

REV. WILLIAM WIGHTMAN, D. D., LL. D.
Tenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

the debate in the case of Bishop Andrew, a member of the Louisville Convention and of the General Conferences of the Church South of 1846, 1850 and 1854. He has published a number of sermons and is the author of "Incidents of Western Travel." He became a preacher of great power, and was very prominent in the new Church. H. H. Kavanaugh, born in Kentucky, 1802, was of Irish descent. His mother was the daughter of Dr. Thomas Hinde. When a boy he was a printer's apprentice. He was converted at sixteen. He entered the Conference in 1823, and served in the highest places in his Church for nearly sixty years. He was elected Bishop at the General Conference held in Columbus, in 1854, and ranks deservedly high both as a preacher and as an administrator. In 1866, David S. Doggett was made Bishop. He was born in Virginia,



REV. ENOCH M. MARVIN, D. D.

Eleventh Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

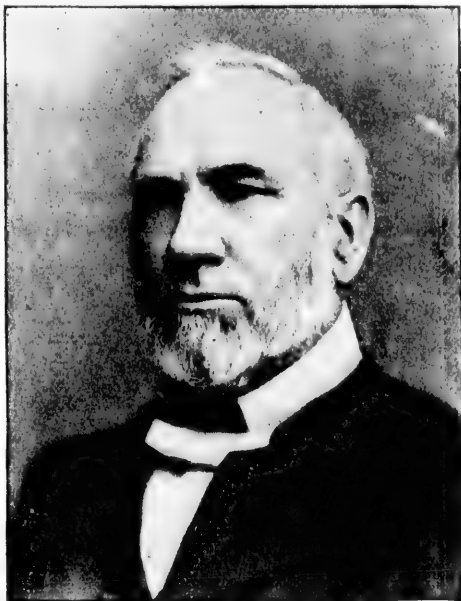
1810, and entered Conference from the University of Virginia in 1829. After a career of power as a preacher, he became professor in Randolph Macon College. He was an able preacher and an acute theologian. He published several sermons and an address on "The Rise of Methodism in North Carolina." He died in 1880.

William M. Wightman, chosen Bishop the same year, was born in Charleston, S. C., 1810, and entered the ministry on his

twentieth birthday. His parents in England had known Wesley, and been led in class by Adam Clarke. In 1840, he became, for fourteen years, editor of the *Southern Advocate*, and then served as president of Spofford College and chancellor of the Southern University.

At the same time, Enoch M. Marvin was made Bishop. He was born in Missouri, 1823, and in 1841 joined the Missouri Conference. He was a ready writer, and proved a most earnest and successful Bishop. He died, just after a tour round the world, in 1877. All these good men "died in the faith."

HOLLAND N. McTYEIRE. This Bishop was not a preacher at the time of the separation, and he is the senior Bishop of his Church. How in Church as well as state the generations "haste stormfully" across the scene! He was born in Barn-



REV. HOLLAND N. McTYEIRE, D. D.
Twelfth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

well Co., S. C., in 1824, and at twenty graduated in Randolph Macon College. In 1845, he entered the Virginia Conference, where he was early recognized as one whom the Church would call to its high places. He served in the pastorate at Mobile, Columbus and New Orleans. His gift of clear and original thinking brought him to the task of editorship, and, in 1854, he was put in charge of the New Orleans *Christian Advocate*. In

of the Louis-
f the Church
a number of
ern Travel."
y prominent
ucky, 1802.
hter of Dr.



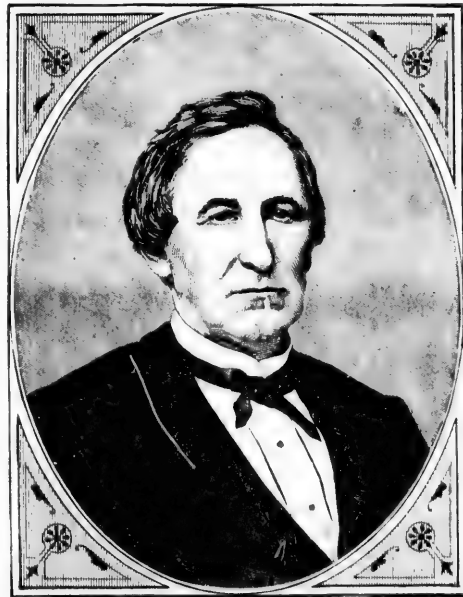
D. D.
Arch South.

Virginia in
me professor
cher and an
d an address
lied in 1880.
e year, was
istry on his

1858, he was chosen to like duties at Nashville, and these he discharged during the most trying times of the war. He became Bishop in 1866. The task set before his Church was then a severe one. To gather the scattered people and repair the broken shrines after years of wasting might require toil, but to manage wisely in the delicate offices of moral and churchly reconstruction, while passions and prejudices were yet uncalmed, was peculiarly difficult. Election to the General Superintendency at such a time was from his brethren the highest proof of their confidence. He has shown them that they were not mistaken. Besides his gifts as preacher and man of letters, he has a clear and active grasp of ecclesiastical law and parliamentary usage, so that as Bishop and chairman of deliberative bodies he is perfectly master of his duties. In 1873, when Mr. Vanderbilt founded his university, he gave the entire charge of his donation to Bishop McTyeire, and this charge Bishop McTyeire accepted and still retains. He is also at the head of the School of Theology, and his residence is at Nashville. He has moved a busy pen. Among his early works are, "Manual of Discipline," "Duties of Masters," and a valuable history of the M. E. Church, both before and after the separation. He is, as is perfectly fitting, the most influential man in his Church, and years of active and widening usefulness may be reasonably anticipated on his part.

JOHN CHRISTIAN KEENER is, in the Episcopacy of the Church South, next in seniority to Bishop McTyeire. He was born at Baltimore in 1819. At nine, his father took him to Wilbraham, and kept him ten years under the goodly shadow of Wilbur Fisk. During this time he graduated at the Wesleyan University in its first regular class of 1835. His conversion was in Baltimore in 1838. He was then prosperous in business as a wholesale druggist, but, engaging as superintendent of a Sunday-school, he soon felt a divine call to preach. Closing up all secular pursuits, he

went to Alabama, got license to preach and, in 1843, entered the Alabama Conference. Five years later, he was sent to New Orleans, then reckoned a post not only of difficulty but of actual danger. For twenty years he was in service there, being a part of the time Presiding Elder of the New Orleans district. In 1861, he was made superintendent of chaplains for the Confederate armies west of the Mississippi. He was editor of the New



REV. JOHN CHRISTIAN KEENER, D. D.

Thirteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

Orleans *Advocate* from 1866, and, in 1870, he was chosen Bishop, being then sixty-one. His pen had not been idle. His best-known work, "The Post Oak Circuit," is a lively effort of humor, in which character is drawn with a skill equal to that of the highest masters. Bishop Keener has taken a deep interest in the Mexican mission of his Church, which he founded in 1873, and which he has many times visited. It is his good fortune to have three sons in the ministry, and now, in the fullness of his years, with faculties unailing, to have "that which should accompany old age, as honor, love, obedience, troops of friends."

JOHN C. GRANBERY was born in Norfolk, Va., 1829. From his taste, style and bearing, he may be called the scholar among the southern Bishops. After enjoying a thorough collegiate education, he entered the Virginia Conference, where he spent some



From Harper's Weekly
 REV. LINUS PARKER, D. D.
Fifteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

years in the pastoral work. On the founding of the Vanderbilt University, he entered as professor, and served ten years in Literary and Theological departments. In 1882 he was chosen Bishop. His chaste and classic style of address, both in preaching and in all utterance, commands hearing and admiration, while his fine taste and temper make him specially dear to his brethren.

ALPHEUS WILSON was born at Baltimore in 1834. His

father, Norval Wilson, was an eminent Methodist preacher, and his son was called to follow his father's career. After graduation from college, he found his health failing under the labors of his early ministry. For a few years he was engaged in the legal profession, but, his health being finally restored, he resumed the ministry in the Baltimore Conference. After filling several important stations, he was made secretary of the Board of Missions. In this office his views proved so wide, his judgment so accurate and clear, and his energies and temper so fitting to a wide



From Harper's Weekly.
 REV. ROBERT K. HARGROVE.
Seventeenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

ral work. On
he Vanderbilt
entered as pro-
d ten years in
heological de-
1882 he was
His chaste and
address, both
d in all utter-
s hearing and
le his fine taste
e him specially
aren.

ELSON was born
in 1834. His
preacher, and
fter graduation



From Harper's Weekly.
HARGROVE.
f. E. Church South.



From Harper's Weekly.
REV. JOHN C. GRANBERY.
Sixteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

really belonged. He was born, in 1829, in Oneida Co., central New York. Going, at sixteen, to New Orleans, in the ardor of youthful enterprise, he was there brought to Christ and entered at once upon the work of the Church. In 1849 he became a member of the Louisiana Conference. In all the trying times before, during and after the war, he was steadily and faithfully fulfilling his ministerial call and as pastor and Presiding Elder he made a goodly record. He became in 1870 editor of the *N. O. Christian Advocate*.

In 1878, being for the fourth

sphere of action, that his brethren agreed that he was of genuine "Bishop timber." In 1882 he became Bishop, and, though of rather delicate health, he has been an active and successful worker. In 1886 he went to China on an official visit.

The REV. LINTS PARKER, D. D., fifteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South, was one of the able men whom the North contributed to the service of the South. To the South he

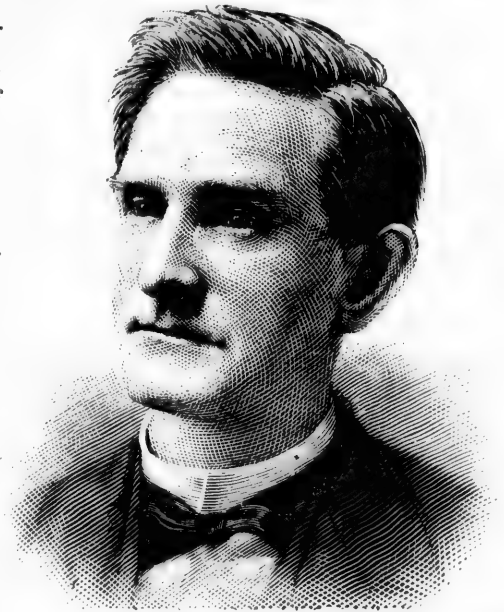


From Harper's Weekly.
REV. ALPHEUS W. WILSON.
Fourteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

time member of the General Conference, he was made Bishop. His residence was at New Orleans. He did seven years' faithful service as Bishop. In the spring of 1883 his brain yielded to the intense exertion of years, and he died of congestion.

In the city of his home, where he had so long been known in quiet and in stormy times, he was mourned by all, and his much-loved Church felt her bereavement.

ROBERT K. HARGROVE was born in Alabama, in 1829, of a Methodist family, ancient as antiquity is counted in this country. After collegiate graduation, he spent some years in the higher grade of classical teaching. From teaching he entered the pastorate, in which he filled the usual variety of places. In 1882, he became Bishop, visiting Colorado this year in his



From Harper's Weekly.

REV. WILLIAM WALLACE DUNCAN.
Eighteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

official capacity and gratifying all by his eloquence as preacher and his ease and dignity as a presiding officer.

WILLIAM WALLACE DUNCAN was born in 1839, at Randolph Macon College, his father being there a professor. His father becoming one of the faculty of Wofford College, S. C., the son graduated there in its first class in 1858. Wallace then entered the Virginia Conference, leaving, however, the pastorate for a

chaplaincy in the war. In 1875, he was called to the chair of Moral Science in the college from which he graduated and took his place as leader of his Church in South Carolina. He is not only of a high and full education, but of great power as a speaker, both in the pulpit and on the platform. His brother James was president at Randolph Macon, and the family have a valuable social and churchly record. Being the first chosen as Bishop this

year (1886), he may be counted as bearing with him the great regard of his brethren and the hope of his people.

C. B. GALLOWAY, the youngest of southern Methodist Bishops, was born in Mississippi in 1839, and entered his office at thirty-seven. In 1868, he graduated at the University of Mississippi and

began the work of

the ministry in that state. His rise has been rapid, and yet not more rapid than the unfolding of his abilities. All interests of man have his attention, and as a temperance worker he has been true and effective. For four years he has been editor of the *New Orleans Advocate*. He now enters upon his Episcopal career in the flush of his strength, and with the hopes and prayers of all his people.



REV. C. B. GALLOWAY.

Nineteenth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

From Harper's Weekly.

made Bishop.
years' faithful
n yielded to
tion.

en known in
nd his much-

from Harper's Weekly.
NCAN.

rch South.

s preacher and

Randolph Ma-

His father be-

. C., the son

then entered

astorate for a

EUGENE R. HENDRIX was born, in 1847, at Fayette, Mo., where he had his early training at Central College, of which he was president at his late election to the Episcopacy. In 1867, he graduated at the Wesleyan University, and in 1869 at the Theological Seminary, New York, and then entered the Missouri Conference. His appointments have been of the highest grade, and he has been around the world in his study of the ways of men and the welfare of his Church. He has given his observations in a valuable and entertaining volume. Like his colleagues chosen this year, he has a fine personal appearance and the gift of a glowing eloquence, such as has so often distinguished preachers and statesmen of the sunny South.

JOSEPH S. KEY is the fourth of the Bishops this year chosen in the Church

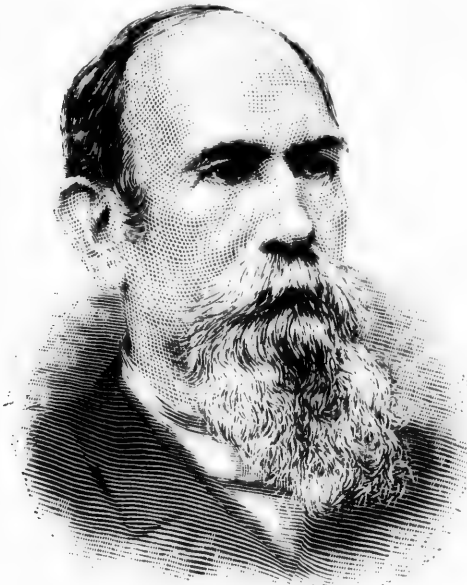
South. He is a Methodist by inheritance, his father and his grandfather having been preachers, and his line runs back to the old days of Methodist heroisms in Georgia. He was born at La Grange in that state in 1829. In 1848, he graduated at Emory College, and he has spent his ministerial life in the south of that state. He was a member of the Ecumenical Conference in London, 1881, as a representative of his Church in the great family



from Harper's Weekly
REV. EUGENE R. HENDRIX.
Twentieth Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

Mo., where
e was presi-
7, he gradu-
Theological
Conference.
he has been
he welfare of

of Methodism. At the Centennial Conference at Baltimore, 1884,
he was also a delegate. He alone enters the office of Bishop
from unbroken service in the pastorate.



From Harper's Weekly

REV. JOSEPH S. KEY.

Twenty-first Bishop of the M. E. Church South.

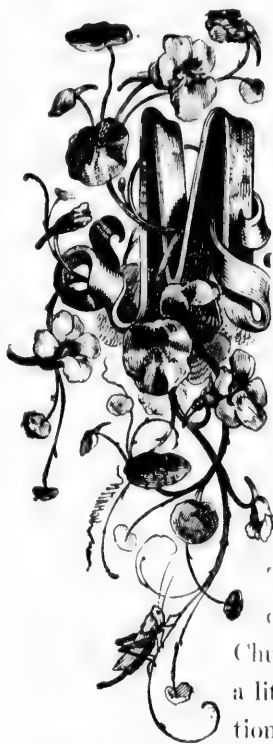
in Harper's Weekly

ch South.

father and his
as back to the
s born at La
ed at Emory
south of that
rence in Lon-
e great family

CHAPTER XXX.

Recent Evangelists.



METHODISM is itself an evangelism, and the early Methodist preachers were evangelists more than anything else. The term evangelist is used in the New Testament to indicate a class of laborers well known and valued in the constitution of the early Church. They are shown to be a certain class of Christian teachers who were not fixed to any particular spot, but who traveled either independently or under the direction of one of the apostles for the purpose of propagating the Gospel. The absence of any detailed account of the organization and working of the early Church, at least of the first century, leaves us a little uncertain as to their functions and position. Their title, "publishers of the Glad Tidings," might belong to all the Christian ministry, yet "evangelists" are named next after "apostles and prophets" and before "pastors and teachers." If, then, apostles were those who immediately represented Christ, and prophets were those who spoke, under the special impulse of the Holy Ghost, words mighty to affect men's hearts and consciences, then it would follow that the evangelists were in authority below the apostles and in power below the prophets. Yet their office was higher and more conspicuous than

that of the pastors who watched over a Church that had been founded, or of the teachers who carried on the work of systematic instruction. They were apparently sent forth by the apostles, as they themselves had been sent forth by their Master, as missionary preachers of the Gospel preparing the way, calling congregations and founding Churches to which pastors and teachers should afterwards minister. The evangelist was then a preacher with no pastoral superintendence, and Philip "the evangelist" was the earliest of his order. A "Bishop" or pastor might be partly employed in this work, and so Timothy is told to "do the work of an evangelist," as occasion and opening might make it his duty. In later times the name was given to the reader of the Gospel for the day. It is always used of the authors of the Four Gospels. In the middle ages these evangelists were called, in England, Gospellers, and they have remained in the Church of Rome as Preaching Friars.

One can easily see that the work of an evangelist was wholly that of Whitefield and more than half that of Wesley. The former went from place to place not to organize, but to cry aloud; and his career was wonderful. Wesley did the same, going free among the dead and dark of the English parishes, as the apostles and evangelists had gone to the utter heathen. Preaching was fully three-fourths of this work, but as soon as he had gained a handful of converted or even awakened hearers he formed them into a class. The classes became a society, the societies were soon a circuit, the circuits were bunched into a district, and then there was a Conference. The organization was so complete that his own death gave it no shock. He was like a sea-captain at whose going overboard a mate can manage the well-trained crew.

It was when the system of stations began to prevail that the evangelist and the pastor began to separate and to become two men. The modern evangelist is really the product of Methodism, a development of the original Methodist preacher. He first ap-

peared in these earnest Churches as the Baptist and the Presbyterian, which have no itinerancy. He went from place to place putting forth these revival efforts which the preachers were habitually putting forth on their circuits, and when his peculiar gifts had done their work he passed on and left the pastor to train and



LORENZO DOW.

organize the souls whom he had brought to Christ. Thus Knapp and Swan and Moody were illustrations of the happy influence of the Methodist modes and spirit affecting the ways of other Churches, for, as we have said, not half of Methodism is in Methodist Churches.

the Presbyter-
place to place
s were habit-
peculiar gifts
to train and

The first Methodist evangelist in this country, as above defined, was Lorenzo Dow. Mention has already been made of him. He was so eccentric as to be counted almost insane, yet there was in his madness always this method—a burning zeal to bring men to salvation. He was born in 1777, at Coventry, Conn. He began preaching at eighteen, and the next year, feeling that he had a special call to go to Ireland, he made a canoe and in it went down the Connecticut and took ship for foreign lands. In England and Ireland he drew great attention; was the first, as we saw, to introduce the American usage of the camp-meeting. For thus leaving his work he was dropped from the roll of the Conference, and as his eccentricities continued he was never re-admitted. He devoted himself all the same to the work of the Gospel. Many were converted under his ministry. He never waited to be called; he went to find the hardest places and labored in them until good results appeared. His energy was immense; he would ride fifty miles and preach five times in a single day. For years he preached in the South wherever he could gather the planters and their slaves to listen. The itinerants would then gather up and organize his converts. In 1834, then a strange, venerable man with long, white beard, he came to Washington to warn the government against the plans of the Church of Rome and there he suddenly died.

Prominent among evangelists has been Dwight L. Moody. He is a product of the Methodist movement and his Congregational Church relation has been the happier as illustrating the value of the Methodistic modes of working. He was born at Northfield, Mass., in 1837. The loss of his father at four early inspired him with a desire to be good for the sake of his mother. He was Unitarian by training, and in early life was a healthful, joyous, fun-loving lad to whom life was wonderfully good for its own sake. Going into business in Boston, he was there converted at seventeen. In

Thus Knapp
ppy influence
ays of other
m is in Meth-

1856, he went to Chicago as salesman of boots and shoes. His early efforts for others were quickened by the efforts of his own Sabbath-school teacher at Boston for the welfare of Moody's own soul. This good man had, with tears standing in his eyes, urged Moody to seek pardon and life in Christ. "Why should this man weep for me?" wondered Moody, and as the case grew clear to



D. L. MOODY.

him he saw behind the teacher the tears and love of the Saviour, with whose mind the teacher was in sympathy. Moody himself now entered into that sympathy. He began by bringing to Sabbath-school a class of fifteen neglected newsboys, and soon he took the work of a Sunday-school in a deserted saloon in the vilest part of Chicago. He was annoyed, and so was his

shoes. His
of his own
Moody's own
eyes, urged
uld this man
rew clear to

handful of scholars, by rude lads, sons of low Catholics in the neighborhood. Going directly to the Romish Bishop, he explained to him the nature of his enterprise and set before him the needs of the half-heathen region. Something in Moody's manner and words was used to touch the Bishop's lonely heart. The conversation was long and tender, and he thanked Moody for calling and wished an ample blessing on his enterprise. At parting, Moody proposed prayers together. The Bishop begged to be excused from vocal, extempore utterance, as it was not his usage; but he politely knelt while Moody prayed fervently for him and the people committed to his care. The Bishop took leave of his guest with tears and the Sunday-school was annoyed no more. Mr. Moody thus began his work at the bottom and the poor heard him gladly. Soon he gave up his shoe business and devoted his whole time to his evangelistic efforts. Men came to his help. It is understood that for years a merchant of Chicago bore the chief part of his personal expenses, and thus Moody saw his way clear to become a clergyman after the Congregational order. In 1876, a beautiful church edifice costing one hundred thousand dollars was finished for him in Chicago.

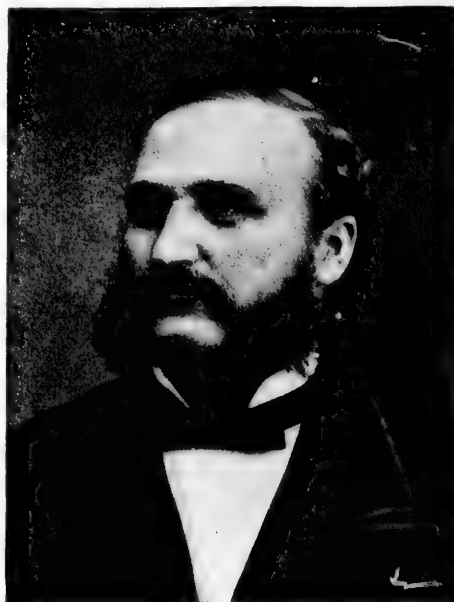
of the Sav-
thy. Moody
an by bring-
ewsboys, and
serted saloon
nd so was his

About this time he became acquainted with Ira D. Sankey, a young business man, son of a Methodist banker in Newcastle, Pa. This man had been early converted and from his very boyhood had been a leader in sacred song. No artist had ever trained him in Italian trills, but his voice was clear and penetrating as that of a cornet, and behind his voice was a great, warm, Christian heart. A strong, flush, bright-faced man, in sympathy with his fellow-men in their joys and sorrows, such a man as it was refreshing to the weary, the sad and the wrong to look upon and listen to. The two seemed made for allies to each other, and the plain words of Moody and the plain songs of Sankey were the vehicle of gracious influence to the souls of thousands. After extensive services

in Chicago, they went, in 1873, to Europe. In the very centers of modern Christianity their success proved that the work of an evangelist is to-day a lawful need of the Church, and that they were called to it by the Holy Ghost. In Dublin, their meetings were largely attended by those least affected by regular ministrations of the Word, and two thousand were brought to Christ.

In London, the capital city of the world, the center of its sin and sorrow as well as of its wealth and power, its piety and truth, the two evangelists held meetings four months. During this time two hundred and fifty thousand people attended their meetings and seven thousand were converted. "They shall fear the Lord from the West." It was strange, but not unexampled, that fresh thought and energy should enter the old home, the heart of the modern world. Seven thousand are few among four millions in that great human hive, but of themselves they are many, and the Churches were quickened and refreshed.

In Edinburgh, the cautious, well-doctrinated Scotch heard gladly the fresh and stirring appeal, and three thousand from the Moody meetings joined the various Churches. The evangelists visited Oxford, the birthplace of the Methodist movement near a century and a half before. The effect there was about the same as else-



REV. IRA D. SANKEY.

where. "Townsmen and gownsmen" (i. e., students) attended with the greatest interest and many were converted. The students thus brought to Christ are now represented among the missionaries in China and elsewhere, and are Christians in many callings through the wide British dominions.

In Sheffield and other English towns, equal attention was drawn to the Gospel, and thousands were brought to accept it. How many were converted during these two years of labor abroad is neither possible nor important to say, but all pastors of the places visited found that the grace that came with the evangelists did not go with them. The revival was genuine and its fruit remained.

On Moody's return to Chicago, a Tabernacle holding ten thousand was built, and in this continuous services were held for three months, and forty-eight hundred were converted. After a like manner meetings have been held in many other of our large cities. At present, Mr. Moody is giving his time to schools that he has built in his early home at Northfield. He has turned three hundred acres of barren land into smiling fields, and here he has a Christian school for girls, and at Mt. Hermon, four miles away, he has another for boys. These are meant for the education of those who can do little for themselves, and are largely charitable. They are flourishing and indicate the turn of his mind towards the future and permanent welfare of his race as well as to immediate evangelization.

In the vacation of his Northfield school, Moody gathers to its vacant rooms a large attendance for Bible study. He himself presides, but he has for helpers men of genius and learning in the Scriptures. Most of those in the gathering are evangelists like himself, weary in mind and body, from labors in various parts of the land, "faint, yet pursuing." Sankey and other singers likewise attend. Fifteen hundred are sometimes present and three daily

sessions are held. Questions are freely asked and the Word of God is opened for the help and use of these recruiting evangelists and all who come to the Bible Summer School, some of whom are from foreign lands, nor could it be told, except from the register, to what denominations they severally belong.

Of late years, some women have been raised up, whose gifts have done good service in the work of evangelists. We have told of the good women who aided by prayer and counsel and sacrifice the early Methodist movement. These were such as Lady Huntingdon, Lady Maxwell, Mrs. Fletcher and Mrs. Murray, Mrs. Rogers and the Dairyman's Daughter. It grew steadily in Wesley's mind that there was room in the Church for womanly appeal and discourse, and he looked forward to a day when it would be called out. Toward the end of his life he wrote: "It has long passed for a maxim with many that women are only to be seen and not heard, and, accordingly, many are brought up in such a manner, as if they were only designed for playthings. But is this doing honor to the sex, or is it a real kindness to them? No; it is the deepest unkindness. It is horrid cruelty. It is mere Turkish barbarity, and I know not how any woman of sense can submit to it." Dr. Adam Clarke had said: "A cock reproved Peter and an ass reproved Balaam, and why may not a woman reprove sin?" The time was dawning when woman's gift of speech was to be put to service beyond even such as the more private social meetings afforded.

The first Methodist woman licensed to preach, and thus for full evangelistic service, was Mrs. Maggie Van Cott. She was born in New York in 1830. Her training was strictly Episcopalian. The loss of a daughter and the failure of her husband's health, which threw upon her the care of his business and estate, burdened her soul with labor and sorrow. She had in childhood lived within hearing of a Methodist Church and had felt drawn by its singing

and prayers, but had never been present at one of the meetings. Turning now with all her heart to her Heavenly Father for help and guidance, she began to attend a Methodist prayer-meeting. Being gifted as a singer, she was invited to come to the class meeting, being assured that she need not speak unless she chose. She found her tongue and gave testimony for the grace that was helping her, and soon she joined the Church. Her first efforts were at the Five Points. In this sink and lowest drainage of the crime and misery of the city, good women had been working since 1848 to change a pest-house of sin into a school of virtue,

and to do this every form of Christian effort was utilized. Here Mrs. Van Cott aided the work to the utmost of her power. For twenty months she did earnest service among the colored people of Baxter street.



MRS. MAGGIE VAN COTT.

In 1866, being on a visit at Durham, N. Y., she made by invitation what might be called her first public address in a school-house. She followed with others, and many conversions seemed to give her efforts the divine endorsement. Under growing conviction she, in 1868, obtained, not without some opposition arising, not from her character, but from the novelty of the case, at Springfield, Mass., a local preacher's license, and henceforth gave herself wholly to evangelistic work. In her first year of itinerancy, she numbered five hundred souls brought to Christ and gathered into the various Churches.

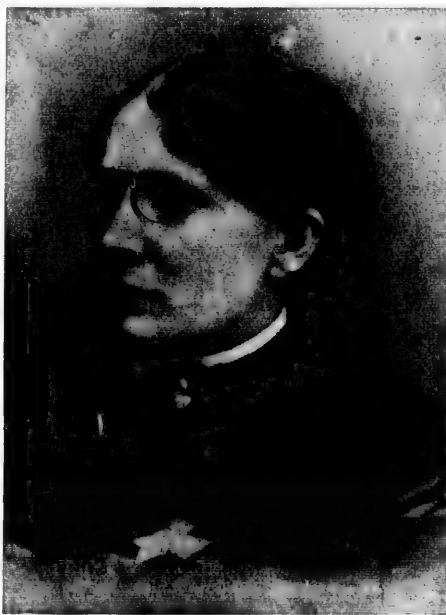
In about twenty years her record has been the same. She has the stature and bearing of a queen, and a voice of strength and

sweetness, such personal gifts as impress and control an audience, and her word has always been attended with excellency of power. She has held meetings, of which her variety is great, in nearly every state in the Union.

Encouraged by her example, other women have been free to use their gifts and some have even excelled her in power of address. The woman's movement in temperance during its twelve years of activity has brought into

notice many able speakers. Some of these have come to have a national and even a European fame.

Of them all, Miss Frances Willard is foremost. She is a native of Rochester, N. Y., but was reared in Wisconsin. Her education proceeded in the Woman's College of the Northwestern University. On the death of a sister at nineteen, she wrote "Nineteen Beautiful Years," the most charming biography in the



MISS FRANCES E. WILLARD.

English language. She was, after graduation, engaged in teaching at various places, and, after serving as secretary of the association that built Heck Hall for the School of Theology, at Evanston, she spent two and a half years abroad. In 1871, she became president of the college where she graduated, and after two years was called to the Department of Æsthetics in the University. At this time the crusade of women against whisky began, and she quickly

came to the front of it. In 1876, the women most prominent in the temperance work met at Chautauqua and formed a National Union for the better promotion of their cause. Miss Willard was made president, and has now served ten energetic and effective years. Since the death of Wendell Phillips, she is the finest orator in America, and her voice has been the most effectual of all voices in bringing to its present forwardness this one intense concern of the nation and century. As representative of the Methodist Episcopal Church, she has good backing. The Rules of the Church are abreast of the time. No member can sign a petition for license or own premises where liquor is sold, and it is only by a dodge that the Methodist mayor of Brooklyn makes his peculiar record. The M. E. Church and all Methodist Churches are sound on temperance and Miss Willard is the product of generations of sentiment and practice.

Other evangelists have risen up within the proper bounds of Methodism, laboring in given places a longer or shorter time, as the local pastors may desire.

One of these, perhaps the most truly representative man of the class, is Thomas Harrison. He is a native of Boston, born in 1854. He was converted in the end of 1869, just in time to enter 1870 in newness of life. He began the study for the ministry, at first in the Wilbraham Academy and then at Talmage's "Lay College" in Brooklyn.

During the December vacation of this college he went home, and also to Long Plain, where a friend was conducting a revival. They together sought and found such power from on high as filled the hearts and moved the tongues of those early preachers, of whom our Story told nearer its beginning. This power was straightway felt by the congregation, and a month of effectual, fervent revival followed.

The next fall he engaged in evangelistic work in Baltimore. In

the various Churches he spent most of the winter. What the result may have been it is not easy to say, but it is clear that more than one thousand were brought to Christ. The attention of the Church was now fully directed upon him. He was still so young as to be called by the unhappy title, "The Boy Preacher," but the silly epithet in time wore away.

Of slight personal figure, he was active, nervous and graceful, with much in him that attracts and conciliates, sometimes called personal magnetism. His eyesight is keen; no movement in any part of a great congregation escapes him. His wit is ready; he knows, as if by instinct, how to answer a question, how to encourage a movement and how to quell a disorder. Yet he is immensely inferior to what he is doing. No wit, or wisdom, or speech of his is equal to what is done in his presence. He is himself but a means, an instrument. Yet he is an effective instrument.

In Baltimore, only three per cent of the converts fell away, and the flame of revival burned steady and unflickering long after he had left the city. While he was at Madison square, Mr. Moody was holding meetings not far away. The meetings of both were crowded.

The styles of the two evangelists differed enough to draw somewhat different classes, but with their diversity of gifts there was the same spirit, and it was happy for the town that had such double visitation. He passed on to assist the pastors in the District of Columbia. At Foundry Church the crowds could by no means get admittance, and in forty evenings perhaps four hundred were awakened and more than half joined that Church as converts. In Georgetown, and again in Washington, at the Hamline Church, the same power and the same style of result were witnessed. The evangelist was the honored vehicle chosen of God to affect hearts long in contact with Christianity, but never as yet yielding to its claims. In all, probably one thousand souls were awakened in the

District. After labors almost unbroken in smaller towns and in camp-meetings from Martha's Vineyard, Mass., to Loveland, near Cincinnati, Harrison went to Philadelphia. Here at Wharton Street Church over one thousand were converted. There was a large proportion of mature men among these converts, and the best classes of the city were moved. At times three to five hundred men would be at the door unable to enter, and one day the house was given up to an all-day service and thronged from ten A. M. to ten P. M. This (1879) was followed by a meeting at Talmage's Tabernacle in Brooklyn. At the first day's service one hundred rose for prayers, and afterwards four hundred and sixteen joined the Church in one day, and on another day two hundred and forty. Many united elsewhere, so that it is not easy to say how many were actually subjects of grace during the seven weeks of the meeting.

In the fall of 1880, he held a meeting at Scott Methodist Episcopal Church, Philadelphia, under trying circumstances. It was the year of the presidential election, and a Republican "Wigwam" was a block and a half from the church. And there were torch-light processions and brass bands and the tumult of the people. The meeting prospered. It was once held in the Wigwam with three thousand present, and in a few weeks three hundred were added to the Church. Mr. Harrison had now been preaching four years and fifteen thousand souls had come to the Saviour in his meetings. He had proved two things: One was that in the most cultivated Christian, among the ablest pastors and amplest Church resources, the work of an evangelist has its place. It helps, not hurts, the regular ministrations. Another thing proved is that the Head of the Church chooses His own instruments. The wisdom of man would not have chosen Harrison, but he was chosen and the conversion of men under his labors was by the Power that made choice of him. So it was in the beginning, is

now and will ever be. Leaving Philadelphia, Harrison now went to Meriden, Conn. It is a fine inland city, where in earlier days Methodism hung chiefly on one able and faithful family, the Parkers. The church edifice there was about the finest in the state. It was awaiting the pillar and the cloud of the Divine Presence. It was now divinely accepted indeed. In four weeks three hundred professed conversion and the work can hardly yet, after five years, be said to have ceased. Perhaps it never will.

At the end of March, 1881, Harrison went to Indianapolis, asking that a thousand souls might there be brought to the Saviour. The Roberts Park Church, named from a Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church, holds two thousand and is the finest in the state. Here the meetings began and it was immediately crowded. In five weeks over five hundred professed conversion. Revival services were then opened in fifteen other churches of the city, and the whole town was shaken. Talmage came from Brooklyn to cheer his pupil and testified, in aid of public confidence, that to his knowledge not one of those who had joined his Church from Harrison's meetings had fallen away, that by their help over three hundred had since been brought in. By June 13th, a little more than two months, the conversions in the Roberts Park Church were ten hundred and eighty-nine and in the whole city more than twice as many were reported. The effect on the temper and character of the city was immense. Every Christian communion was enlarged. Church debts were paid. "The Beloved came forth into His garden," and gladness and strength came upon all Christian people.

After a meeting in San Francisco, at which four hundred professed conversion, Harrison went to Cincinnati. In this great city sin has long thriven, and one might on a Sunday doubt if he were in a Christian town. At least three thousand saloons are open every day and night of the week. Ingersoll had here his largest gatherings of men, furious to tear the Christian religion out of the

land, and, like Chicago, the city seemed to get and retain the worst of foreign elements. Fifty years before, John N. Mattitt, an evangelist of brief but effective working, whose light seemed at last to go out in darkness, had held services here in which eight hundred had been added to the Church. Times were harder now. In January, 1882, meetings were opened at St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Church, of which I. W. Joyce was pastor. In two weeks two hundred and seventeen professed conversion at the altar, besides others known to have been converted elsewhere. So great were the crowds that it was then necessary to open services at other churches, both Methodist and others. At the Wesleyan Female College the school exercises were suspended for a day, and of the graduating class of twenty-two twenty were converted. Some incidents were remarkable. Gray-haired infidels were converted. A mother with her eight children were subjects of grace. Many Catholics, coming from curiosity, were arrested and drawn to seek peace with God through Christ alone. People already members of Churches now first found salvation. Before the revival services closed thirteen hundred and seventy-three professed conversion at the altar. "Behold, I make all things new!" Every Church in Cincinnati felt the blessing of larger life, and good men rose up with fresh courage to their combat with the ruler of the darkness of this world. In six years this man must have been the visible means of bringing to Christ twenty thousand souls. His labors went on. In April, 1883, he was in Decatur, Ill., rejoicing over two thousand souls brought into the Kingdom of God. Strange to say, eight hundred of these were from other places and had come to Decatur from thirteen different states to share the season of grace. And these, taking home the good here found, were able to help the cause of Christ in many and various regions. In the same year, Harrison saw one thousand come to seek the Saviour at Danville, Ill., and about the same number at Rockford. It is

not our plan to follow all his later labors, but only to set forth the man. His career is so different from Moody's, and yet so attended with gracious power, that it is well to look at them both. From both has gone out a power that proves how lawful and necessary



REV. SAM JONES.

is their calling. The numbers gathered under their eye
more than half the whole number blessed in the

The Methodist Episcopal Church South has more recently sent
an effective laborer into the evangelical work. Sam P. Jones was

born, in 1846, in Alabama, but was reared and educated in Cartersville, Ga. His education, like that of so many of his generation, was interrupted by the tread of armies, so that he cannot be called an educated man. In 1872, he was converted and at once began to preach, and soon entered upon a circuit. His home was in the North Georgia Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and the Van Wert Circuit was his first field of labor. After eight years of service on circuits, he felt himself distinctly called to the work of an evangelist, and, in 1880, he began to follow his calling. The result of six years' labor is held to justify his impression that he is thrust out, like a herald, to call men with the Gospel call. Others may be called to instruct, to build up and shepherdize, but he is let loose from local work and set to go before the pastor and the teacher, and get them souls to feed and teach. Early in this year he was for some weeks in Cincinnati. He had before this held meetings in the chief cities of the South, and always with great success. In Cincinnati he was to find new helps and new hindrances. His helps were in a spiritual and intelligent body of pastors and a people already deeply affected by Harrison's labors. His hindrances were from the very fact of Harrison's success, which had set very high the standard of revival effort, so that they who had resisted Harrison's appeal would give little hearing to the average preacher. Jones began his meetings in Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church. He is of slight figure, of average height, of plain, rather classic features under heavy, black hair. He has no grace of oratory, and ignores the arts by which the gold of speech is served in comely baskets of silver. Moody himself is not more plain, direct and earnest. In language, the Doric, as a Greek would say, is his born and chosen dialect—strait, rude and vigorous. It is queer that often what is called Jones' slang is the pure Anglo-Saxon, the English of one thousand years ago, and how it should re-appear in him is matter for a philologist to study. In

his discourse his moods are ever shifting, as Gough's were shifting. He holds that every emotion of which men are capable should be made to serve in bringing them to salvation, and he never limits himself to the understood decorum of the pulpit. To him, man is a being of vast and various susceptibilities, and he believes that the time to laugh and the time to weep, the time to love and the time to hate, all come lawfully within the limits of one discourse.

So he in Music Hall, with its thousands before him, seemed to control the emotion of them all as, in the same place, Theodore Thomas, in a grand choral, had with his wand controlled hundreds of instruments and thousands of voices, from the giant-voiced organ to the softest alto, of whose presence he alone seemed aware. Jones touched every person, and "all passions, in their frames of clay, came thronging at his call."

The church at Cincinnati proved, within a week, too small by half for the crowds that pressed to hear him. The services were then transferred to Music Hall, which seats six thousand, and that, too, was soon just as much too small. There he stood, plain and earnest, but in his hands the Gospel indeed became a trumpet, whence he blew new and stirring tones. At his last service, which was to begin at 7.30 P. M., the Hall, at 6.30, was packed with eight thousand people, and perhaps as many were at the door in vain. During his stay of a month in the city, two hundred thousand heard him preach, and all were impressed with new and effective views of the Gospel. All Churches united in his work, and all gathered members from converts at his meetings.

He is, in the course of the year, preaching to more people than any other man in this country. His fearless, earnest way of holding the mirror up to the people, so that they see, each his own image, and all see the course of society, and the divine mind and judgment, deeply impresses even those who are the least inclin-

ed to reform. Should his strength be spared, he will in the coming twenty years be, far and wide, a help to the Church and a reformer in the land.

Sam Small (strangely undignified name, this "Sam," but that is the whole of it!) was a man of talent and of education, position



REV. SAM SMALL.

and prosperity, but was going rapidly, by whisky, to shame and ruin. He went from his home in Atlanta to Cartersville to hear Jones preach, hardly knowing how he was minded to go. There he was forcibly impressed with ideas of the deliverance, even from whisky, which the Great Deliverer brings. On his return, he

found such deliverance, after hours of agony in prayer, and then scattered three thousand handbills through Atlanta, inviting all to come and hear the story of his deliverance. His life has since been given to labors for his race. He sees prohibition ruling in Atlanta and in most of the counties of his state. As an evangelist, he has far more culture than Jones and equal earnestness, but lacks the rude energy and the completeness of sympathy with our many-sided human nature that makes Jones a man of special power. Yet he is called to the same great work, and the hope of his calling is thus far well known.

There are many other evangelists working under the name of Methodism, and many working in its spirit and after its usages by other names, all good and effectual, but of these our Story need not tell. These already introduced are men and women representative of evangelism and, being most prominent, they are such as may best be put on permanent record.

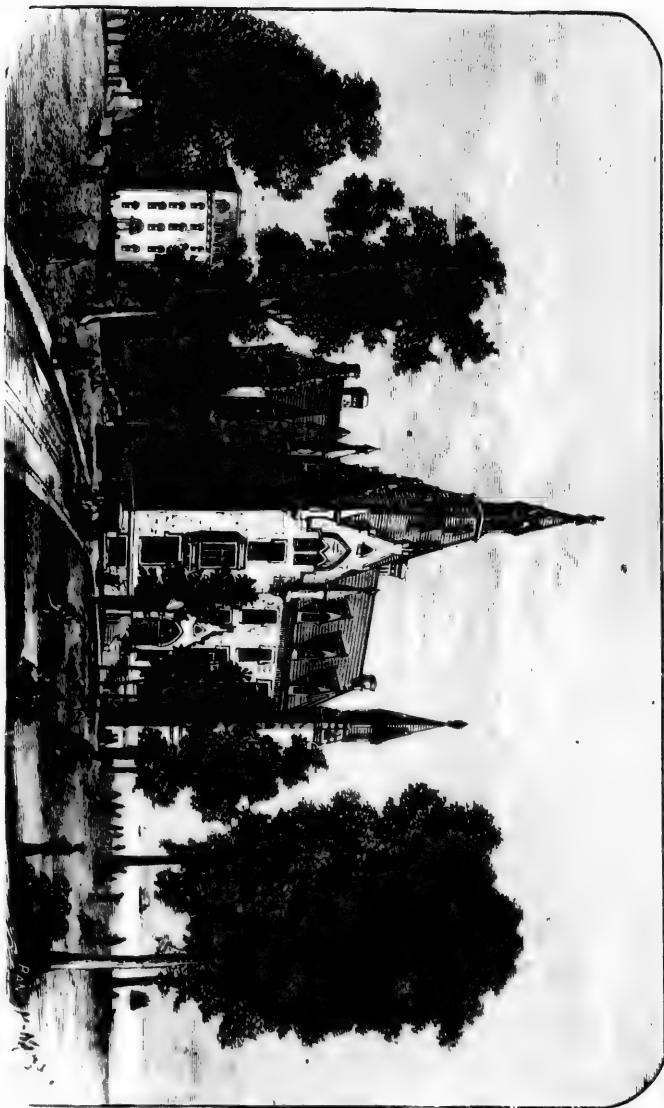


COOKING DINNER AT CAMP-MEETING.

er, and then
aviting all to
fe has since
on ruling in
s an evangel-
nestness, but
thly with our
special pow-
e hope of his

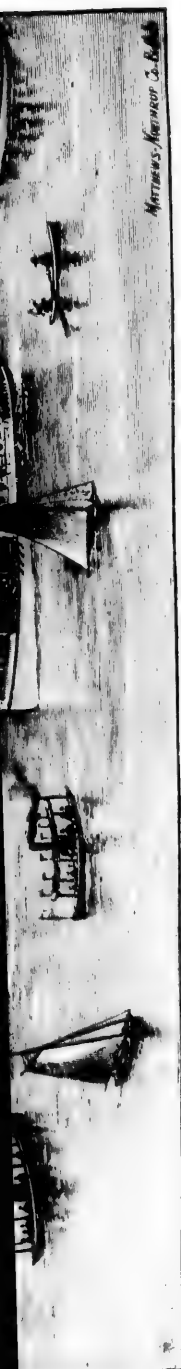
the name of
its usages by
r Story need
omen repre-
they are such

NORTHWESTERN UNIVERSITY, EVANSTON, ILLINOIS.





VIEW OF CHATELAIN'S, NEW YORK

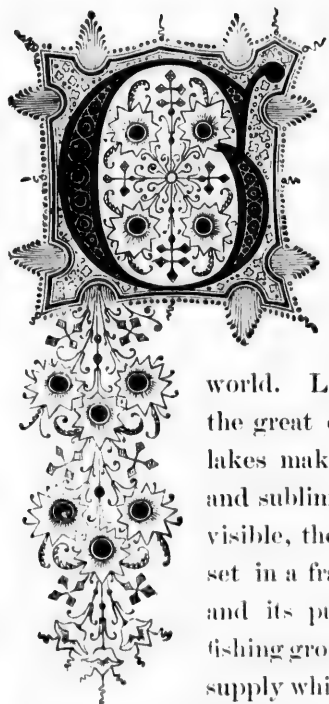


MATTHEWS, NEW YORK 1864

VIEW OF CHAUTAUQUA, NEW YORK

CHAPTER XXXI

Chautauqua.

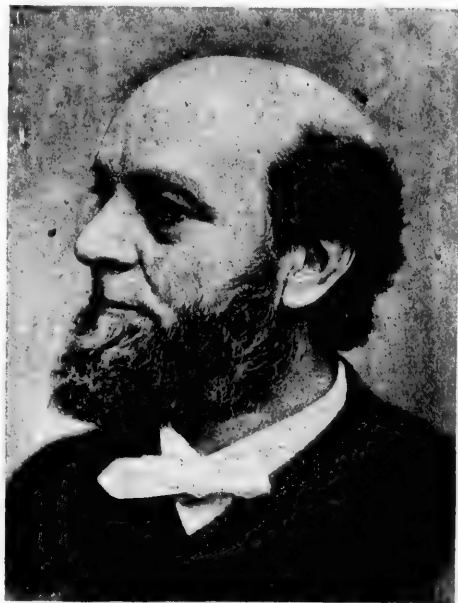


HAUTAUQUA is the name of a lake in southwestern New York. It is, in summer, a charming sheet of water. It is twenty miles long, of hour-glass shape, and of width varying from half a mile to four miles. The special repute which it enjoys is that of being the highest navigable water in the world. Lake Erie is a dozen miles away, but the great difference in the altitude of the two lakes makes Erie seem oceanic and boundless and sublime. At a given point where both are visible, the view is enchanting. Chautauqua is set in a frame of green lawns and woodlands; and its pure waters have been the richest of fishing grounds, and now art is restoring the fish supply which greed has short-sightedly damaged.

Along the northwest shore of this lake, in 1864, some Methodist preachers were sailing in a canoe to look for a camp-meeting ground. They chose fifty acres of forest, then worth twenty dollars an acre, and for some years an annual camp-meeting was held there. It is so beautiful a situation that generations will long be glad that the preachers in the rude canoe chose wiser than they thought, and secured for sacred society and progress the best place in America. The area has been many times enlarged and

now contains a square mile and more. There is a city with immense hotels, with public buildings ample for a university, with cottages in every style and quality along its avenues, and with every summer charm that shade and water have. The summer population may reach twenty thousand; the winter stayers may count one thousand.

This is the home and center of the Chautauqua idea: John H Vincent was born in Alabama in 1832. He was educated at the North, and in 1853 joined the New Jersey Conference, and in 1856 he was transferred to the Rock River. His attention was early called to Sunday-school work, and soon his tastes for it were formed and it became his favorite and most successful form of labor. He spared no pains to fit himself for such work,



REV. JOHN H. VINCENT, D.D.

going to Palestine to gain vivid and effective impressions, making the acquaintance of successful workers and searching out improvements in all working methods. In 1865, he was made general agent of the Sunday-school Union of the M. E. Church and, in 1868, editor of the *Sunday-school Journal* and of books of instruction. New life was now thrown into all the workings of that department of the Church. Among other things he intro-

ity with im-
iversity, with
es, and with
The summer
stayers may

a: John H



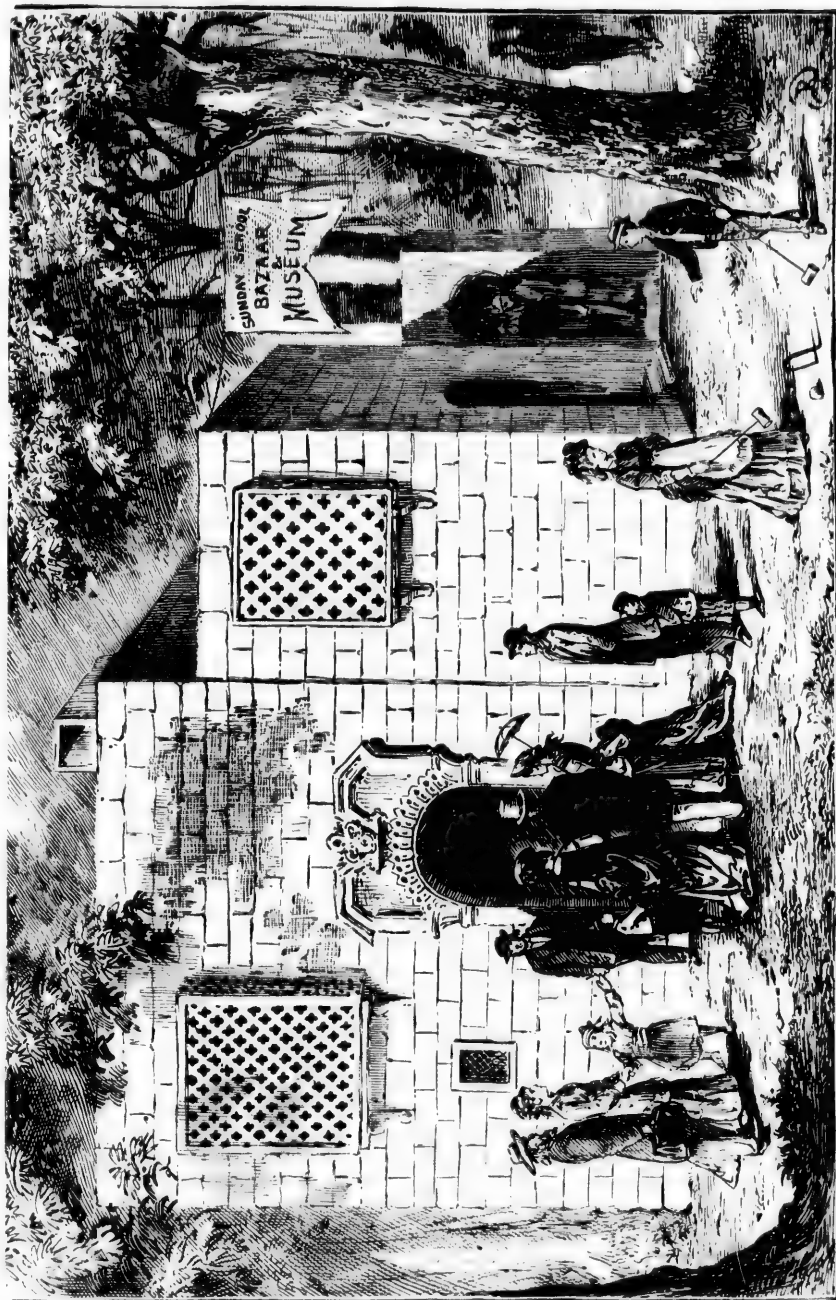
D.D.

sions, making
out improve-
made general
hurch and, in
books of in-
workings of
ngs he intro-

duced Teachers Institutes. These had already been used with success in aiding and fitting the teachers of public schools. It was found to be of the greatest possible service that they meet and spend days together, comparing ideas and methods, getting the views of those most eminent and successful in their calling, harmonizing their systems, promoting the interest and dignity of the profession, and assisting its general progress.

In Vincent's eyes, the teaching and management of the Sunday-schools was quite as important as any other could be, and every possible improvement in them was urgently desirable. He was in charge of the Sunday-school of a great Church; he magnified his office, and soon others also began to count it excellent and important. He found workers in the schools of his Church to be many, earnest and intelligent. By bringing together for a few days such of these as were leaders in any city, district or even Conference, he had opportunity to see their ways and to teach them his own. His skill in teaching and his knowledge of his work were at once acknowledged, and the power of personal presence was most salutary in producing order, hopefulness and zeal in the work. In a little while, his methods gained the confidence and approval of all workers, and he was owned to be master of the situation. He achieved the position of a model teacher and teacher of teachers.

Secure now of public and churchly supports, he began to introduce improvements. Of these the first was, in 1870, the Berean System of Lessons. Every school had taken its lesson from such parts of Scripture as it chose, according to its view of its own needs and preferences. Few schools followed any coherent or logical system for attaining knowledge of either history or doctrine, and it was only by accident that even two, much less any great number, had at a given time the same lesson. Of course there could be no general exposition or illumination of the lesson, and uniformity was the thing first needed. Mr. Vincent has a



ORIENTAL HOUSE, CHAUTAUQUA, NEW YORK.

happy facility, really a genius, for devising names that, for their fitness and convenience, take, without argument, and he gave to his new uniform lessons the name of "The Berean Series." It came from those Bereans who are noted in the Acts as "more noble" than those of Thessalonica, chiefly in that they searched the Scripture daily. The lessons were accompanied with skillful markings to arrest the attention. D was for Dates, Doctrines, Duties; P, for Persons, Places, and that sort of thing, and brief comments were given, with illustrative picture, etc.

Thus Sunday-school instruction was put alongside of the best secular instruction in matter of scientific methods and facilities. The Church journals were soon publishing weekly expositions of the lessons, a column, usually as readable and as much read as any other. While this was proceeding in the M. E. Church, the Sunday-school people of other Churches were looking on with growing attention. They were invited to take part in the work and soon they were active helpers and patrons of the progress.

The Berean Series was, in 1873, discussed by a congress of all, or nearly all, Protestant Churches and made International. By that name it is henceforth known. Annually, two years in advance of the year in which the lessons are to be actually used, a lesson committee, made up from the Churches of this country, Canada and England, meets and determines the forty-eight lessons which, with the reviews, occupy the Sundays of the pleasant and various year. The system has such and so many advantages that it has clearly come to stay as a feature of the Sunday-school system of the world. Its uniformity is charming. A stranger entering a Church service is not sure of the text from which he may hear a sermon, but wherever he enters a Sunday-school he knows the lesson. On a given Lord's Day, the International Lesson, following the sun and keeping time with the hours, circles the world, and there is now hardly a speech or a language where its



ORIENTAL HOUSE, CHAUTAUQUA, NEW YORK.

verses are not read or learned, explained and enforced. The plan was adopted of holding, at some convenient place, a protracted Sunday-school Institute, at which the exercises should



LEWIS MILLER.

be broad like the International Lessons, like the Sacred Scripture itself. Mr. Vincent found his first helper in Lewis Miller, of Akron, O. This man had come up by his own wise, devout, generous and energetic effort from humble origin to the front rank of

reed. The
place, a pro-
mises should



VAN LENNAP EXPLAINING MODEL OF PALESTINE AT CHAUTAUQUA.

red Scripture
is Miller, of
devout, gen-
front rank of

business men, of active Christians and good citizens. His time, his counsel and his money were freely put to the backing of Vincent's ideas, and to him more than to any other than their author is due their success. These gentlemen chose the Chautauqua Camp-meeting Ground as the place for their Assembly, and here, in 1874, the first Sunday-school Assembly was held. Every resource and appliance then attainable was brought into service, and men and women of the largest ability and experience. The effort to bring Sunday-school work to its highest excellence was vigorously made, and the result was cheerful and assuring. The declared purpose was the improvement of methods of biblical instruction in the Sunday-school and the family. Here was to be a Bible school, and the ideal adopted from the beginning has not been changed, but only steadily unfolded for now these twelve years.

It has of course been found that the wide, deep study of the Bible leads to the study of most other things, as from the Golden Milestone in the Roman Forum went roads to all the provinces.

The Assembly began as a Methodist Episcopal effort, being suggested and put in operation by Methodists, but, like that camp-meeting of which we told, began by Presbyterians, in 1799, on the Red river, Ky., the first camp-meeting on record, it was no more the plan to shut the Assembly to Methodists than to limit to them the Bible itself. It was meant for mankind and it soon gained wide attention. Soon after the endorsement of the movement by the managers of the Sunday-school Union of the M. E. Church, the following resolution was sent out to the world: "Whereas this course of study is in substantial agreement with that adopted by the normal departments of the Baptist, Presbyterian and American Sunday-school Union Boards, and as the leading workers in these and other branches of the Christian Church will be at the Assembly to assist by their experience and counsels, and, as it is our purpose to make the occasion one of

His time,
king of Vin-
their author is
auqua Camp-
und here, in
very resource
ce, and men
The effort to
as vigorous-
The declared
l instruction
o be a Bible
has not been
welve years.
study of the
n the Golden
provinces.
effort, being
ke that camp-
in 1799, on
rd, it was no
an to limit to
and it soon
of the move-
of the M. E.
o the world:
reement with
ptist, Presby-
s, and as the
the Christian
perience and
usion one of

the largest catholicity, the committee cordially invite workers of all denominations to attend and to participate in the services of the Assembly." This invitation was taken in the spirit in which it was given, and the Assembly soon became the most truly catholic institute in the world. In its general work the lines of denominations vanished and the movement was seamless as the Saviour's robe.

Still every represented Communion has its own home and its own exercises. Many of these have their own buildings and each on arriving registers himself with his own people, and on Wednesday evenings each Church has its own separate meetings for conference and prayer. Thus the gathered flocks are at rest in one fold and under one Shepherd, and they go in and out and find pasture.

At times fifteen different denominations, almost every one known in Protestantism, have been counted in attendance. On various occasions the doctrines and practices have been stated by representative men, and the grounds and reasons thereof frankly and fully stated without reply or debate, and large audiences have given the most kindly and attentive hearing, and have felt all the stronger in the deep love that binds believing hearts. At Chautauqua, as we saw in China, all communions meet as, to our vision, parallel lines meet on the starry surface of the sky.

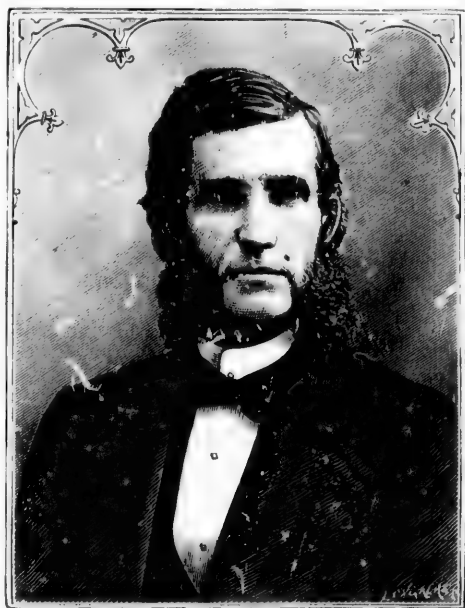
The central institute thus planted at Chautauqua, like a tree by generous streams, went on to grow and put forth its branches.

Of these, the one of largest spread is the Chautauqua Literary and Scientific Circle, usually known by its initials as the C. L. S. C. (Once in a century these letters may mislead. In a town near Chautauqua lived Ella See. "Where is Dr. F.?" asked a parishioner one evening. "Gone to C. L. S. C.," said Mrs. F. "Why, is she sick?" came out anxiously.)

This is a company of readers pledged to a wide range of litera-

ture. Its aim, as set forth at its organization, August 10, 1878, is to promote habits of study and reading in connection with the routine of daily life, especially that those whose educational advantages have been limited may gain a student's outlook upon life and upon the world, and may develop the habit of close, persistent thinking.

That it was not to be confined to the uneducated is shown by the fact that the first graduate in its course of study was the Rev. Dr. Lucius H. Bugbee, a graduate of Amherst College, an experienced educator and, at the time, president of Allegheny College, Meadville, Pa. The C. L. S. C. proved by its progress that it met and satisfied a real want. It gathered its members from every class of society. Several were over eighty at their joining, as old as Plato when he learned to play the flute to aid in resisting the ravages of old age. Those who had more time than business, or more business than time, found solace and profit in its studies.



REV. LUCIUS H. BUGBEE, D. D.

The theory of the circle is simple. Its first principle is that the basis of education is religious and that when education is rightly begun all life should be its school. That learning has no favored classes; the humble home and the lowly calling, as the classic

Horace sang long ago, may claim and have its elevating, refining influence. Nor is education limited to the school period and to early life. Business, care and experience serve to strengthen the intellect, and, if this be well directed, the attainments of maturer years, and to this may be added the fact that those whose early advantages were small have afterwards the stimulus of an exalted view of learning and an intense craving to obtain it. These can, with good guidance and encouraging assurance, achieve, in a direction so desirable, results solid and gratifying.

Its work, based upon these propositions, is done partly at Chautauqua and other assemblies, where for a few weeks in the summer instruction is given by lectures and class exercises. For those who cannot be present at these assemblies, provision is made for study by correspondence. Lessons are given and examinations are made, and after satisfactory processes the diplomas are issued. Finally those who can use neither of these methods may have direction in such reading and study as they can accomplish, and by duly reporting to headquarters obtain credit for work actually achieved.

The usual method is to organize in a given precinct a circle with an efficient chairman, able to comfort, counsel and command, and to have monthly meetings for review and inspection for the statement and removal of difficulties, and for social entertainment and inspiration. Where the number is such that the expense is little, lectures are had on matters relating to the course.

It is not to be expected that all these students will be profound and exhaustive in their work, but they who master their studies even defectively get well paid for their efforts. They gather ideas, they come into wider sympathy with truth, they breathe a higher atmosphere, as the result of even imperfect efforts.

The course in this "school out of school" embraces science, history and literature. Graduation in it corresponds to graduation

in college. It means that certain lines of study so important as to be fixed and based are completed, and that henceforth the student or reader is to exercise his own choice. On the diploma are thirty-one blank spaces and there are as many courses of reading provided. When one of these courses is completed, a seal is stamped upon one of these spaces. These are enough for an average lifetime.

About eighty-four hundred names were, in 1878, enrolled for the class aiming to graduate in 1882. When their Commencement (called there "Recognition Day") came around on August 12, 1882, seventeen hundred and eighteen received the diploma. Of these, about eight hundred were present, and the order of the day was made noble and impressive.

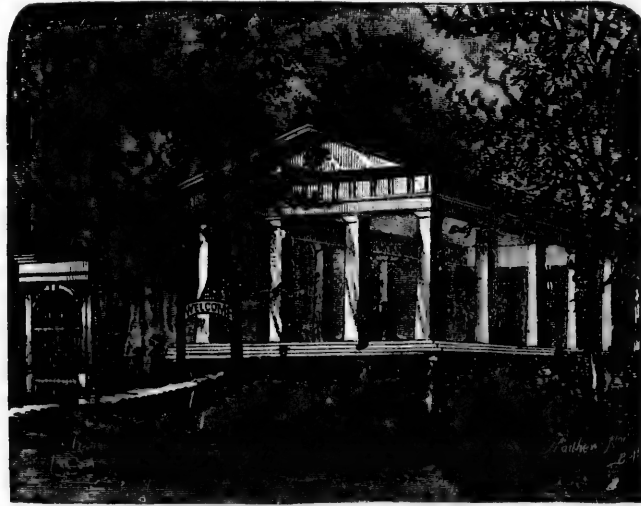
Over one hundred thousand names are now enrolled in this circle. There are six local circles in Japan, containing more than one thousand members, coming from every rank of society. There are judges, lawyers, government officials, as well as soldiers, etc., with many ladies. In South Africa is a circle with an attendance of three hundred. Russia has a circle of three hundred and forty-four, and there is one in Hawaii.

For those who can hardly take the C. L. S. C. course, but are desirous of doing something, there has been framed "The Chautauqua Book-a-month Reading Circle." It offers thirty-six volumes, one a month for three years, being about sixteen pages a day. These volumes are selected from a wide range in the various departments of literature, history, biography, essays, travel and historical romance. In the same connection is also "The Chautauqua Musical Reading Club," adapted in one line to practical musicians and in the other to lovers of music.

A "Young Folks Reading Union" (everything begins with "Chautauqua") follows these just named, and a "Town and Country Club," framed to encourage the young to keep their eyes and ears

open for all things in art and nature, to make record and report the same, is also in existence. There is, too, a Society of Fine Arts.

Rising above these is the College of Liberal Arts—i. e., a real college with thorough courses of study. This is the "college outlook" from the C. L. S. C. It is a non-resident college, and that is, at best, a disadvantage. Nothing can make good the loss of daily drill under a master's eye and voice, and the personal force



PHILOSOPHY HALL, CHAUTAUQUA.

of his presence. Recitation and guidance is the next best, and to many it is the only thing within reach. The studies are by no means without a master, and guidance at long range is sometimes quite effectual. It certainly tends to make the student self-reliant and impels him to do for himself the best he can and to do it sincerely. Certainly there are none in such a college but those who, in good faith, desire and intend to learn.

The examinations are in writing and in the presence of compe-

tent and watchful committees, and their papers receive as much consideration as at Oxford or Cambridge. The defects of the study by correspondence are partly balanced by a certain independence, accuracy and continuance of attention necessary for writing. This college and this system of study are not designed for those who can do better, but for those who can get collegiate education in no other way.

This College of Liberal Arts is a part of the general educational enterprise organized as the Chautauqua University, but called by the simple name *Chautauqua*, Dr. Vincent being its chancellor. There is also in the University a School of Theology. In this, as in the College Arts, the work is done at the homes of the students, attendance at Chautauqua being not a necessity, but rather a recreation and an encouragement. Of this School of Theology there are two departments, one of drill and one of resource. In the first are severe studies of Hebrew, Hellenistic, Greek and some Latin. For these there are summer schools in July, at which one may get initiatory instruction and helps by the way. In doctrine the students are directed by theologians of their own Churches and are examined by the same, so that each is in the care of his own brethren. The course in the first department has quite a range of history and science and criticism. More than four hundred men, most of whom are already engaged in preaching, are at work in this department.

The other department of the Theological School has the imposing name of "The Jerusalem Chamber." This was taken from that room in Westminster Abbey, where seven hundred years ago were hung ample tapestries, illustrating the conquest of Jerusalem by the Crusaders, where one still reads, "O pray for the peace of Jerusalem"; "Build thou the walls of Jerusalem;" "Jerusalem which is above is free." Here were framed the Book of Common Prayer of the Episcopal Church and the Westminster Confession

and Catechism of the Presbyterians, and here, not long ago, the Revised Translation of the Bible was made. This historic name has been given to the department which offers resources without requiring study, or, at least, examination. All actual clergymen, missionaries and the like, becoming members, receive all documents, publications, and every help which the department can give.

There is a Chautauqua literature—a Chautauqua monthly and several minor periodicals, a great range of special text-books and a stream of poems, essays and lectures.

At the place itself the fixtures and appliances are complete. Every variety of building and equipment is ample and the grounds and waters have summer throngs.

There is a Teacher's Retreat for weary but studious teachers, and a Summer School of Languages and abundant play as well as work.

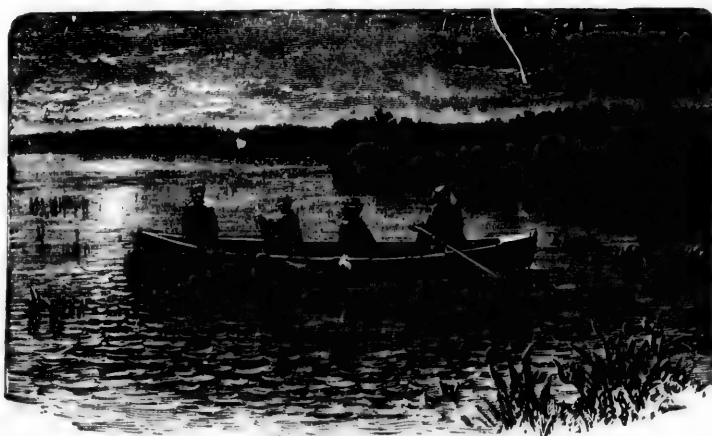
Chautauqua is now reproduced in all parts of the country. Attractive as its routine is and successful as its effort is to combine recreation with improvement, it is wholly unable to satisfy the demand which it has created. Every precinct of land is getting its own Chautauqua. Assemblies of those who can take a few summer days for leisure, whose relish for the Word is lively, chiefly such as work in Churches and Sunday-schools, are abundant. There are over forty in this country. From eastern Maine to southern California, from the St. Lawrence to Florida, where the season first opens, one finds the assemblies. The youngest of all is at Palmer Lake, Colorado, under the imperious guardianship of Pike's Peak.

The story of Chautauqua has been thus fully told for two reasons: one is that it illustrates the form which Methodism, ever the same in spirit, takes in these later days.

We have seen how education has, from the beginning of the movement, been a cause upon which its best efforts have been lav-

ished. Since Whitefield laid with tears and prayers that cornerstone at Kingswood and Wesley went on to build the school, the temper of Methodism has been to this day the same. And now, when schools of every kind, even of law and medicine, are in good supply, Chautauqua comes in to gather up those who cannot use the means already provided and bring them in to the glad feast of knowledge. This is akin to Wesley's work, to find the unawakened, the weary and the disheartened, and bring them to the heritage of light and life.

The other reason is that the Chautauqua movement has on other Churches an effect so like that which the movement called Methodism had on other Churches one hundred and forty years ago and which it has always had. Chautauqua was begun by Methodists, but it found prompt and powerful alliance with the best of other Churches. Without their aid it would not have become what it now is. We saw how many Churches are represented on its ground and are working for its success and are blest in their deed. The various denominations are there "distinct as the billows, yet one as the sea." And, while all Churches thus give the enterprise their valuable aid and sympathy, they cheerfully concede that the beginning and the inspiration are Methodistic.

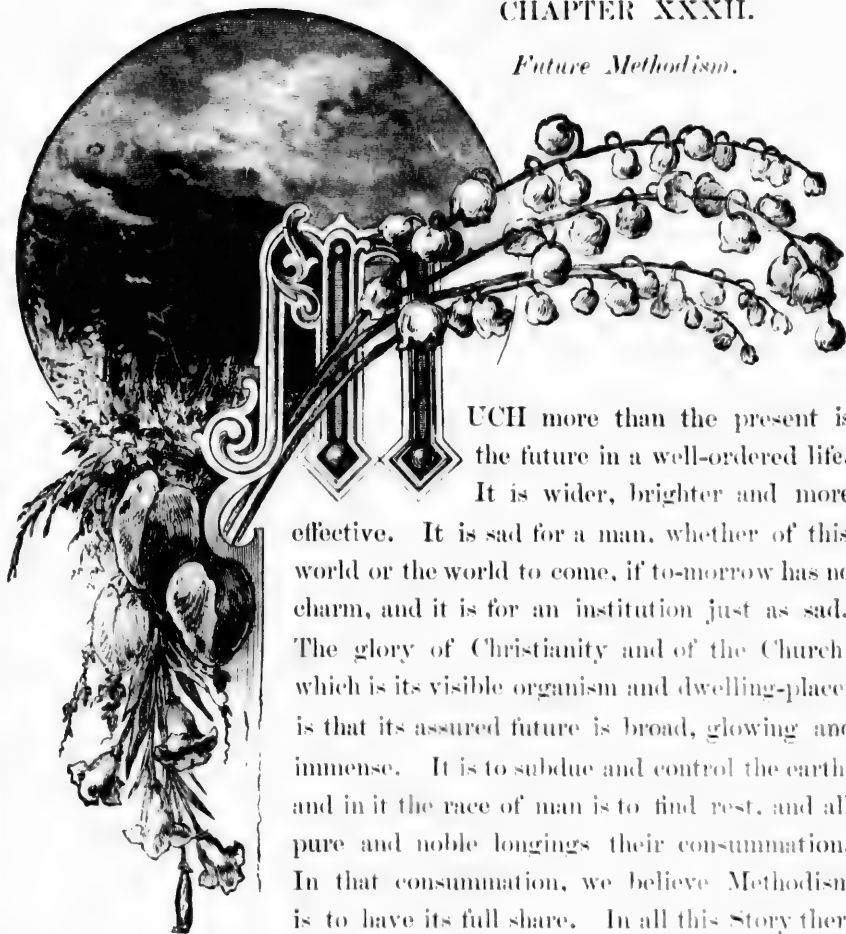


at corner-
school, the
And now,
are in good
cannot use
lad feast of
e unawak-
o the herit-

as on other
alled Meth-
ears ago and
by Method-
n the best of
ave become
presented on
plest in their
t as the bil-
thus give the
eerfully con-
distic.

CHAPTER XXXII.

Future Methodism.



MUCH more than the present is
the future in a well-ordered life.

It is wider, brighter and more

effective. It is sad for a man, whether of this world or the world to come, if to-morrow has no charm, and it is for an institution just as sad. The glory of Christianity and of the Church, which is its visible organism and dwelling-place, is that its assured future is broad, glowing and immense. It is to subdue and control the earth, and in it the race of man is to find rest, and all pure and noble longings their consummation. In that consummation, we believe Methodism is to have its full share. In all this Story there

has been no comparison or contrast of Methodism with other branches of the great Christian Church. The narrative flows within its own borders. If we believe that Methodism is to stay and grow in the world, it is not because we think that it will supersede or crowd out any other Church. There is room enough, there is work enough, for all.

Bishop Meade, of the Protestant Episcopal Church, in Virginia, once said: "Fifty years ago, when I began my ministry, I was sure that the Protestant Episcopal Church so perfectly embodied the ideas and usages of the Christian faith that I believed it would soon be the Church of America, and come to control the Christianity of the world. The Baptists were growing, and I was confidentially told by a preacher of theirs that he was certain they would early dominate this land. The Methodists were singing: "The Methodists are gaining ground. Praise the Lord! Praise the Lord!"

After fifty years, we stand not much differently from our standing at that time. All have grown, some faster, some slower, but none prevails. If it were true that the growth of one Church meant the decline of any other, thanksgiving even might be a doubtful exercise. But it is with Churches as with gardens, where the thriving of one helps the thrift of all, or as with regiments, where the success of one helps the general victory.

There are reasons why the future Story of Methodism should be a cheerful one. One is this—that its doctrines and usages are well settled. No new dogma can enter. The Pope, thirty years ago, announced a new doctrine, the Dogma of the Immaculate Conception, and Montalembert, the ablest lawyer of France, said: "I bow my intellect to my faith." When the intellect straightens itself, beware!

Nor is there room for any new usage or any serious change of usage in Methodism. There is nowhere any complication, except in the voluntary and decreasing usage of the District Conference. All else is simplicity itself, and the working of the system in order and freedom bears the test of now five generations. According to the reliable identity of the human nature, one cannot see why it may not wear for hundreds of generations. There has been no loss of piety and devotion. We might have given, from the jour-

nals of early men, ample proof that their days were days of trial from the unworthy living of many. Aged men of wide and careful sight and insight affirm improvement under their own eyes. Personal holiness, deep, Scriptural experience, intelligent and active benevolence, grow with the growth of the Church and strengthen with its strength.

In Churches, as in private business, increase of capital means increase of spread, energy and result in business. The M. E. Church has now a magnificent accumulation. Its preachers (in all Methodism) are now, local and itinerant, one hundred and eleven thousand. Its members are five and one-half millions and the increase, as reported by its weekly journals, is more rapid now than ever. If, as is often said, one member in fact means on an average four persons influenced, then there are under the influence of Methodism to-day twenty-seven and one-half millions of people, and these figures are not extravagant.

In the United States, since the takings of the census began, the increase of Methodists has been about six times as great as the increase of the whole population. And this increase, not gained from other Christian Churches, but from the great throng of the unchurchly, the undevout, the unsaved. So may it ever be!

There are now, in all, small and large, about two hundred and fifty institutions of learning in the Methodism of America. It is not easy to get the exact number in other lands, as in Australia, but from the best data one may count them as fifty. In our far West, every year sees new ones rising. These schools must be a growing power in society.

As missionaries are winning other lands, the action and reaction of foreign and home societies increase. A Baptist missionary in Burmah has this year sent home five hundred dollars to aid Church work in this country, and thus help his mission at its source, and on the same principle success in India insures success in America.

Methodism must therefore have in prospective such a future as will gladden the earth with joy and singing, and for its success, not its adherents only, but all friends of mankind, must ever pray.



a future as
cess, not
r pray.

INDEX.



THE STORY IN ENGLAND.

| | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|--|----------|---|----------|
| American Bible Society..... | 191 | Conversion, A remarkable | 139 |
| American Visitors..... | 305, 308 | Coomassie | 319 |
| American Revolution..... | 318 | Cowper, William..... | 192 |
| Annesley, Dr., Father of Mrs. Wesley..... | 29 | Creighton, James | 238 |
| Annesley, Susanna, Mrs. Samuel Wesley..... | 31 | Crook, John..... | 290 |
| Arminian Magazine..... | 255 | Culloden, Battle of..... | 112 |
| Assurance, Doctrine of..... | 148 | Cutter, Ann..... | 276 |
| Ashantee | 318 | Dairyman's Daughter, The..... | 204 |
| Australia | 320 | Dartmouth, Lord..... | 176, 192 |
| Ball, Hannah | 252 | Dodd, Dr., Sad case of | 202 |
| Bands, The..... | 79 | Darney and the Mob..... | 203 |
| Beau Nash and Wesley..... | 70 | Day Schools, Wesleyan | 327 |
| Beard, Thomas, the first Martyr..... | 115 | Deacon, Samuel..... | 84 |
| Belfast College..... | 330 | De Quetteville | 201 |
| Bengeworth, Mob at | 79 | De Pontavice..... | 202 |
| Bennet, John..... | 132, 160 | Deed of Declaration..... | 241 |
| Benson, Joseph..... | 211 | controversy over | 207 |
| first commentator..... | 90 | De Courcy..... | 191 |
| Berbridge, John..... | 140 | Demarara | 311 |
| Bishops, Divine right of, rejected..... | 148 | Dettingen, Methodist Soldiers in Battle of..... | 124 |
| Black Country, The..... | 110 | Dissenting Schools | 327 |
| Blackman, Richard..... | 285 | Doctrines defined | 115, 258 |
| Böhler, Peter..... | 61 | Dow, Lorenzo | 207 |
| Bosanquet, Mary..... | 227 | Drew, Samuel | 234 |
| establishes Orphan School | 225 | Dunwell, John..... | 318 |
| her call to preach..... | 228 | Edwards, Jonathan | 319 |
| marries John Fletcher..... | 229 | Education..... | 325 |
| death of | 230 | Elliot, George | 29 |
| Bradburn, Samuel..... | 212 | England in Wesley's time..... | 20 |
| Bradburn, Sophia..... | 252 | Englund, William..... | 203 |
| Bradford Revival | 289 | Emory, John, visits England..... | 305 |
| Bristol | 57 | Emanicipation in British Empire..... | 313 |
| Whitefield first preaches at | 58 | Epworth | 23 |
| first Methodist chapel built at | 71 | parsonage..... | 33 |
| British and Foreign Bible Society..... | 191 | strange noises at | 40 |
| Bunting, Jabez..... | 286 | hymnal..... | 46 |
| Calvinism of Whitefield..... | 85 | John returns to..... | 79 |
| Calvinistic Methodism..... | 105 | Wesleys vanish from..... | 52 |
| Calvinistic Controversy | 185 | Erskine's, Lord, Defense of Methodism..... | 263 |
| Camp-meeting, First English..... | 297 | Evans, John..... | 123 |
| Carabell, Bartley..... | 301 | Evans, Dinah..... | 277 |
| Cape Coast Castle..... | 318 | Evans, Seth..... | 278 |
| Cape Town..... | 319 | Faith..... | 259 |
| Cannibalism..... | 321 | Fetter Lane | 330 |
| Carvoso, William..... | 291 | Field Preaching, first, by Whitefield..... | 67 |
| Cennick, J..... | 84 | Fiji..... | 323 |
| Ceylon | 314 | Five Points of Methodism..... | 120 |
| Centenary, The English | 332 | Fletcher, John..... | 162 |
| Clarke, Adam..... | 231 | at Thirty-fourth Conference..... | 214 |
| strange passage in history of | 234 | marriage of..... | 227 |
| commentaries of..... | 235 | at Madeley..... | 254 |
| missionary views of..... | 236 | death of | 229 |
| in Isle of Jersey..... | 261 | Fletcher, Mary Bosanquet..... | 299 |
| Common Prayer, Book of..... | 26 | Foundry Chapel..... | 73 |
| Coke, Thomas..... | 215 | Foundry School..... | 327 |
| premier of Methodism..... | 217 | Foutenoy, Battle of, Methodist Soldiers | |
| urges an East India Mission..... | 218 | in..... | 125 |
| in France..... | 262 | France, Methodism enters..... | 260 |
| takes Daniel Graham to West Indies..... | 309 | through prisoners of war..... | 263 |
| in India | 314 | statistics of Methodism in | 263 |
| death of | 316 | Freeman | 318 |
| Conference, The First | 68 | Friendly Islands | 323 |
| the first Methodist | 119 | George III., Methodist Class Leader..... | 92 |
| the second..... | 125, 145 | General Rules for the United Society..... | 102 |
| statistics of Thirty-fourth..... | 213 | General Rules for Preachers..... | 120 |
| rules of..... | 218 | Germans in Ireland | 152 |
| first address by | 268 | Glazebrook, James..... | 96 |

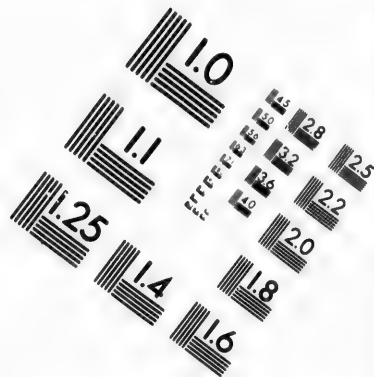
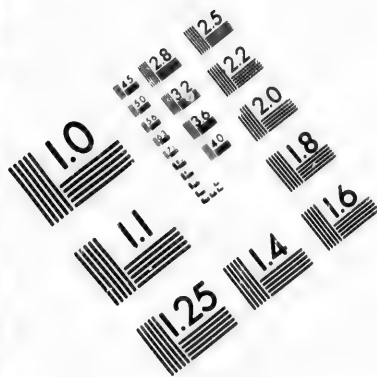
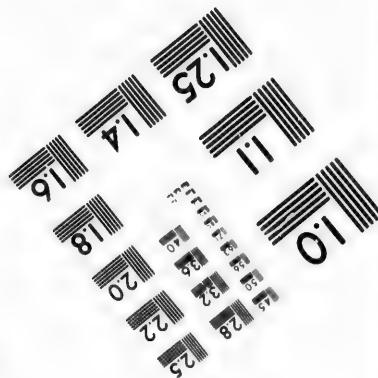
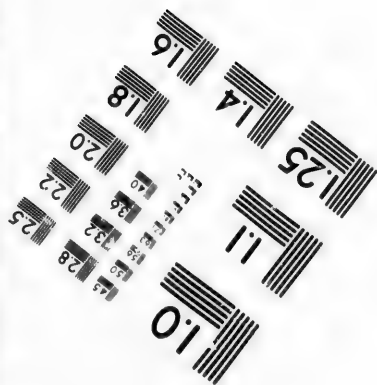
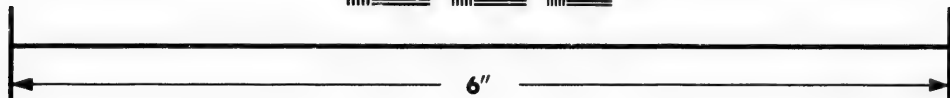
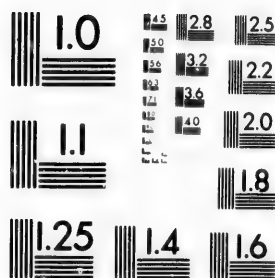
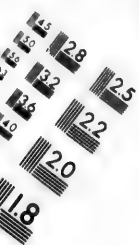


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

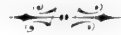
**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



| | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|---|----------|---|---------------|
| Glasgow, John Wesley at..... | 158 | calumnies circulated about..... | 112 |
| Gilbert, Nathaniel..... | 160 | five points of..... | 120 |
| Glenorchy, Lady..... | 163 | hopes to blend with Established Church..... | 148 |
| Grimshaw, William..... | 129 | first ten years of..... | 149 |
| Grimshaw's Circuits..... | 131 | national influence of..... | 195 |
| Graham, Charles..... | 301 | amazing growth of..... | 219 |
| "Grand Central Association"..... | 306 | financial system of..... | 243 |
| Graham, Daniel..... | 339 | official system of..... | 243 |
| Gwynne, Sarah..... | 132 | doctrines of..... | 258 |
| Guernsey..... | 261 | still clung to State Church..... | 282 |
| | | overthrow of, attempted..... | 306 |
| Habal..... | 329 | Methodist Free Church..... | 307 |
| Harris, Howell..... | 69, 189 | Methodist New Connection..... | 273 |
| Healy on Athlone Circuit..... | 250 | Methodist, Origin of the name..... | 20 |
| Herrnhut..... | 163 | Missionary Plan, The first..... | 27 |
| Hervey's attack on Wesley..... | 165 | Mission, name first used..... | 215 |
| Hick, Samuel..... | 279 | Mission, East India..... | 218 |
| Hill, Rowland..... | 180 | Miners, The..... | 231 |
| offends Lady Huntingdon..... | 183 | Mobs at Sheffield..... | 107 |
| opens first S. S. in London..... | 255 | St. Ives..... | 108 |
| Hill, Richard..... | 189 | Grimsby..... | 114 |
| Holy Club, The..... | 50 | Hayworth Moor..... | 137 |
| Hopper, Christian..... | 162 | Wexford..... | 136 |
| Hopper, Mather..... | 285 | Athlone..... | 137 |
| Home Missions..... | 290 | Cork..... | 138 |
| Horne, Melville..... | 273 | Pateley Bridge..... | 162 |
| Horner, John..... | 317 | Moorfields, Whitefield's greatest day at..... | 90 |
| Huntingdon, Selina, Countess of..... | 93 | Moore, Henry..... | 218 |
| inclines to Calvinism..... | 96 | Moravians..... | 53 |
| harmonizing friend of Wesley and Whitefield..... | 93 | historical sketch of..... | 61 |
| loses control of her Churches..... | 193 | direct the Wesleys to Salvation..... | 63 |
| death of..... | 195 | becoming quietests..... | 76 |
| Hymns and Sacred Poems..... | 75 | Murray, Grace..... | 132 |
| India..... | 314 | Nelson, John..... | 98 |
| Ireland, Beginnings in..... | 135 | refuses to work on Sunday..... | 100 |
| progress in..... | 152 | persecuted..... | 114 |
| Germans in..... | 218 | in the army..... | 115 |
| Irish Preachers in England..... | 300 | mobbed at different places..... | 157 |
| Irish Emigration..... | 363 | preaches first lay sermon..... | 210 |
| Jersey, Isle of..... | 261 | death of..... | 210 |
| Johnson, Dr., on John Wesley..... | 200 | Newton, John..... | 192 |
| Joicy, Matthew..... | 248 | Newcastle Orphan House..... | 202 |
| Jones, Griffith..... | 68 | Newgate Jail..... | 206 |
| Joss, Torial..... | 175 | New Wesleyan Missionary Society..... | 274 |
| Jordan, Mingo..... | 313 | Newton, Robert..... | 287 |
| Justification, Doctrine of..... | 147, 259 | New South Wales..... | 320 |
| Jubilee, The Double..... | 331 | New Zealand..... | 320 |
| Kingwood..... | 252, 325 | Nova Scotia..... | 318 |
| Kilham, Alexander..... | 267 | Oglethorpe, General James..... | 52 |
| trial of..... | 271 | Olivers, John..... | 204 |
| Laity, The..... | 272 | Obituaries, Old style of..... | 214 |
| Lee, Thomas..... | 161 | Olivers, Thomas..... | 383 |
| Leeds, College at..... | 330 | Offerings, Free..... | 332 |
| Le Sueur..... | 261 | Orphan House..... | 202, 206, 252 |
| Legal Hundred, The..... | 241, 290 | Oxford..... | 49 |
| Livingstone, David..... | 235 | Infidelity in University of..... | 49 |
| Love-feast Tickets..... | 83 | the Wesleys at..... | 59 |
| Local Ministry..... | 249 | students expelled from..... | 177 |
| Loan Fund..... | 219 | Opinions and Economics..... | 145 |
| London Missionary Society..... | 236 | Ousley, Gideon..... | 302 |
| London University..... | 327 | Paine's, Tom, Age of Reason..... | 267 |
| Lynce, Thomas..... | 317 | Patrick, John..... | 231 |
| McBurney, John..... | 139 | Perfection, Christian..... | 259 |
| McQuigges' Bible..... | 391 | Physical effects..... | 73 |
| Madan, Martin..... | 167 | Plan of Pacification..... | 275 |
| Magistrate and Preacher..... | 205 | Prayer, Extemporaneous, begun..... | 62 |
| Malta..... | 324 | Primitive Methodists..... | 298 |
| Manchester Theological School..... | 330 | Primitive Methodists of Ireland..... | 301 |
| Maxfield, Thomas..... | 9 | Reformers, The Great..... | 50 |
| Maxwell, Lady..... | 326 | Raikes, Robert..... | 252 |
| Men of Reason and Religion, Wesley's Appeal to..... | 122 | Redfern, Mary..... | 285 |
| Methodism, what it is..... | 19 | Regeneration..... | 259 |
| the time in which it arose..... | 20 | Revival in 1814..... | 294 |
| truly begins..... | 67 | Richmond, Leigh..... | 264 |
| birth year of..... | 72 | Richmond Institute..... | 317, 330 |
| headway of..... | 79 | Rigg, James H..... | 329 |
| | | Romaine, Thomas..... | 167 |
| | | Rogers, James..... | 213 |
| | | Rogers, Hester Ann..... | 277 |
| | | Rowlands, Daniel..... | 191 |

| PAGE. | | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|--------------|--|----------|---|---------------|
| 112 | St. Ives, Mob at..... | 108 | life at Oxford..... | 50 |
| 120 | St. Giles..... | 221 | scholarship of..... | 50 |
| Established | Sacrament Discussions..... | 209 | invited to pastorate at Epworth..... | 52 |
| 148 | St. Vincent..... | 309 | mission to Georgia Indians..... | 53 |
| 149 | Savannah Orphan House..... | 186 | the conversion of..... | 54 |
| 195 | Sanctification..... | 149, 259 | early religious reflections of..... | 59 |
| 219 | Scilly Isles..... | 265 | ejected from church at Islington..... | 64 |
| 243 | Scotland, Whitefield in..... | 89 | simple stock of theology of..... | 64 |
| 243 | John Wesley in..... | 157 | tests for self-examination..... | 65 |
| 254 | Scott, Jonathan..... | 175 | preaches at father's tomb..... | 80 |
| 282 | Senegambia..... | 318 | differs in doctrine with Whitefield..... | 84 |
| 306 | Sheffield..... | 105 | genius for statesmanship displayed | 102 |
| 307 | mob at..... | 107 | last sermon at University at Oxford | 118 |
| 273 | Wesley College at..... | 327 | appeal to men of reason and re- | |
| 20 | Shirley, Walter..... | 179 | ligion..... | 120 |
| 27 | Sier a Leone..... | 318 | mobbed..... | 135 |
| 215 | Smythe, Edward..... | 215 | labors in Scotland..... | 157 |
| 218 | Southey's, The Poet, predictions..... | 292 | labors in Ireland..... | 159 |
| 231 | South America..... | 311 | marries Mrs. Vizzelle..... | 165 |
| 107 | South Seas..... | 326 | Hervey's attack on..... | 165 |
| 108 | Spangenburg..... | 53 | sickness of..... | 165 |
| 114 | Stanforth, Sampson..... | 124 | at three-score and ten..... | 196 |
| 127 | Statistics at Wesley's death..... | 352 | largest audience of..... | 198 |
| 136 | in 1805..... | 283 | sermon of, at All Hallows..... | 198 |
| 137 | in 1815..... | 293 | last night at the Foundry..... | 198 |
| 138 | English or tenury..... | 332 | views on American Revolution..... | 203 |
| 162 | Strangers Society..... | 219 | enemies circulated about..... | 112 |
| 90 | Surrey Chapel..... | 183 | at seventy-seven years..... | 219 |
| 218 | Sunday-schools..... | 252 | and Dr. Johnson..... | 221 |
| 53 | Sutcliffe, Joseph..... | 265 | and Howard, the philanthropist..... | 222 |
| 61 | "Swaddlers"..... | 136 | at eighty-four years..... | 222 |
| 63 | Tahiti..... | 234 | at eighty-six decay begins..... | 224 |
| 76 | Tambiran Arumays..... | 317 | last sermon at Newcastle..... | 224 |
| 132 | Thorp, John..... | 129 | last field sermon..... | 225 |
| 98 | Thornt, John..... | 193 | last letter to Wilberforce..... | 225 |
| 100 | Thornt, John..... | 195 | death and burial of..... | 225 |
| 114 | Thompson, T..... | 294 | call of..... | 240 |
| 115 | Thakombau..... | 323 | journal of..... | 255 |
| 127 | Theological Schools..... | 330 | writings of..... | 255 |
| 129 | Toplady..... | 184 | book room..... | 256 |
| 210 | Told, Silas..... | 206 | tract society..... | 257 |
| 192 | Tolerance Act..... | 293 | educational work of..... | 325 |
| 292 | Tongas..... | 322 | Wesley, Matthew..... | 26 |
| 206 | Taunton College..... | 327 | Wesley, Samuel..... | 26 |
| 274 | Trevecca College..... | 185 | Wesley, Susanna..... | 31 |
| 287 | first anniversary..... | 177 | the mother of Methodism..... | 20 |
| 320 | festival at..... | 185 | care of home..... | 34 |
| 320 | commencements at..... | 186 | training of children..... | 34 |
| 318 | Yavan..... | 322 | holds home meetings..... | 35 |
| 52 | Voltaire's Bonst..... | 51 | death of..... | 98 |
| 204 | Vizelle, Mrs., wife of John Wesley..... | 165 | Wesleyan Hymns and Sacred Poems, 175..... | 258 |
| 214 | Venn, Henry..... | 168 | Whitefield, George..... | 51 |
| 383 | Visitors to American Methodism..... | 306 | joins Holy Club..... | 51 |
| 332 | Walsh, Thomas..... | 139, 155 | vicious youth of..... | 51 |
| 22, 200, 252 | Wales..... | 195 | mission to Georgia..... | 54 |
| 49 | Warren's Grand Central Association..... | 307 | conversion and ordination of..... | 56 |
| 50 | Watch-night, The first..... | 66 | farewell meetings in Bristol and | |
| 177 | Watts, Isaac..... | 193 | London..... | 57 |
| 145 | Watson, Richard..... | 278, 305 | expelled from Churches..... | 66 |
| 302 | Warren, Samuel..... | 306 | begins open air preaching..... | 57 |
| 267 | Wesley, Bartholomew..... | 24 | wonderful effects of the preaching | |
| 231 | Wesley, Charles..... | 43 | of..... | 68 |
| 259 | offer of adoption by Richard Wesley..... | 43 | among the Welsh..... | 68 |
| 73 | personal description of..... | 45 | returns to London..... | 70 |
| 275 | mission to Georgia Indians..... | 53 | tour in America..... | 84 |
| 62 | helps form the Holy Club..... | 50 | differs in doctrine with Wesley..... | 85 |
| 298 | conversion of..... | 62 | labors in Scotland..... | 89 |
| 301 | preaches at Newcastle..... | 81 | triumph at Moorfields..... | 90 |
| 50 | mobbed at Sheffield..... | 107 | among the aristocracy..... | 94 |
| 252 | persecuted in Wales..... | 131 | again in America..... | 142 |
| 285 | marries Miss Gwynne..... | 132 | preaches during earthquake in Lon- | |
| 239 | labors in Wales..... | 133 | don..... | 144 |
| 294 | poetical genius of..... | 258 | makes last tour of Great Britain..... | 169 |
| 264 | death of..... | 229 | his letter to John Wesley..... | 170 |
| 317, 330 | review of life of..... | 250 | last days in America..... | 171 |
| 329 | Wesley, John..... | 38 | last sermon and death..... | 173 |
| 167 | escapes burning..... | 39 | places of burial and tomb..... | 174 |
| 213 | recovers from small-pox..... | 40 | disposition of his property and | |
| 277 | personal description of..... | 45 | slaves..... | 186 |
| 191 | enters Charter House School..... | 42 | Wesley, William..... | 187, 294, 313 |
| | maxim of..... | 50 | Willoughby Grove Academy..... | 326 |
| | | | Wright, Duncan..... | 153 |
| | | | Zinzendorf, Count of..... | 63 |

INDEX.



THE STORY IN AMERICA.

| | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|--|----------|---|------------|
| Abbott, Benjamin, Sketch of..... | 30 | Boardman, Richard..... | 16 |
| labors in New Jersey..... | 32 | Boehm, Henry..... | 115 |
| attempts to mob..... | 38 | Boehm Martin..... | 116 |
| in New Jersey and Pennsylvania..... | 55 | Bond, Dr. Thomas E..... | 188 |
| death of..... | 95 | Book Concern founded..... | 84 |
| Adams, Daniel..... | 221 | first publications of..... | 90 |
| Africa, Methodism in..... | 227 | present proportions..... | 329 |
| African Methodists separate..... | 143 | Boston, Lee at..... | 88 |
| M. E. Church formed..... | 144 | first chapel in..... | 101 |
| Bethel Church..... | 144, 212 | Boston Theological School..... | 352 |
| Zion Church..... | 144 | Boston University..... | 356 |
| first, convert..... | 208 | Bowman, E. W., in Louisiana..... | 165 |
| relation to Church South..... | 208 | Bowman, Bishop Thomas, Sketch of..... | 373 |
| many Churches of the..... | 212 | Branch, Thomas..... | 152 |
| Allen, John..... | 98 | Brazilian Missions..... | 347 |
| Allen, Richard, First African Bishop..... | 129 | Brush, Laura, in Africa..... | 237 |
| Albrights, The..... | 117 | Bulgaria, Methodism in..... | 363 |
| Alabama, First Protestant sermon in..... | 133 | Burton's Chapel..... | 112 |
| Ames, Bishop Edward R., Sketch of..... | 367 | Bugbee, Lucius H..... | 451 |
| Andrew, James O..... | 206 | Burchard, J. L..... | 222 |
| Andrews, Bishop E. G., Sketch of..... | 381 | Burns, Francis, Bishop for Africa..... | 237 |
| Antigua, Methodism in..... | 81 | sketch of..... | 399 |
| Arminianism, Methodist..... | 72 | Butler, William, goes to India..... | 262 |
| Ashton, Annuity left by..... | 12 | Calvinistic struggle..... | 100 |
| Asbury, Francis, the Wesley of Amer- ica..... | 18 | Canada, Methodist Church organized in early labors in..... | 165 106 |
| labors in New York and Philadel- phia..... | 20 | first Church built in..... | 119 |
| made American superintendent..... | 21 | jurisdiction of..... | 176 |
| and Otterbein..... | 33 | unity of..... | 212 |
| falls sick..... | 35 | Indian missions in..... | 221 |
| course during the Revolution..... | 40 | Camp-meetings introduced..... | 111 |
| rests Wesleyan fashion..... | 45 | Capers, Bishop William..... | 135 |
| meets Coke..... | 47 | labors among Creek Indians..... | 216 |
| letter of recall by Wesley..... | 50 | Capers, Major William..... | 135 |
| salary and personal property of..... | 62 | Cape May Commission..... | 159 |
| lays corner-stone of Cokesbury Col- lege..... | 80 | Cartwright, Peter..... | 208 |
| not ambitious of worldly honors..... | 85 | Cherokees, Methodism among the..... | 217 |
| begins in New England..... | 88 | Chautauqua, Description of..... | 442 |
| in the wild West..... | 103 | the, ideal..... | 443 |
| and "de ole Bushup"..... | 109 | work done at..... | 444 |
| in the wild West..... | 128 | assembly..... | 449 |
| loves southern brethren..... | 139 | all denominations unite at..... | 450 |
| last days and death..... | 140 | Literary and Scientific Circle..... | 450 |
| Associate Methodist Reformers..... | 182 | first graduation at..... | 451 |
| Axley, James..... | 158 | courses of study..... | 452 |
| Axley Chapel..... | 167 | reading and musical societies..... | 453 |
| Baker, Bishop Osmon C., Sketch of..... | 365 | College of Liberal Arts..... | 454 |
| Baltimore, First sermon in..... | 14 | Philosophy Hall at..... | 454 |
| first Churches in..... | 23 | School of Theology..... | 455 |
| Baldwin, S. L. and Mrs., in China..... | 248 | literature and Teachers' Retreat..... | 456 |
| Baptism..... | 70 | influence of the, movement..... | 457 |
| Bangs, Nathan..... | 87 | China, Methodism in..... | 242 |
| as missionary secretary..... | 344 | Christmas Conference..... | 67 |
| early experiences of..... | 121 | Children's Day..... | 333 |
| labors along the Hudson..... | 143 | Christian perfection..... | 71 |
| Bangs, Herman..... | 143 | Chicago, Beginning in..... | 157 |
| Baratt, Philip..... | 46 | Chinese Question..... | 194 |
| Bassett, Richard..... | 45 | Chinese Mission, California..... | 196 |
| Bascam, Bishop Henry B., Sketch of 162, 409 | 162, 409 | Chickasaws, Methodism among..... | 218 |
| Beabee, R. C., in China..... | 252 | Choctaws, Methodism among..... | 219 |
| Benham, J. B., in Africa..... | 237 | Church government..... | 323 |
| Berean Series..... | 446 | Church music..... | 127 |
| Bishop, The title of, appears..... | 89 | Cincinnati entered..... | 310 |
| Black Harry..... | 66 | first German society formed in..... | 213 |
| | | Church of the Strangers..... | 347 |
| | | Church Extension Society..... | 348 |
| | | of Church South..... | 348 |

| | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|--|----------|---|----------|
| Class, The..... | 321 | Freedmen, Methodism among the..... | 338 |
| Clark University..... | 341 | Freedman's Aid Society..... | 339 |
| Clafin University..... | 342 | Freedman's Bureau..... | 338 |
| Clark, Bishop Davis W., Sketch of..... | 368 | Future Methodism..... | 457 |
| Coke, Thomas, comes as first Bishop..... | 47, 62 | | |
| his impressions of America..... | 65 | Gaddis, Mrs., Indian Work..... | 219 |
| views on slavery..... | 78 | Galloway, Bishop, C. B., Sketch of..... | 417 |
| has interview with Washington..... | 79 | Gannon School of Theology..... | 342 |
| relieved from office in America..... | 110 | Garrett Biblical Institute..... | 353 |
| Cokesbury College, Laid corner-stone of..... | 80 | Garrettson, Freeborn, Conversion of..... | 33 |
| Collins, John..... | 127 | sketch and labors of..... | 49 |
| Collins, J. D..... | 242 | Gatch, Philip..... | 29 |
| Color line, The..... | 341 | trials and triumphs of..... | 37 |
| Conference, Asbury's first..... | 21 | Gay, Dr., in Italy..... | 299 |
| Conference First American..... | 26 | Georgia, Coke and Asbury in..... | 83 |
| want of discipline at..... | 26 | German Methodism..... | 369 |
| doings of Second..... | 35 | Gibson, Tobias..... | 127, 131 |
| Christmas of..... | 67 | Gibson, Oth..... | 195 |
| description of..... | 75 | Gheen, S. M. E..... | 231 |
| at Wilbraham, 1794..... | 100 | Gough, Henry Dorsey..... | 35 |
| doings, 1796..... | 109 | Goucher, J. T..... | 285 |
| doings, 1804..... | 139 | Gowan, James..... | 265 |
| the Bachelor..... | 139 | Grant's, President, Indian policy..... | 222 |
| doings, 1875..... | 179 | Granbery, Bishop J. C., Sketch of..... | 413 |
| Cook's, Valentine, debate..... | 124 | Gruber, Jacob..... | 117 |
| Cooper, Ezekiel..... | 328 | Guess, George..... | 218 |
| Cookman, George G..... | 337 | | |
| Corea, Methodism in..... | 260 | Hammatt's schism..... | 93 |
| Cox, Melville B., in Africa..... | 227 | Hardine, Bishop L. L., Sketch of..... | 358 |
| Creek Indians..... | 217 | Harding, F. A., Suspension of..... | 260 |
| Crawford, Seth..... | 221 | Hargrove, Bishop R. K., Sketch of..... | 416 |
| | | Harris, M. C..... | 197 |
| Deems, Charles F..... | 213 | preaches first Protestant sermon in | |
| Delaware, Methodism in..... | 58 | Japan..... | 256 |
| revival in express swamp..... | 52 | Harris, Bishop William L., Sketch of..... | 373 |
| Dempster James..... | 39 | Harrison, Thomas, Labors of..... | 421 |
| Delegates, First General Conference of..... | 175 | Hartsough, Lewis..... | 224 |
| Denmark, Methodism in..... | 295 | Haven, Bishop Gilbert, Sketch of..... | 483 |
| Deveau, Mrs., Dream of..... | 18 | Haven, Bishop E. O..... | 391 |
| Disoway, Israel..... | 20 | Heck, Barbara..... | 3 |
| Dickens, John..... | 65 | returns to Canada..... | 104 |
| projects a college..... | 66 | death of..... | 121 |
| Doggett, Bishop D. S., Sketch of..... | 409 | Hedding, Bishop Elijah, Sketch of..... | 123 |
| Dorsey, D. B..... | 181 | Hedstrom, O. G..... | 236 |
| Dow, Lorenzo, admitted to Conference..... | 222 | Hendrix, Bishop E. R., Sketch of..... | 418 |
| preaches first Protestant sermon in | | Hicks, Wolman..... | 62 |
| Alabama..... | 133 | Hibbard, Billy..... | 117 |
| sketch of..... | 423 | Hibbard, Freeborn Garrettson..... | 118 |
| Drew Seminary..... | 353 | Hinson's Chapel..... | 29 |
| Dunwoody, Samuel..... | 132 | Humphrey, Dr., in India..... | 265 |
| Duncan, Bishop W. W., Sketch of..... | 416 | Hu Po Mi..... | 218 |
| Durbin, John P..... | 163 | Hurst, Bishop F..... | 390 |
| missionary secretary..... | 345 | | |
| Early, Bishop, John, founds Randolph | | Indiana, Methodism in..... | 127 |
| Macon College..... | 135 | Indians, Methodism among the..... | 216 |
| sketch of..... | 169 | India, Methodism in..... | 262 |
| Educational Society..... | 333 | Irving, Mertlett, Mary (Hu Sung Eng)..... | 250 |
| interests..... | 350 | Jacobs, Richard..... | 98 |
| Electoral Conference..... | 189 | Jacoby, Ludwig S..... | 311 |
| Elliott, Charles..... | 297 | Japanese Mission, California..... | 197 |
| Embury, Philip, first Methodist preacher | | Japan, Methodism in..... | 256 |
| in America..... | 3 | Jantver, Joel T..... | 263 |
| forms first class in Camden..... | 9 | Janes, Bishop Edward S., Sketch of..... | 360 |
| death of..... | 10 | John Street Chapel, Old..... | 6 |
| English Church in America..... | 64 | Jones, John..... | 62 |
| English visitor, George Marsden..... | 130 | Jones, Peter..... | 221 |
| Emory, Bishop John..... | 141, 313 | Jones, Sam P., Life and labors of..... | 436 |
| Evangelical Association, The..... | 147 | | |
| Evangelists, Recent..... | 420 | Kavanaugh, Bishop..... | 410 |
| Evans, Henry..... | 137 | Keener, Bishop, J. C., Sketch of..... | 412 |
| Eurasians..... | 264 | Kent's meeting-house..... | 29 |
| Extempore prayer..... | 20 | Kentucky, Asbury in..... | 102 |
| | | Kennedy, William M..... | 133 |
| Farrington, Miss, in Africa..... | 228 | Key, Bishop J. S., Sketch of..... | 419 |
| Finley, James B..... | 152 | King, John, Sketch of..... | 13 |
| Fisk, Wilbur..... | 147 | Kingsley, Bishop Calvin..... | 272 |
| Fluvanna, Sacraments at..... | 61 | Kilpatrick, Miss Margaret, in Africa..... | 288 |
| Flathead Indians..... | 189, 222 | Lall, Chimmam..... | 267 |
| Fochoow, Methodism enters..... | 250 | Lanna, Dr..... | 269 |
| Foster, Bishop Randolph S., Sketch of..... | 377 | Lay Delegation..... | 176, 188 |
| Foss, Bishop C., Sketch of..... | 388 | Lay Representation..... | 179 |
| Fowler, Bishop C. H., Sketch of..... | 398 | Lawrence, Sir Henry..... | 265 |
| Free Methodist Church, The..... | 317 | Larsson..... | 265 |
| | | Lee, Jesse, Sketch and labors of..... | 57 |

| | PAGE. | | PAGE. |
|---|----------|--|-------|
| Lee, Jason | 190 | Miller, Lewis, labors at Chautauqua | 447 |
| Levings, Noah | 145 | Missouri, First sermon in | 155 |
| Liquor traffic denounced | 61 | Mohawks, Methodism among the | 226 |
| Light Street Church, Burning of | 110 | Moody, Dwight L., Labors of | 423 |
| Liberia, Methodism in | 226 | Morris, Bishop Thomas A. and Axley | 158 |
| London Quarterly Review | 327 | sketch of | 163 |
| Long, Dr. | 105 | Mormons, Methodism among the | 224 |
| Losee, Wm. | 104 | Nankin, Hospital at | 252 |
| Louisiana, Beginnings in | 181 | Nesbit, William, Sketch and labors of | 309 |
| Louisville Convention, 1845 | 302 | New Jersey, Methodism in | 25 |
| Lore, Julia, in India | 27 | first Conference in | 84 |
| Love-feasts | 323 | New England, Beginnings in | 85 |
| Luckey, Samuel | 143 | Calvinistic struggle in | 100 |
| McClintock, Dr. John | 313 | persecution of Methodists in | 123 |
| McAfee, Charles C. | 345, 348 | New School Methodism | 319 |
| McKendree, Bishop Wm. | 35 | Negroes, first licensed to preach | 137 |
| takes charge of western work | 126 | Ninck, W. X., Bishop, Sketch of | 393 |
| great address of | 173 | Nova Scotia, Preachers sent to | 68 |
| McHenry, Barnabas | 103 | North Carolina, First Conference in | 78 |
| McComick, Francis | 103 | Norway, Methodism in | 294 |
| McLean, Judge John | 161 | Nolley, Richmond | 134 |
| McTear, Bishop H. N., Sketch of | 411 | suffers and dies | 168 |
| MacKay, R. S. and Mrs. | 243 | Northwestern University | 355 |
| Mann, John | 17 | O'Kelley's schism | 93 |
| Mallahieu, Bishop W. F. | 396 | Ohio, Methodists in | 196 |
| Maryland, Methodism in | 20 | Oldham, W. T. and Mrs. | 279 |
| becomes center of Methodism | 33 | Oregon, Beginnings in | 189 |
| Marsden, George, opinion of American | 131 | Manual Labor School | 190 |
| Methodism | 131 | Oneida Indians, The | 221 |
| Martin, C. R. and Mrs., in China | 248 | Onondaga Indians | 222 |
| Marvin, Bishop E. M., Sketch of | 411 | Owen, Richard | 10 |
| Martin, John T., Gift of | 315 | Otterbein and Asbury | 33 |
| Masters, T. J. | 196 | Otterbein, Death of | 138 |
| Maxfield, Thomas | 97 | | |
| Maxwell, Lady | 326 | Paine, Bishop Robert, Sketch of | 406 |
| Merrill, Bishop, Sketch of | 381 | Parker, Bishop L., Sketch of | 415 |
| Methodist Episcopal Church South | 190 | Perry Hall | 36 |
| causes of separation | 199 | changes at | 138 |
| Plan of Separation | 202 | Peck, Bishop, Sketch of | 385 |
| Supreme Court decision | 202 | Pennsylvania, Beginnings in | 57 |
| loss of colored members | 203 | Pewed churches, Beginnings of | 150 |
| Conference of 1870 | 204 | reasons for and against | 321 |
| border troubles and war record of | 204 | Pierce, G. M. | 224 |
| reconciliation | 206 | Pekin, China | 254 |
| relation of, to the negroes | 208 | Petersen, O. P. | 294 |
| union with, desirable | 212 | Periodicals, Methodist | 327 |
| missions of | 215 | Philander Smith College | 342 |
| statistics, 1884 | 215 | Pilmoor, Joseph, Sketch and labors of | 16 |
| Foreign Missions | 346 | becomes Episcopalian | 27 |
| Methodism planted in America | 15 | Pickering, George | 97 |
| objections to, in New England | 87 | Pierce, Bishop George F., Sketch of | 409 |
| differs from Wesleyanism | 176 | Pierce, Lovick | 134 |
| Methodist Episcopal Church in America | | Pitman, Charles | 344 |
| Forming of the | 60 | Pierce, Reddick | 135 |
| entirely free from Church of England | 67 | Plan of Separation | 202 |
| wisdom of discipline of | 68 | Portland Chapel | 28 |
| slavery denounced | 69 | Pointer, Jonathan | 170 |
| doctrines and Institutes of the | 71 | Pawnees, Methodism among | 219 |
| unwritten creed of | 74 | Poncas, Methodism among | 219 |
| means to prevent disorganization | 171 | Protestant Episcopal Church, First, in | |
| Constitution and representation of | 172 | America | 64 |
| adopts plan of lay representation | 186 | Punch, "de ole Bushup" | 110 |
| some change of usage in | 325 | Quarterly meeting | 75 |
| helps to freedmen | 338 | Quinn, Thomas | 153 |
| separation of Church South | 205 | | |
| work in China | 257 | Rabler, John | 104 |
| enters the South again | 205 | Randolph Macon College founded | 135 |
| reconciliation with Church South | 207 | Rankin, Thomas | 37 |
| union desirable | 212 | later experiences of | 48 |
| Indian membership | 219 | Reid, John M., Missionary Secretary | 345 |
| domestic influence of | 317 | Revolution, the, War alarms forerun | 35 |
| Methodist Church, The | 121 | the course of Asbury during | 40 |
| causes of seceding by | 185 | Wesley's advice during | 41 |
| Methodist Protestant Church | 180 | Rigging-loft, The old | 5 |
| differs from M. E. Church | 183 | Rodda, Martin | 39 |
| statistics of, in 1834 | 183 | Roberts, Bishop Robert R. | 125 |
| absorbs the Methodist Church | 185 | Roberts, Bishop B. T. | 318 |
| statistics of, in 1885 | 187 | Robertson, Nathan | 127 |
| Methodist literature | 326 | Roberts, William | 191 |
| Methodist benevolences | 344 | Roberts, President of Liberia | 236 |
| Meyers, Lewis | 133 | Roberts, Bishop John W., Sketch of | 410 |
| Michigan entered | 128 | Ruff, Daniel | 32 |
| Miller, Chas. W., in India | 278 | | |

| PAGE. | PAGE. | PAGE. | PAGE. |
|----------------------|---|--|-------|
| qua..... 447 | Russell, James..... 133 | Van Cott, Mrs. Maggie..... 428 | |
| 155 | Ruter, Martin..... 150 | Van Pelt, Peter..... 20 | |
| 220 | Ryland, James..... 113 | Vanderbilt University..... 213 | |
| 423 | | Vanderbilt, Cornelius, Gifts of..... 356 | |
| Axley..... 158 | Sacraments..... 60 | Vassey, Thomas..... 62 | |
| 163 | St. Louis, Taking..... 157 | Vannest, Peter..... 145 | |
| 224 | Sands, Stephen..... 65 | Virginia, Beginning in..... 13 | |
| 252 | Sankey, Ira D., Life and labors of..... 425 | William Watters in..... 29 | |
| 300 | Savannah, First class in..... 132 | great revival in 1775..... 29 | |
| 25 | San Francisco, Beginnings in..... 192 | Yeargon's Chapel built..... 33 | |
| 84 | Scandinavia, Methodism in..... 263 | Asbury in..... 40 | |
| 85 | Scott, Thomas..... 163 | Vernon, Leroy M., goes to Italy..... 257 | |
| 100 | Scott, Bishop Levi; visit to Africa..... 237 | Venice, Methodism in..... 302 | |
| 123 | sketch of..... 361 | Vincent, John H., S. S. work of..... 333 | |
| 319 | Seys, John, labors in Africa..... 228 | Chautauque work of..... 443 | |
| 137 | has trouble with the governor..... 233 | Walden, J. M., Bishop..... 305 | |
| 333 | Shinn, Asst..... 125 | Walker, Jesse..... 151 | |
| 68 | Six Nations, the, Methodism among..... 221 | Wallace College..... 315 | |
| ce in..... 78 | Simpson, Bishop Matthew, as preacher..... 337 | Ware, Thomas..... 97 | |
| 294 | sketch of..... 364 | Wanderlich..... 314 | |
| 134 | Slavery, First public utterance against..... 61 | Warren, Bishop H. W., Sketch of..... 387 | |
| 168 | first mob at Charleston..... 112 | Warren, William, Mention of..... 313 | |
| 355 | trial of Jacob Gruber..... 141 | Watters, William..... 27 | |
| 93 | Some progress made against..... 176 | labors of..... 48 | |
| 96 | forbidden by Discipline in 1808..... 199 | Washington, George, first contact with | |
| 279 | Small, Sam, Life and labors of..... 439 | Methodism..... 79 | |
| 189 | Smith, James..... 113 | Methodist address to..... 90 | |
| 190 | Smith, Thomas, Praying challenge of..... 114 | Waugh, Bishop Beverly, Sketch of..... 137 | |
| 221 | at Lyons, N. Y..... 145 | Webb, Captain, Sketch and labors of..... 5 | |
| 222 | Snethen, Nicholas..... 101 | carries Methodism to Philadelphia..... 9 | |
| 10 | Soule, Joshua..... 99 | goes to England for preachers..... 23 | |
| 33 | organized Missionary Society..... 344 | old age and death of..... 27 | |
| 138 | Spicer, Tobias, in Troy..... 145 | Wesleyan Missionary Society, Work of..... 16 | |
| of..... 406 | Statistics at Asbury's coming..... 20 | Wesley, John, misunderstands some | |
| 415 | at first conference, 1773..... 20 | American needs..... 27 | |
| 36 | at beginning of M. E. Church..... 77 | advice during Revolution..... 41 | |
| 138 | at beginning in 1792..... 91 | recalls Asbury..... 50 | |
| 385 | at beginning in 1793..... 108 | on Church government..... 64 | |
| 57 | of Sunday-school, 1886..... 331 | letter read at Christmas Confer- | |
| of..... 150 | educational, of Church South..... 342 | ence..... 67 | |
| 321 | of Missionary Society..... 345 | Western Reserve, Methodism in the..... 151 | |
| 224 | of M. E. Sunday-school Union..... 348 | Wesleyan Connection, The..... 109 | |
| 254 | of colleges and schools..... 351 | Wesleyan University, Middletown..... 354 | |
| 294 | Staten Island, Beginnings in..... 20 | Wesleyan University, Delaware, Ohio..... 354 | |
| 327 | Stauron, Miss, dies in Africa..... 237 | Whatcoat, Bishop Richard..... 62 | |
| 342 | Sterling, James..... 55 | death of..... 173 | |
| labors of..... 16 | Stewart, John..... 169 | Wheeling, First German Methodist | |
| 27 | Strawbridge, Robert..... 10 | Church built at..... 30 | |
| etch of..... 409 | administers sacraments independ- | White, Thomas..... 44 | |
| 134 | ently..... 12 | Whitefield Orphan House..... 94 | |
| 344 | St. George's Church, Philadelphia..... 20 | White, M. C. and Mrs., go to China..... 242 | |
| 135 | Sunday-school, First, in America..... 90 | Wightman, Bishop W. M..... 410 | |
| 202 | Sunday-school Instruction..... 445 | Wilbraham, Conference at..... 100 | |
| 28 | Sunday-school Union..... 331 | Wesleyan Academy at..... 100 | |
| 170 | Summerfield, John..... 324 | Wilberforce University..... 144 | |
| 219 | Swain, Carrie M., in India..... 271 | Wilbur, J. H..... 191 | |
| 219 | Sweden, Methodism in..... 296 | Wiley, Bishop and Mrs., in China..... 244 | |
| h, First, in..... 64 | Swedish M. E. Church formed..... 297 | death of..... 252 | |
| 110 | Swahlen, John..... 310 | visit to Japan Mission..... 258 | |
| 75 | Taney, Roger B., defends Gruber..... 142 | sketch of..... 378 | |
| 153 | Taylor, Edward T. (Father) Labors of..... 149 | Willard, Miss Frances E..... 430 | |
| 104 | Taylor, Bishop William..... 192 | Williams, Robert, as Book Concern..... 37 | |
| 135 | in California, '48..... 192 | Willamette University..... 151 | |
| 87 | in Africa, '68..... 239 | Wilkins, Ann..... 232 | |
| 48 | in India, '70..... 275 | Wilson, Bishop, Sketch of..... 414 | |
| 345 | sketch and present labors of..... 402 | Winans, William, labors in South West..... 167 | |
| 35 | Taylor, Anne, Gospel steamer named..... 405 | Witworth, Abraham, first apostate..... 31 | |
| ing..... 40 | Tennessee, First Conference in..... 83 | Witness of the Spirit..... 73 | |
| 41 | Teachers Institutes at Chautauque..... 444 | W. F. M. Society in China and Japan..... 254 | |
| 5 | Thomson, Bishop Ed. T., in China..... 250 | W. F. M. Society..... 349 | |
| 39 | sketch and present labors of..... 370 | Woman's Home Missionary Society..... 340 | |
| 125 | Thomas, D. W..... 273 | Woolston, The Misses..... 248 | |
| 318 | Tiffin, Edward..... 103 | Wrangle meets Wesley..... 16 | |
| 127 | Ting, Ang..... 244 | Wright, Richard..... 18, 19 | |
| 191 | Torrey, Alvin..... 221 | goes to Maryland..... 30 | |
| 236 | Trimble, Jane..... 153 | Yeargon's Chapel..... 23 | |
| etch of..... 410 | Travis, John..... 155 | Young, Jacob..... 126 | |
| 32 | Tract Society..... 349 | in the Southwest..... 166 | |
| | Usage, some changes of..... 325 | Yakimas Indians..... 222 | |
| | | Youth's Instructor..... 328 | |
| | | Zoda, the Queah Chief..... 233 | |
| | | Zion's Herald..... 328 | |



Geo. John Stevenson.

Bishop Harris.

Rev. W. H. Depuy.

VIEW OF CHARLES WESLEY'S MONUMENT.

From a Photograph taken in 1887.



J. WESLEY.



J. W. FLETCHER.



HENRY J. WADSWORTH.

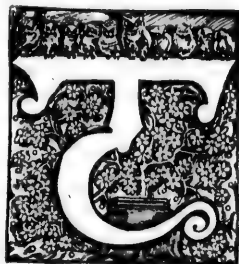


DR. COX.



F. ASBURY.

THE GENERAL CONFERENCE OF 1888.



HE Twentieth Delegated General Conference, the twenty-fifth from the forming of the Church, met on the first of May in New York. The growth of the Church and the progress of the world had made it not only duly greater than any of its predecessors, but foremost of all assemblies of modern Christendom. Its direct constituency in the Methodist Episcopal Societies was over two millions; second to none in energy, devotion, in wealth and intelligence. Of kindred churches wearing the name and owning the pedigree of Methodists, there were three millions, all turning with reverence and affection towards this gathering of the parental body. All Christian eyes turned towards the Conference and all Christian hearts mused of its doings.

The place of its meeting was worthy of such a gathering. Methodism in the metropolis of the Western Continent is not strong, but it is renewing its mighty youth, and while the Conference was sitting, hundreds of souls came to Christ in a revival which Harrison was conducting and in which bishops and eminent preachers assisted. There, too, was John Street, venerable as time could make it in this young land, still shedding the light which Webb and Embury had kindled. There was the book concern which in the former century John Dickens had begun with six hundred borrowed dollars, now grown to millions of capital and millions of transactions. New York, with fifty-three churches and thirteen thousand members, was still the metropolis of Methodism. The building in which the Conference held its

sessions was fit to shelter it. The Metropolitan Opera House, at Broadway and Fortieth street, furnished the finest assembly room in the United States. Its platform was ample for the bishops and all officials with their guests; the floor accommodated the delegates; the first two galleries, made of boxes, paid by rental the cost of the hall, and the other two galleries were free to visitors. The lighting was wholly by gas, which brought out the splendor of the room and flooded its five thousand occupants with the full light of noonday. The personality of the Conference was worthy of study. Eleven bishops, with Thomas Bowman as senior, sat upon the platform, survivors of the thirty-seven since 1784. William Taylor, the missionary bishop of Africa, was most observed of them all. Finishing his work, he was waiting on the Liberian coast for a steamer due in a fortnight. Suddenly one appeared ("by order of Providence," he said), and he reached New York in time for Conference. His snowy beard, maroon face and mighty bearing were Abrahamic, but he came with neither two coats nor money in his purse. He brought only himself and his record. With these sat on the platform men eminent in the various branches of Methodism, come on errands of brotherly greeting. Other denominations were often so represented, so that the platform showed a constellation of stars of the first magnitude.

Of delegates there were 463; of ministerial 288, of lay 175. Five women had been elected, Frances E. Willard, Mary C. Nind, Lizzie D. Van Kirk, Angie F. Newman and Amanda C. Rippey. One layman, Major E. L. Paine, remembered hearing Asbury preach, had seen in press the first number of the *Christian Advocate*, and at eighty-seven found age "a lusty winter, frosty but kindly." A preacher, Dr. J. M. Trimble, had sat in the General Conference of 1844 and seen the Church become two bands. These were the veterans, all others were of this generation. From China ("these from the land of Linim,") came Sia Sek Ong, once a Confucian bigot, now for twenty years a preacher of child-like bearing, but of heroic record, and Tiong-a-Hok, a merchant-prince of Foochow, devout and generous. The Conferences of India and Europe sent delegates. From Africa was noticed the venerable Mrs. Roberts, widow of the noble President of Liberia. A Norwegian represented the land of the midnight sun.

THE GENERAL CONFERENCE.

At the opening the lessons were read from a Bible long used by John Wesley and now owned by the Methodist Episcopal Church. The Bishop's address, written and read by Bishop Merrill, set forth the leading questions of the Church upon which action of the Conference was desirable, and it also indicated the views of the bishops thereon. The first of these questions related to the admission of women as delegates to the General Conference. In 1872, a layman had been defined as any member of the Church, not a member of an Annual Conference. Under this definition twenty-two women (reserves being counted) had been elected to this General Conference. The debate was long and lively. After four days it was voted to submit the decision to a vote of the Church, according to the constitutional routine. In October and November of 1890 the members over twenty-one years of age in every society, will vote upon the admission of women to General Conference. If a majority of such voters favor their admission, and three-fourths of the members of the Annual Conferences voting thereon also favor it, then the General Conference of 1892 can, by a two-thirds vote, complete the change, and any women then already elected can be at once admitted. Closely related to this important action was a motion giving like career to a provision for making the number of lay delegates as many as the ministerial. It will be seen that on both these resolutions the initiative vote is with the laity, and the ministry can do nothing without the primary approval of the societies. For some years already the State Church at Kaiserwerth, in Germany, had employed Deaconesses, an order of Christian women who cared for the sick, for orphans, for discharged prisoners, supplementing in kindly labor the pastoral service. The German and Swiss Conferences had found such a department of churchly activity. The General Conference, giving form and name to what already existed, provided for the organizing of these good women into an orderly system. Nine persons, three at least being women, may, in any Conference, be chosen as a Controlling Board. These may license as deaconesses any women over twenty-five years of age and two years of probation in the work above indicated, whom a Quarterly Conference may recommend. These take no vow, but simply devote themselves, under the direction of the pastor, to such Christian labor as may be suited

to their abilities. Or they may establish themselves in a house or institute for like purpose, under a superintendent chosen by the Conference Board. This marks an advance in the recognition as a church-worker.

The laymen of the cities had long been of the opinion that an extension of the time of pastoral service was needed. The view had reached the ministry, and the bishops agreed in suggesting its lengthening to four years. With singular unanimity the Conference made the term five years, with a possible return after five years of absence. The term of a Presiding Elder was stretched to six years.

The position of Bishop Taylor was vigorously discussed. The conclusion was that he is not a *General* Superintendent; that he is in all things but breadth of superintendency, a full bishop; that his field of superintendency is defined by the terms used at his election, and that he is in no wise subordinate to the General Superintendents. Bishop Taylor's supervision is over the African Conference. "No pent up Utica," he may say with the proud Numidian, "contracts our powers, but the whole boundless continent is ours!"

For the better support of superannuated preachers and widows and orphans of deceased preachers, a Board of Conference Claimants was organized, of twelve ministers and as many laymen, with the bishops as ex-officio members. These are to employ a corresponding secretary, and the duty of the body is to raise, manage and disburse funds raised by the annual collections, or in any other way, for the benefit of the above named beneficiaries. This gives energy, equity and system to a serious and just duty of the Church.

The world ("my parish," said Wesley) was divided into one hundred and eleven Conferences, seven Mission Conferences and four Missions. Enabling acts were passed for creating nineteen new Conferences, so that the map of Methodism may, in 1892, show one hundred and forty-one provinces, of which the African Conference is the largest. Except in the acts just noted, the temper of the Twentieth General Conference was conservative, being steadily set, "not to mend our rules but keep them."

On May 24th, during the session, occurred the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of John Wesley's conversion, the true

a house or
sen by the
ognition as

inion that
led. The
n suggest-
nimity the
eturn after
Elder was

discussed.
dent; that
ll bishop;
s used at
ne General
he African
the proud
less conti-

ghers and
of Confer-
as many
ese are to
body is to
ollections,
ed benefi-
rious and

ided into
onferences
g nineteen
892, show
ican Con-
ne temper
ve, being

hundred
the true

ENGRAVINGS FROM PHOTOGRAPHS OF THE DEATH MASK OF JOHN WESTLY, TAKEN THREE HOURS AFTER DEATH. THE MASK
BEING NOW IN THE POSSESSION OF GEO. JOHN STEVENSON, N. A., OF LONDON, ENGLAND.



spiritual origin of "the movement called Methodism." On that day in 1738, "my heart was strangely warmed," and many warm hearts were lifted to heaven in gratitude and praise when this day, in its annual round, reached the General Conference.

Fraternal greetings from branches of the central banian came copiously and tenderly. The youngest of them all, the Independent Methodist, an outcome of the one hundred Methodist churches of Baltimore, reported two thousand communicants gathered in twenty years. The Rev. Dr. J. T. Wightman presented their brotherly regards. They have some chapels and Sunday Schools. Their missionary efforts are through the societies of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and the Methodist Episcopal Church South. The Rev. Dr. E. A. Stafford, pastor of the Metropolitan Church, Toronto, the largest Methodist Church in the world, brought the salutations of Canadian Methodism. He reported two hundred and ten thousand members, and two hundred and eleven thousand dollars missionary money, the only known instance of a large church going beyond the dollar-line.

From the Church South came the Rev. Dr. S. A. Steel, of Louisville. He knew of the separation and even of slavery by tradition only, and his heart longed for union in fact, if not in form. He reported the addition of seventy-five thousand three hundred and nine to his church in 1887, making its members now one million fifty-five thousand nine hundred and fifty-four, with four thousand four hundred and thirty-four traveling preachers. The African Methodist Episcopal Church, from its own General Conference, sitting at Indianapolis, with two hundred and sixty delegates from forty-one Annual Conferences and nearly three hundred thousand members, reported among other things its desire and effort to unite with churches of its own ken, so that in the States, in Canada and the Islands there might be one African Methodism. It had just elected four bishops, two of whom, born slaves, had by their own energy, raised themselves to a fitness for such position, and whose personal history will yet enrich a story of African Methodism.

The American Methodist Episcopal Zion Church, holding General Conference at Newbern, N. C., sent greetings from three hundred thousand members, one thousand seven hundred and fifty preachers and twenty-five Conferences, and alluded to the

THE GENERAL CONFERENCE OF 1888.

part its people, the Dinahs and Pompeys of the time, took in the labor and sacrifice of building Methodism in New York a hundred years ago.

The Conference of England was represented by the Rev. Charles H. Kelly, and that of Ireland by the Rev. Wesley Guard. They told heart-cheering things of Methodism in its old home, of the great and successful efforts to spread its influence in London and to reach every village in the kingdom. It is going forth in all its ancient vigor and Wesley need not blush for his great grandchildren. The Church in all its affiliations numbers five hundred and thirty-seven thousand and sixty-six, with forty-six thousand eight hundred and twenty-one on trial, besides "junior classes" of children numbering over eighty thousand, of Sunday School scholars there are eight hundred and ninety-two thousand five hundred and thirty-two. Home mission work is now the notable feature of Methodist church work, and so is Great Britain by emigration sending forth her people that every effort is needed to retain and advance in the mother land. It is affecting cause for gratitude that Ireland, the "island of sorrow," Methodism steadily increases and all its institutions are green as the shamrock.

Thus in all the world Methodism was shown to be growing in vigor, breadth and power. In 1891 there will probably be held in New York an Ecumenical (all world) Methodist Council. It will then be shown that Methodism is planted in every land; that the century since Wesley's death has been greatest of all the Christian centuries, and that his life and labors were blessed as the agency by which the head of the Church was pleased most to renew His people and bring the nations to the obedience of the faith and the experience of His grace.



MODEL OF MOUNTAINS OF MOAB, CHAUTAUQUA, N. Y.



PHILANDER SMITH MEMORIAL HOSPITAL, NANKIN, CHINA.

METHODIST BISHOPS.

THE thirty-eighth bishop is John H. Vincent. His relation to the Sunday-school and to Chautauqua, has called for some sketch of him in another place. The building builds the builder. Dr. Vincent's wise and steady effort, crowned with broad success, in unfolding and perfecting the department in which his duties lay, from which he departed only to subdue provinces adjacent and to make them subsidiary to it, not only developed in him the fullness of a Church worker, but brought the Church to know his general merits. He came to be a Sunday-school leader in the Protestant world, and to have an excellent repute in many lands and among all denomina-

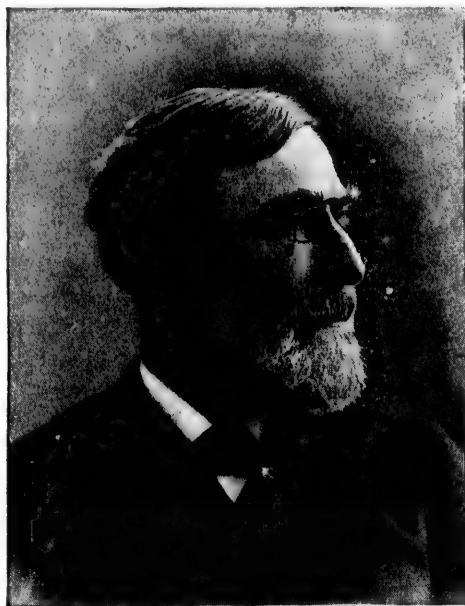


JOHN HEYL VINCENT, D. D. LL. D.

tions, so that his elevation to the General Superintendency was a matter of nearly universal expectation and consent. Imperious, self-centered and oracular, he brought to his new office the

prestige of unbroken success, and all his movements will have behind them twenty-five years of victory. His residence is at Buffalo, two hours from Chautauqua.

James N. Fitz-Gerald, the thirty-ninth bishop, was born in Newark, N. J., in 1838. He was of a solid Methodist family, and after due training in required study was, at twenty, admitted to the bar. He seemed a lawyer born. The cast of his mind, the aspect which all matters took on before him, even his choice of words and his careful utterance indicated a legal temperament.



JAMES N. FITZ-GERALD, D. D.

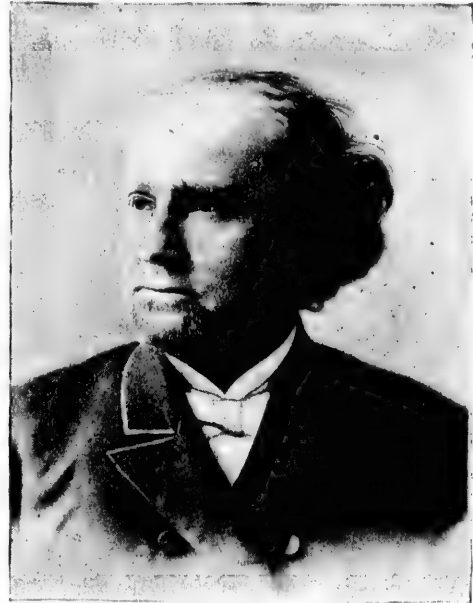
At twenty-five he was converted, and at once felt the ministry to be his calling. Entering the Newark Conference, he continued in the pastorate, varied by some service as Presiding Elder, until he became bishop. For eleven years he was Secretary of his Conference; for eight years, Recording Secretary of the Missionary Society. A lawyer in the Church, if his sympathy is with the Church, is a most useful person, and in

the Board of Bishops, Dr. Fitz-Gerald seemed to come to the place vacant by the death of Bishop Harris, and be like him, the jurist of the Board. His home is at Minneapolis, Minn.

Isaac W. Joyce was chosen as fortieth in the Episcopal order. He was born in Ohio, in 1836, but his family soon removing to Indiana, he is claimed by the Methodists of that peculiarly Methodist State. At sixteen he was converted, and all his thoughts turned in the direction along which his life has been moving. His education was had at Asbury (now De Pauw) University, so associated with the names of Bowman and Simpson. He afterwards

METHODIST BISHOPS.

served a successful pastorate under the walls of his Alma Mater. Most of his thirty years of ministerial service have been in the Northwest Indiana Conference. Of late he has served at St. Paul's and Trinity, Cincinnati, and at his election was in his second term at the latter. During the revival conducted in Cincinnati by Sam. Jones, Dr. Joyce was his foremost supporter. After Jones left the city, the work continued under Dr. Joyce's management, by whose skillful and unwearied labors not only were the fruits of the former efforts well gathered, but the original movement was happily continued. Dr. Joyce, then pastor at Trinity, found himself at the head of the Protestant work of Cincinnati. The impression which he made as a revival pastor, a workman needing not to be ashamed, led to his selection as bishop to represent in the Board that style of evangelical ability, and by that ability he will best be known. He is to reside at Chattanooga.

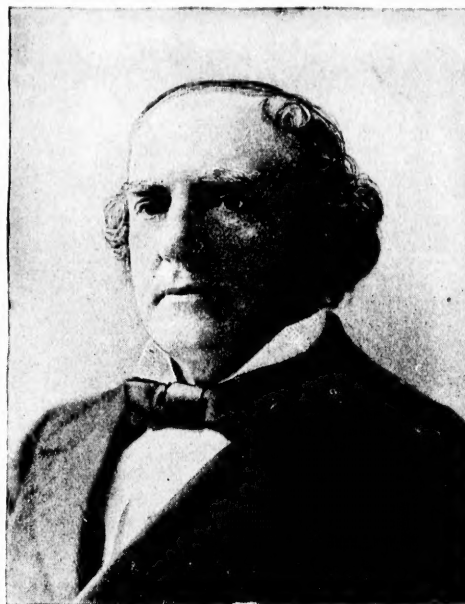


ISAAC WILSON JOYCE, D. D.

John P. Newman, who, in a certain sense, occupies the "forty-first arm chair" in the Episcopacy, was born in New York, in 1826. Converted at sixteen, he then first began his education. At Cazenovia, his teacher remembers him as of fine personal appearance, of rare taste in dress and propriety in manners, courteous and dignified beyond his years—no vulgar boy, indeed! He was already a working Christian, and his seven years in the Oneida Conference were like Jacob's seven under Laban. Entering the Troy Conference (heartened and guided by a highly cultured wife) his gifts rapidly unfolded and he entered upon his true career. In 1858 he became pastor in New York.

THE STORY OF METHODISM.

In 1863 Bishop Ames sent him to New Orleans to look after the Churches which the fortune of war had thrown into the Bishop's hands. A great and effectual door was open to him, and there were many adversaries. So wisely and effectively did he achieve his hard task, that on his completion of it in 1869, he was complimented with the chaplaincy of the U. S. Senate. The Metropolitan Church was then begun as a national centre for Methodism, and he became its pastor, and at his election was there serving his third pastorate. Meanwhile he had gone around the



JOHN PHILIP NEWMAN, D. D. LL. D.

world as Inspector of the Consular service, had served a pastorate in New York, and had eccentrically been pastor of a Congregational church now vanished; had written books, had been delegate to the Ecumenical Conference in London. His taste, his bearing and his accomplishments have always brought to him the higher classes, and he has moved among them as their peer without losing the simplicity and spirit-

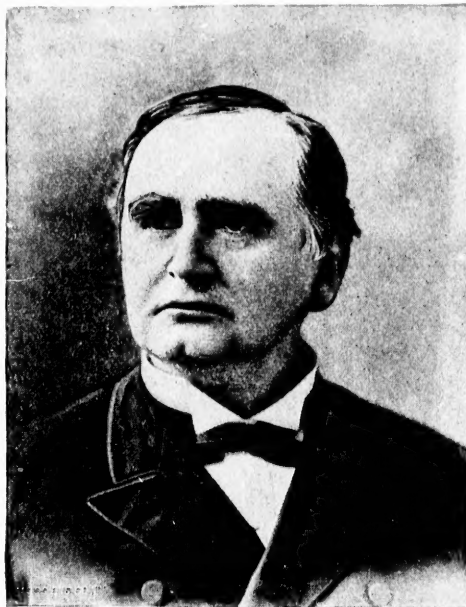
uality of a Christian minister. His home will be at Omaha.

Daniel A. Goodsell, the forty-second bishop, is the youngest of them all. His birthplace was at Newburg, on the Hudson, in 1840. His father, Rev. Buel Goodsell, was one of the builders of Methodism from Lake Champlain to Montauk Point, and the son is greatly blest in matter of heredity. The future bishop was, at nineteen, graduated from the New York University, and at once followed his father into the New York Conference. His majestic stature and development introduced him well, and he has given unbroken service for thirty years. His pastorates in New Haven

METHODIST BISHOPS.

have been his best. In learning and literature he commanded the respect of the fine old university town, while the beautiful Trinity church was built and filled under his labors. For several years he furnished the Book Reviews of the *Christian Advocate*, and at the beginning of this year, 1888, he was chosen editor of *Zion's Herald*. He was more needed as Secretary of the Board of Education, and that office he filled for a few months, until he became bishop. He brings to his new place a distinct literary training and a wide, careful acquaintance with the course of thought in this period. He takes his home in the heart of that great domain, Texas, the France of America.

Following the precedent of 1884, by which Wm. Taylor was made Bishop of Africa, the General Conference of 1888 made James M. Thoburn Bishop of India and Malaysia. Like Taylor, he is missionaryary bishop, his functions, not his authority, being limited to the field for which he is elected. He is as

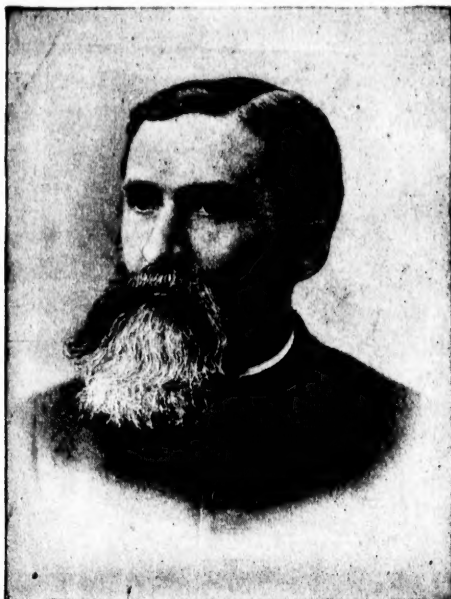


DANIEL AYRES GOODSSELL, D. D.

truly a bishop as any other, but he operates only in his appointed domain. Could he wish a larger? It has 3,000 miles of longitude and 1,000 miles of latitude, with 300,000,000 of people. Dr. Thoburn was born in Ohio, in 1836, and graduated in 1857, from Allegheny College. Two years later he went to India, and his labor there has been of infinite variety, as his book, "My Missionary Apprenticeship," illustrates. He has, besides simple missionary, been pastor of an English speaking church in Calcutta; presiding elder and editor of the *Indian Witness*. For the last three years he has been Conference Evangelist. Three times he

THE STORY OF METHODISM.

has been member of General Conference. In his bearing he is very quiet and unobtrusive, and his utterance is that of one conversing and watching how his words are taken, as if giving all his thought to the winning of somebody to the truth. Thirty years have given him knowledge of India, its tongues and people, and all the needs of its work, and there could be no doubt of him as



JAMES M. M. THOBURN, D. D.

the man for its bishop. Out of India his work is growing in far away Singapore, and its demands in Burmah increases rapidly. These two missionary bishops differ in person, temper and habit, as much as men well can, but each has a great office and each will be followed in his work with sympathy and prayer. The Church has now eighteen bishops.

his bearing he is
that of one con-
as if giving all his
th. Thirty years
and people, and
doubt of him as

growing in far
eases rapidly.
er and habit,
fice and each
prayer. The